

Columbia University  
in the City of New York

THE LIBRARIES





















THE  
HISTORY AND CHRONICLES  
OF  
SCOTLAND.





THE  
HISTORY AND CHRONICLES  
OF  
SCOTLAND:

WRITTEN IN LATIN  
BY HECTOR BOECE,  
CANON OF ABERDEEN;  
AND TRANSLATED  
BY JOHN BELLENDEN,  
ARCHDEAN OF MORAY, AND CANON OF ROSS.

---

VOLUME I.

---

EDINBURGH:  
REPRINTED FOR W. AND C. TAIT.  
M.DCCC.XXI.

sionally even in expression, from another copy, in the library of the late Lord Hailes, which has been used in revising the proof-sheets. These copies contain no internal evidence of the precise dates of their publication, which must, however, have been very near to the periods assigned by Herbert. Davidson was appointed Royal Printer in 1540, and the Statutes of James the Fifth, which he printed at the command of that monarch, bear the date of 1541.<sup>1</sup>

There is no information to be obtained respecting the engraver of the curious wood-cut which ornaments the last leaf of Bellenden's work, and of which a fac-simile has been executed, for the present reprint, by Mr Lizars. We can scarcely venture to attribute the original to a Scottish, or even to an English artist, among whose works, at this time, we rarely discover either tolerable design or careful execution. It is more than probable that Davidson procured the block from Germany, where the *Formschneiders* had made considerable progress in the art of engraving upon wood, at an early period. The copy of the *Acts of two Parliaments of James the Fifth*, printed upon vellum by him, in 1541, and preserved in the Advocates' Library, contains a fine impression of the same print, to which is subjoined the following monkish distich :

En ego, justicie typus atq. figura, tribunal  
Sic ascendo meum : dextra assertoribus alta  
Astipulor veri, quibus hec mea lilia merces ;  
At si quis contra sentit, demissa sinistra  
In stygios jubet ire lacus, gladioq. feriri.

---

<sup>1</sup> The only copy of this book known to exist, is printed upon vellum, and preserved in the Advocates' Library.

The subject of the print scarcely requires any description. Within a circle of roses are the ordinary emblems of the Trinity; on the right and left appear the Virgin, with an infant Jesus in her arms; Moses, and the Royal Psalmist; St Peter, with the keys of heaven; St Paul, and the Lion of St Mark; with a large assembly of prophets, apostles, martyrs, pilgrims, popes, cardinals, virgins, and matrons. The lower part of the engraving exhibits a scene in purgatory. A more minute description may be found in Herbert's edition of Ames's *Typographical Antiquities*. The general design is full of spirit; and the execution of the engraving has not been surpassed by the most skilful of modern Xylographers.

The original title-page has also been accurately copied upon a reduced scale, for this Work. It exhibits a rude engraving of the Arms of Scotland, a favourite ornament with our early printers. The original may have been executed in Scotland, and its merit is not diminished in the copy by Mr Lizars. The blooming letters used in the course of these volumes were designed and engraved by this ingenious artist. The two small wood-cuts which occur in the fourth and twelfth Books were executed by Mr Bewick.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> There are in Scotland two copies of Bellenden's Boece, printed upon vellum. One of these is preserved in the library of the Duke of Hamilton; and a more splendid specimen of early typography, and of antique binding, cannot well be imagined. The vellum upon which it is printed is stainless—and the breadth of the margin would satisfy the most fastidious and princely Collector. The boards bear the following inscription, JACOBUS QUINTUS REX SCOTORUM—and on the title-page, the initials J. R<sup>x</sup> appear in manuscript. They are, in all probability, in the handwriting of that monarch, to whom the volume appears to have belonged. The

There are several manuscript copies extant of Bellen-den's Translation of Boece. The most ancient and authentic of these belongs to Sir Alexander Boswell of Auchinleck. It differs materially from the printed work; and the Editor regrets extremely that the arrangements for the present publication did not admit of collating them. The earlier part, as far as the end of the table to the fourth Book, is wanting. What remains of the table differs in many respects from the printed copy. Then follows the list of Kings, which is a fuller translation of Boece's catalogue. This is succeeded by "Ane Ballat," which is the same with the "Prohem of the History;" but concludes, "Heir endis the ballat, and "beginnis the Preface direkkit to our Soverane Lord "King James the Fyft." The preface occupies four pages and a half of the MS. It is just the Epistle which concludes the printed volume under the title of "The Epistle direkkit be the translatour to the Kingis grace;" but concludes with the following date, which is material, as ascertaining the period at which the translation must have been executed: "At Edinburgh, the last day of August, "the year of God, one thousand five hundreth and "thretty-ane yeiris."

It would be vain to attempt an enumeration of the discrepancies that occur in the historical part of the narrative;

---

other, which is inferior, belongs to the library of the University of Edinburgh. The title-page bears the following quaint inscription: "Thomas "Willson Mercator, me Bibliothecæ Edinburgensæ dono dedit, A<sup>no</sup>-dom. "1669." This valuable volume seems to have been heedlessly committed to the hands of a tasteless bookbinder, and has, in consequence, suffered much from those operations known by the name of *cobbling*.

but a few of them may be noticed. In the third chapter of the Fourteenth Book, the passage beginning, “It was said be thame that followit the opinon of Ballial,” runs thus in the MS.: “It is said that Robert Bruse wes the causs of the discomfit of this last feild at Dunbar; for in the beginning of the battel, he permittit to King Edward to come from King Balial, with all his freindis and kynnis-men,” and then he goes for his reward to the English monarch. A very remarkable variation occurs in the fifth chapter of the same Book. In the MS., Wallace’s speech to Bruce is literally translated from Boece; while, in the printed copy, all his abuse of Bruce is omitted, and an apology introduced.

In the printed work, the Fifteenth Book commences with an account of the proceedings of Sir James Douglas, which is omitted in the MS., where this Book begins as follows:—

*“ And begynis ye xv Buke of ye samyne. How David  
 “ Bruse was maid King of Scotland; and how Erle  
 “ Thomas Randaill was maid Governor yairof. Of his  
 “ gret justice; and of his deith. Ca. Primo.*

“ QUHEN King Robert was deceissit in yis maner, his  
 “ sone, David Bruse, was maid king; and becaus he was  
 “ unable to govern ye realme for his non age, Erle Tho-  
 “ mas Randaill was maid governor; for nane was yat  
 “ day compair to him in manheid and prudence, except  
 “ Schir James Douglass, quhilk was, as we have schawin,  
 “ votit to ye Haly Land. Erle Thomas was governour



“ als, iiij zeris, during ye infirmite of King Robert ;  
 “ and becaus ye peple was brokin with lang warris, he  
 “ thocht best, quhill yai war refreschit, to mak peace  
 “ with England. Sic thingis done, he set his besiness to  
 “ governe ye realme in peace, comāding his officiar to  
 “ do justice in all partis. And yat yai suld not remane  
 “ unmyndfull of yair warris, he comādit yame to have  
 “ yair wappynnis & harnes ay reddy to battell ; foryer, to  
 “ nuriss gud men in justice, and to puniss ewill men,  
 “ (quhilks repugnant yairto.) He comandit yat saidillis,  
 “ bridillis, and all uyer instruments pertenant to ye use of  
 “ husbandry, suld ly yairfurth bayth day and nycht ; and  
 “ gif ony thing war tane away, yat ye shereff of ye schir  
 “ suld outhir causs it to be restorit to ye aunaris, or ellis  
 “ to pay it one his awin burss. Finalie, sic extreme puni-  
 “ tionis was maid one thevis, yat baith thift and pikry  
 “ war dantit in all partis ; and mony broken men dantit  
 “ of yair wild insolence, howbeid yai beleiffit to use sic  
 “ oppressionis one ye peple in tyme of peace, as yai usit  
 “ afore, quhen ye cuntre was troublit be civill contentionis.  
 “ Attour, yat vertue suld be autorist in yis realme, he  
 “ comādit yat na vagabound peple, menstrualis, nor jug-  
 “ gillouris, be ressavit in ony touns, without yai had sum  
 “ craft to debait yair leving, (becaus yai war profitable  
 “ allanerlie in tyme of battell.) Be yis way, he purgit ye  
 “ realme of mony ydill lymanis.”

The corresponding passage in the printed copy is materially different. If Bellenden personally superintended the publication, he must have had some purpose, which cannot now be detected, in garbling his original composition. In the Auchinleck MSS. there is considerably more

of the vernacular language of Scotland than in the printed work.

The Editor is indebted to Sir Alexander Boswell for these collations. He is also indebted to Mr George Chalmers for a variety of particulars relative to Boece and Bellenden; extracted by that gentleman from an unpublished work of his own, on the Printing and Printers of Scotland, which, it is hoped, he will not long withhold from the world.





## BIOGRAPHICAL INTRODUCTION.

---



THE early part of the Literary History of Scotland is involved in much obscurity, and has not been investigated with a due share either of care or of candour. Many eminent writers who adorned the reigns of the Stuarts during the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries, are now in a great measure unknown or forgotten. The difficulties these early writers had to encounter, from the limited sources of information which they possessed,—the absence of authentic records to guide them in their researches,—the romantic and fabulous times of which they wrote,—and the want of science to operate as a check upon credulity, seem entirely to have escaped those critics by whom their labours have been depreciated, and their claims to the gratitude of posterity denied.

JOHN BARBOUR, the father of Scottish Historians, composed his celebrated historical poem upon the exploits of

Robert the Great, about the year 1375; and, looking to the remote period at which it was written, it is a work of great merit. The subject is well selected and skilfully managed. *The Bruce* was truly the hero of Scottish chivalry; and Barbour relates his mighty deeds with all the enthusiasm of a Scottish poet. His narrative is remarkable for simplicity, and his style is by no means deficient in fancy. He appears to have been acquainted with ancient literature; but it is to be regretted, that the taste of the age should have led him to study Statius and Claudian, rather than Virgil and Horace. He certainly, however, improved the language of his country, “by a strain of versification, expression, and poetical images, far superior to the age in which he lived.”<sup>1</sup> It is difficult to arrive at any satisfactory conclusion as to the credit due to his historical details, but the researches of Lord Hailes leave a favourable impression of their accuracy.

THE *Scotichronicon*, the earliest general history of Scotland that has reached our time, was compiled during the reign of Robert the Second, by JOHN OF FORDUN,—so named from the supposed place of his birth, a village in Kincardineshire. This venerable Chronicler flourished about the year 1380. His Latinity is barbarous; but he is admitted to have been *a useful compiler of history*, by a writer<sup>2</sup> who is never disposed to bestow unmerited commendation upon the early historians of Scotland. Lord Hailes, too, avails himself liberally of the materials fur-

---

<sup>1</sup> Warton's *History of English Poetry*, I. 318.

<sup>2</sup> Pinkerton.

nished by Fordun, and appears to have set considerable value upon them.

THE *Scotichronicon* was continued by WALTER BOWAR, Abbot of St Colm, to the end of the reign of James the First. His materials are valuable and authentic, but they are ill-digested, and his style possesses no attraction.

ANDREW WINTON, Prior of Lochleven, was a contemporary of Bowar. He composed his *Metrical Chronicle* of Scotland about the year 1420, during the regency of Murdoc, Duke of Albany. This curious work remained in manuscript, till that part of it which relates to the affairs of Scotland was introduced to the notice of the world by the late Mr David M'Pherson, in a publication which appeared in 1795. It contains much genealogical information relating to many of the noble families of Scotland.

THE period during which Bowar and Winton flourished, was followed by a long pause in the progress of historical writing in Scotland, while considerable advancement was made in the fine arts. James the First, who had not neglected the culture of his mind during the gloom of his tedious captivity, indulged with great success in poetical composition. His grandson was devoted to architecture and painting; and the great hall in the Castle of Stirling, with *Roslyn's proud Chapelle*, attest the taste of the monarch and of the age. The unfortunate hero of Flodden Field was fonder of the ways of strife than of the paths of peace; yet, true to the character of his race, he was not regardless of the interests of literature. His famous

statute relative to Education<sup>1</sup> deserves to be commemorated, as an enactment worthy of an enlightened legislator. Although it related only to the children of the higher orders, it may be viewed as in some measure the commencement of that system which ultimately resulted in the establishment of Parish Schools, by an act of the Privy Council, in 1616. It was under the auspices of James the Fourth, too, that the typographical art was introduced into Scotland, and that the excellent Bishop Elphinston founded the University of Aberdeen.

WITH the reign of James the Fifth commenced the golden age of the early literature of Scotland. The character of this monarch is familiar to every reader of history. Eminent as a poet, and remarkable for his love of learning, his court was filled with accomplished scholars, and his praises were sung by the poets of his own as well as of foreign lands.

And ye, my soverene, be lyne continuall,  
 Ay come of kingis your progenitouris,  
 And writis in ornate style poetically,  
 Quick-flowand vers of rhethorik cullouris,  
 Sa freschlie springand in youre lusty flouris,  
 To the grete comforte of all trew Scottismen—

was the address of a Scottish poet to James; and it is supposed that Ariosto “glaunceth at his worth in the person of *Zerbino*, whom he nameth Prince of *Scotland*.”

---

<sup>1</sup> 1494, c. 54.

<sup>2</sup> Drummond's *History of Scotland*, Edin. 1682, p. 348.

THE earliest historian during this reign, whose writings have come down to us, is JOHN MAIR. His work, *De Gestis Scotorum*, was written in 1518, and first printed at Paris, in 1521, by Badius Ascensius, with the usual elegance which distinguished his press. Mair was less credulous than the historians who preceded him, and corrected many of the *figments*, as he calls them, of Scottish history. His narrative closes with the marriage of James the Fourth, in 1495. "He wrote," says Archbishop Spottiswood, "howbeit in a *sorbonick* and "barbarous style, yet very truly, and with a great liberty "of spirit."<sup>1</sup> He was followed by a writer of distinguished talents, and unquestionably one of the most accomplished scholars of his age.

#### HECTOR BOECE<sup>2</sup>

was descended from an honourable family in the county of Angus, who possessed the barony of Panbride for a long period of years. David the Second, having appointed a council to meet at Perth, commanded the names of all those who had done good service to their country, or whose fathers had been slain at the battles of Duplin and Halydonhill, to be communicated to him, in order that he might have an opportunity of rewarding them. His

<sup>1</sup> *History of Church of Scotland*, p. 68.

<sup>2</sup> The name is variously written, Boyis, Boyes, Boiss, Boice, and Boece. The last has been adopted as the more usual orthography. It came originally from France, and never appears to have been common in Scotland. It occurs only once in the General Index to the *Retours*—*Barbareta Boyes incola in Dundee*. Inquis. Generales, 7528.



rewards consisted chiefly of gold, silver, and jewels; but Boece informs us, that the heiress and barony of Panbride, or Balbride, were bestowed upon Hugh Boece, his grandfather, in consequence of his father having fallen at the battle of Duplin. This property still belonged to the family, during the reign of James the Fifth.

Boece was born at Dundee, about the year 1465-6; and hence he assumed the surname of Deidonanus. His education commenced at his native place. It was continued at Aberdeen, and afterwards completed at Paris, where, in 1497, he became a Professor of Philosophy in the college of Montacute. During his residence in that university, he had an opportunity of forming an intimacy with many of the most eminent scholars of the time. Among these was Erasmus, with whom, during the after-part of his life, he maintained a regular correspondence. As a mark of his esteem, Erasmus dedicated a Catalogue of his works to Boece, and accompanied the transmission of it with a very eloquent and affectionate letter, in which he reflects, with much complacency, upon his intellectual intercourse with him at Paris, when they were both actively engaged in literary pursuits.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> This letter was in answer to one which Erasmus had previously received from the Scottish historian, dated at Aberdeen, on the 7th of June 1528. By some accident, it appears not to have reached him till the month of February, 1530. After assigning this circumstance as the cause of his apparent long delay in replying to Boece's communication, Erasmus proceeds,—“*Quam, mihi tua consuetudo jucunda fuit* HECTOR *eruditissime,* “*quum ante annos triginta duo Lutetiæ in literarum stadio pariter curremus, licet te pro ingenii tui singulari felicitate multis passibus præ-*

In 1500, Boece was invited, by Bishop Elphinston, to become Principal of King's College, Aberdeen, which he had a short time before founded, under the patronage of James the Fourth. This invitation was at first unfavourably received, but, allured by "gifts and promises,"<sup>1</sup> Boece at last yielded to the solicitations of his countryman. He left Paris and his learned friends with regret. Upon returning to his native country, he experienced a kind reception from the Canons of Aberdeen, and immediately entered upon the discharge of his professorial duties. His associate in these was William Hay, a person of whom he speaks with respect and affection. They were both natives of Angus; they had spent their youth together in Dundee; and they had afterwards studied at Paris, under the same masters. By their joint exertions, King's College acquired great celebrity, and became a nursery of excellent scholars. Boece discharged the duties of Principal and Professor with zeal and fidelity. His annual revenue, at this period, amounted to 40 Scottish marks, about L.2, 4s. 6d. of Sterling money, —a sum which, as Dr Johnson observes, was then probably equal, not only to the needs, but to the rank of the President of King's College.<sup>2</sup>

---

"currente: tam mihi gratum fuit eam voluptatem ex tanto intervallo  
 "mihi tuis literis refricari." At the close of the letter, Erasmus expresses great satisfaction in learning that Scotland was making rapid progress in the liberal arts. For this she was indebted, in no inconsiderable degree, to Hector Boece.

<sup>1</sup> Muneribus et pollicitationibus. *Vitæ Episc. Murth. et Aberd.* fol. 27.

<sup>2</sup> *Tour to the Hebrides.*

After the death of Bishop Elphinston, in 1514, Boece undertook a work, intended, chiefly, to give an account of the life and character of that excellent Prelate, and which was published at Paris in 1522, in a small quarto volume, now of great rarity, entitled, *Vitæ Episcoporum Murthlacensium et Aberdonensium*. It begins with the life of Beanus, the first Bishop of Aberdeen, and ends with that of Gawin Dunbar, who filled the See at the time the book was published. Nearly one-third of the whole, however, is occupied with the Memoirs of Boece's patron, which contain an interesting account of his early education, and of his gradual advancement to the high literary and political situations he afterwards filled.

The narrative is particularly minute regarding the foundation and endowment of King's College. The building is described as magnificent in ornament and extent. The Church attached to the College is represented as having been built of hewn stone, and as containing suitable accommodations for Priests and Students. It was richly furnished with marble altars, graven images, pictures, statues, tapestry, garments of gold and purple, candelabras, vases of curious workmanship, vessels for frankincense and holy water, coverings for the altars embroidered with gold, and a chest of cypress-wood, adorned with pearls and gems, in which the relics of the saints were deposited. These were chiefly the gift of Bishop Elphinston. A few of the ornaments were bestowed by Arthur Boece, a brother of our historian,<sup>1</sup> who does not

---

<sup>1</sup> Boetius (Arthurus) Hectoris frater juris canonici Professor in academia Aberdonensi. Scripsit *Excerpta ex jure Pontificio*, lib. 1. Claruit



himself appear to have been wealthy enough to make donations to the Church of his College; but it is recorded, that a magnificent altar, with suitable ornaments, was erected by his executors.<sup>1</sup>

There were four Professorships in King's College; the first of Divinity, to which all the others were subordinate,—the second of Canon Law,—the third of Civil Law,—and the fourth of Physic. Ten Bachelors were employed in attending the lectures of the Professors, and in explaining them to the younger students. Similar duties were performed by fourteen students of philosophy; and there was also a Teacher or Professor, whose duty it was to initiate the members of the college in Grammar, previous to the study of the higher and more important branches of education. In Boece's time, this last department was filled by John Vaux, a scholar of great learning and intense application.<sup>2</sup>

The endowments of Bishop Elphinston were not confined to his own College and Church. He adorned the original Cathedral of Aberdeen with rich gifts, and completed the great Tower, which Henry Leighton, a former Bishop, had left unfinished. He also commenced rebuilding the choir, in a style of splendour consistent with the other parts of the cathedral; but this work was

anno MDXX. *Tanner's Bib. Brit. Hib.* The name of Arthur Boyes, the Laird of Balwery, (probably this person,) occurs in the original nomination of the Lords of Session in 1532; but it does not appear that he ever acted.—*Acts of Par.* vol. II. 336. *Hailes' Catalogue of Lords of Session*, p. 1.

<sup>1</sup> Orem's *Dis. of King's College*, p. 166.

<sup>2</sup> *Vitæ Epis. Murth. et Aber.* folio 29.

not completed at his death. A bridge over the Dee was planned by him; and he left a large sum for the purpose of carrying it into execution. Nothing can be more delightful than Boece's account of the old age of the Bishop.<sup>1</sup> It was devoted to religion, to learning, and to the pleasures of society. His table, which was splendid, was frequented by the noble and the learned; and, although abstemious himself, his love of music and of gaiety made him a very agreeable companion. He died, after having filled the See of Aberdeen for 30 years,<sup>2</sup> full of age and of honour. It is to be regretted that no part of his historical collections has yet been made public. They are preserved among the manuscripts of Sir Thomas Fairfax, in the Bodleian Library.

Boece, as already mentioned, concludes his *Lives of the Bishops* with a short notice of Gavin Dunbar, to whom he dedicated the book. He urges upon this Prelate the propriety of following out the plans of Elphinston, for finishing King's College, and for erecting a bridge over the Dee. Dunbar adopted these suggestions, and completed much of what his predecessor had left unfinished. It has been said that Boece prevented him from placing his name and armorial bearings upon a part of King's College, of which he had commenced the building. In consequence of this, the Bishop, in a fit of humour, directed it to be completed, "roughly, without good workmanship or contrivance."<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Senectus ei jucunda et veneranda, non morosa, non anxia, non difficilis, non tristis. *Vitæ Episc. Murth. et Aberd.* fol. 31.

<sup>2</sup> 1450.

<sup>3</sup> Orem's *Dis. of King's College*, p. 175.

During his long residence in King's College, Boece devoted much of his leisure to the composition of a General History of Scotland, which was destined to establish his fame. It was published at Paris, in 1526, in a folio volume, under the title of "*Scotorum Historiæ, a prima gentis origine, cum aliarum et rerum et gentium, illustratione non vulgari.*"<sup>1</sup> This edition contains seventeen Books. A second was printed at Lausanne, and published at Paris in 1574, about forty years after the death of Boece. In this, were added the eighteenth, and part of a nineteenth Book, written by himself; and a continuation of the history to the end of the reign of James the Third, by Ferrerius, a learned Piedmontese, who came to Scotland, in 1528, in the train of Robert Reid, Abbot of Kinloss, and afterwards Bishop of Orkney.

Soon after the publication of his History, James the Fifth bestowed upon Boece a pension of L.50 Scots yearly; as appears from the following notices in the Record: "1527, July 14th, Grant to Maister Hector of a pension "of L.50 Scots yearly, to be paid him by the sheriff of "Aberdeen out of the King's casualties."<sup>2</sup> This grant was repeated, two years afterwards, with a variation of the source of payment:—"1529, July 26th, Precept for a let-

<sup>1</sup> The printing was executed, "*Jodoci Badii Ascensii typis et opera, impensis autem nobilis et prædocti viri Hectoris Boethii, Deidonani.*" The title-page contains a curious engraving of the Ascensian Press, within a border of fantastic devices, and surmounted by a medallion figure of a monk, crowned with laurel, and seated at a writing-desk; which Mr Herbert supposes to be a portrait of the author.—*Typographical Antiquities*, vol. III. p. 1471.

<sup>2</sup> *Privy Seal*, Reg. vi. fol. 70.

“tre to Mr Hector Boys, professor of theology, of a pension of L.50 Scots yearly, until the King promote him to a benefice of 100 marks Scots of yearly value; the said pension to be paid him by the customers of Aberdeen.”<sup>1</sup> As the King’s customs of Aberdeen were probably inadequate to answer all the assignments upon them, Boece’s pension was afterwards, in 1533 and 1534, paid, the one-half by the King’s Comptroller, and the other half by the Treasurer. There was paid in this manner one year’s pension, from Whitsunday 1532 to Whitsunday 1533; and another, from Whitsunday 1533 to Whitsunday 1534.

As the payment of the pension does not appear in the Treasurer’s accounts after 1534, it is probable, that, about this period, the King carried into effect his intention, intimated in the grant of 1529, of giving Boece a benefice in lieu of it. The benefice so given, was the Rectory of Tyrie, in Buchan, Aberdeenshire, which he held at his death, in 1536; as appears from the record of the presentation of his successor:—“1536, November 22d. The king presented Mr John Gardin to the Rectory of Tiry, in the diocese of Aberdeen, vacant by the death of the late Mr Hector Boiss.”<sup>2</sup>

No particulars are known respecting the latter years of Boece; but the notice just quoted from the Record, shews that he died in 1536,<sup>3</sup> when he must have been about

---

<sup>1</sup> *Privy Seal*, Reg. viii. 75.

<sup>2</sup> *Privy Seal*, Reg. x. 177.

<sup>3</sup> The authors of the *Biographia Britannica* have erroneously supposed, that Boece died only a short time previous to the year 1550. The only

seventy years of age. According to Gordon of Straloch, this event happened at Aberdeen.

The merits of Boece, as a historian, have been keenly disputed. It was formerly supposed, that the severity of his treatment, by some of the older English writers,<sup>1</sup> originated in passion and malice ; but their example has been followed by two modern critics of his own country, Lord Hailes and Mr Pinkerton. In speaking of our historian, the former seems to lose his usual caution ; and Mr Pinkerton inveighs against him as “ the most egregious historical impostor that ever appeared in any country !” He would have done well to have recollected an observation of his own, when attempting to justify his favourite hero, James the Fifth, for sanctioning the judicial murder of the young and lovely Lady Glamis upon a charge of witchcraft,—“ that it is no crime not to have been a philosopher before “ philosophy revived.”

---

reason given for this conjecture is, that, in that year, they find his death lamented by Latomus and Wolfius, two learned foreigners, with whom he had been intimately acquainted at the university of Paris.

<sup>1</sup> Llyud, Lloyd, and Stillingfleet. “ This furious regicide,” says the late Mr David M’Pherson, in a MS. note on his copy of the *Origines Britannicæ*, “ in his hurry to demolish the fictitious kings of the Scots, whom no sensible Scotsman wishes to rescue out of his hands, sacrifices along with “ them all the real and well authenticated sovereigns whose names he does “ not find in the genealogy of the direct ancestors of Alexander the Third ; “ so that all the branches of the royal family which failed of issue, are, by “ this new kind of argument, proven never to have existed.” It is not to be supposed, that, with such views as these, Stillingfleet could treat Hector Boece with much lenity or candour.



Lord Hailes sarcastically remarks, “ that, although reformed from Popery, we are not reformed from Boece ;” and it is perhaps true, that the charms of his narrative may have given currency to fables, even after the progress of knowledge, and the light of science, had exposed their absurdity. But what is the conclusion to be drawn from thence? Certainly not that he is unworthy of all credit, but merely that, in estimating the credit which is due to him, it is necessary to make an allowance for those parts of his works that can be traced to the credulity of the age in which he lived, and of which, with all his learning and accomplishments, it must be admitted that he largely partook.

Anxious to support the claims of his country to a high degree of antiquity, he listened readily to the most extravagant traditions, provided they supported his favourite delusion, and enabled him to add another name to the long line of Scottish monarchs. Many statements were thus hazarded upon authority which modern discrimination would scornfully reject. The dynasty of Scotland was carried far beyond the birth of Christ ; and every reign was full of battles never fought, and of events which never existed, save in the dreams of Monkish tradition.

Boece prefixed to his *Chronicles* a geographical description of Scotland, accompanied by a short account of the manners of the ancient inhabitants. Here, also, we discover symptoms of great credulity, but none whatever of a disposition to deceive. He was fond of Natural History, a science at this period in its infancy. The accuracy which experimental investigation has now acquired was wholly unknown, and many of the great arcana of nature,

which have since been explained, were the subject of ignorant astonishment in the days of Boece. Phenomena which are now common and intelligible, were then viewed as marvellous, and surpassing all comprehension. This may explain the readiness with which Boece, in common with such writers as Herodotus and Livy, lent a willing ear to every report of events deviating from the ordinary course of nature. If an account had been transmitted to him of such a machine, as that invented by Bramah, enabling a single individual to root out a forest-tree, it would have been as difficult for him to believe this as the story told by Sir Duncan Campbell, of the *terrible beist* of Loch Garloll, *futit lik ane ganar*, which was capable of striking down the largest oak with the *dint of her tail*. His account of the sea monks at the isle of Bass, and of the wild men of Norway, with all the accumulation of prodigies which are scattered throughout his History, admit of a similar explanation. We may smile at his simplicity in believing them, but there seems no reason for imputing to him the character of a contriver of fables.

His geographical knowledge appears to have been inconsiderable; and, accordingly, his description of Scotland is inaccurate. It is not surprising that he should give an erroneous account of the boundaries of the Roman provinces; but it does seem remarkable, that he should represent the Clyde and the Forth as rising among the same mountains.

His account of ancient manners is curious and interesting; tinged though it be with the fables of a golden age. Many amiable traits of character are attributed to the ancient inhabitants of Scotland. Every mother nursed

her own child ; and an inability to discharge this maternal duty afforded a presumption of infidelity. The soldier who was found in battle with an unbelted sword, was scourged ; and the warrior who sold his armour, or *laid it to wed*, was degraded. Victory was never sought by treason or falsehood ; and the highest imputation against the character of a chief, was to conquer in any way but by *force of fechtng*. The number of stones with which the sepulchre of a warrior was adorned, depended upon the number of enemies he had slain. In peace, justice was strictly administered, and so great a degree of liberality regulated the mercantile transactions of the ancient Scots, that a purchaser was not bound to adhere to his bargain unless the seller gave him something above just measure.

It is generally admitted, that, at a remote period, the Monastery of Iona not only contained a valuable library,<sup>1</sup> but was the general repository of the Scottish records.<sup>2</sup> Indeed, one of the least enthusiastic of modern writers, has indulged the pleasing reflection, that, from this distant island, the barbarians of the west, in ancient times, “ derived the benefits of knowledge, and the blessings of religion.” The ultimate fate of the literary treasures of Icolmkill is unknown, nor is it now possible to ascertain of what they consisted. Our regret for their loss would be aggravated in no ordinary degree, could we believe that a manuscript of Livy or of Sallust existed among them.

---

<sup>1</sup> Jamieson's *Culdees*.

<sup>2</sup> Pennant's *Tour in Scotland*, vol. II. p. 296.



An attempt has been made to convict Boece of deliberate mistatement, by contrasting his account of the removal of the public Records and Manuscripts from Icolmkill to the Priory of Restennet, in Angus, by Alexander the First, with the allegation in a different part of his work, that at a later period a variety of Historical Writings were transmitted to him from Iona. But supposing it to be true, that the Monastery of Saint Columba was pillaged by Alexander, it is not improbable that a *portion* of the manuscripts may have been concealed and retained by the Monks ; and that Boece may have been enabled to avail himself of these remains in compiling his History.

The circumstances connected with the alleged transmission of the Manuscripts to Aberdeen, strongly confirm the accuracy of his statements. A tone of great sincerity distinguishes his narrative. He claims no merit for his investigations, into which indeed he was led, from a desire to follow out an inquiry commenced by a Legate of the Pope, a century before. The tradition of the time was, that Fergus the Second, in assisting Alaric the Goth, in sacking Rome, brought away a chest of books which he presented to the Monastery at Iona. In consequence of a belief in the truth of this story, Æneas Silvius<sup>1</sup> intended, when he was in Scotland, to have visited Icolmkill in search of the lost books of Livy, but was prevented by the death of James the First. His scheme was resumed by Boece, who makes no mystery as to the mode in which he procured access to the Manuscripts. This was effected by the in-

---

<sup>1</sup> Pius II.

terposition of the Earl of Argyle, and his brother, the King's Treasurer. Boece's History was published while these persons were alive ; and if he referred to unknown or imaginary authorities, he did so before living witnesses, by whom his statements might have been contradicted and refuted.

But the heaviest charge against the veracity of Boece, arises from his reference to the writings of Veremundus, an author whose works are unnoticed by the other ancient Chroniclers of Scotland. Bale, Chambres of Ormond, Paulus Jovius, Buchanan, and Sir Richard Baker, are supposed to quote Veremundus upon the authority of Boece alone, who is thus made answerable for all the fables which have found their way into the early history of Scotland. Now, had it been his deliberate intention to forge an authority, his natural sagacity would have prevented him from adopting the name of an obscure Spaniard, which could carry no weight with it, and could not therefore answer the purpose which he must have had in view. Again, he states that he received the Manuscripts from Iona only in 1525, the year before his History was published ; and hence it has been said that his narrative carries its own refutation with it, because he could not possibly, during this short interval, have made the use which he pretends of the Chronicle of Veremundus. This is no doubt a difficulty, but its existence is much 'in favour of our author's honesty, who must be *acknowledged to have had a better invention than to have forged so improbable a falsity*, especially in a matter where he was

---

<sup>1</sup> Mackenzie's *Antiq. of Royal Line*, chap. III.

liable to be contradicted by Argyle, the Treasurer, the whole Monks of Iona, and his cotemporaries in the University of Aberdeen. In short, had the account which he gives of the Manuscripts been fabulous, it is plain that it would have been more skilfully devised, and free from those objections of improbability which have been urged against it, and which are only to be explained upon the supposition that the narrative is true.

It has been inferred that his account of Veremundus is false, because this writer is not quoted by Fordun. But this is really a very lame conclusion. Fordun is not referred to by Boece,<sup>1</sup> and his Chronicle remained in manuscript for about two centuries after the publication of the History of the latter. The silence of Boece, however, would have been a very singular reason for presuming against the existence of Fordun, yet it might have been relied on as leading to this conclusion, with quite as much safety as we can depend upon the silence of the latter in evidence of the inaccuracy of Boece's statements respecting Veremundus. Fordun quotes authors whose writings are no longer extant, yet credit is attached to them, and there is no reason why the positive assertions of Boece should not carry the same weight. It has been suggested by a respectable writer, that Fordun does refer to Veremundus, although under a different name.<sup>2</sup> The true explanation of the matter seems to be this: Boece suppressed the name of Fordun in order that he might ac-

---

<sup>1</sup> The various references to the *Scotichronicon* in the *Croniklis* are introduced by Bellenden.

<sup>2</sup> Nichol. *His. Lib.* p. 26.

quire the credit of being the earliest general historian of Scotland; and for the same reason, Fordun did not directly avow the extent to which he transcribed the writings of the earlier Chroniclers.<sup>1</sup>

The ingenious author of the *Historical Account of the Ancient Culdees*, hazards a supposition not much to the credit of Boece, that he may have “destroyed the manuscripts which he had used, that his own history might “be in greater request.”<sup>2</sup> This notion derives some support from a passage which occurs in the writings of Gordon of Straloch.<sup>3</sup> The theory, however, is not very probable in itself, and the motive assigned is scarcely sufficient to account for such an act of treason against the interests of literature, on the part of *the good and the grave* Boece.

It is not at all surprising, that, in transcribing from the Ionian Manuscripts, he should have exercised little of the discrimination necessary for separating truth from falsehood. His anxiety to illustrate the high antiquity, and to perpetuate the fame of his country, made him a ready listener to tales which a writer of a less sanguine temperament would have rejected. But it does appear a harsh inference, that these must have originated en-

<sup>1</sup> *Antiq. of the Royal Line*, chap. III.

<sup>2</sup> P. 305.

<sup>3</sup> *Audivi adolescens Abredoniæ ubi Boethius Academiæ prefuit, et fato functus est, illum exemplaria eorum authorum manuscripta delevisse ad conciliandum Historiæ suæ gratiam ut nostræ antiquitates solum inde haurientur, Misellus homo! Quantum acceperit gratiæ in dubio est.*—Nichol. *Hist. Lib.* p. 27.

tirely in his own imagination, or to conclude, with Mr Pinkerton, that he filled up every interval of authentic detail, with an expedition from the isles, headed by a Donald, the “constant ghost of his pages.”

Every person who has looked with any degree of attention into Boece's History, must be satisfied that the narrative is conducted with simplicity, although the statements are enforced with zeal. They obviously come from an author who appears to be not only deeply impressed himself with the truth of what he writes, but anxious to convey the same impression to his readers. There is no apparent exertion of skill in devising incidents. Every circumstance is related as it appears to have been reported to the writer. Many of his statements, too, are made with the hesitation of a man anxious to be accurate. *Quis rem tam vetustam pro certo affirmet*, is an expression we frequently meet with in the course of his History.

These views are strongly supported by the favourable opinion entertained of his moral character by his contemporaries. We have already seen that he was the intimate friend of Erasmus, who had ample opportunities of observing his personal character. They studied long together at Paris, and in after-life maintained a regular correspondence. Such, indeed, was the opinion which this eminent man entertained of the integrity of our historian, that he says of him, he “knew not what it was to make “a lie.”<sup>1</sup> His continuator Ferrerius, Buchanan, and Arch-

---

<sup>1</sup> *General Dictionary*, vol. III. p. 435. Mackenzie's *Defence of Royal Line*.—In the letter formerly referred to, Erasmus, in addressing Boece, takes occasion to remark, *Quod a tuis moribus semper fuit alienissimum mentiri*.



bishop Spottiswood, speak of him in similar terms; yet the wicked wit of an English antiquary has likened the multitude of his falsehoods to the waves of the sea, and the stars of heaven! <sup>1</sup>

His intellectual attainments were of a high character. He has been represented as skilled in classical and polite literature, divinity, and philosophy; <sup>2</sup> and Erasmus invariably speaks of him as a man of an extraordinary and happy genius, and great eloquence. <sup>3</sup> He drank deeply from the *well-springs* of ancient learning, and thus acquired a style, which has been said, a little perhaps in the strain of panegyric, to combine the elegance of Livy with the conciseness and simplicity of Cæsar. <sup>4</sup> His merit as a restorer of classical literature, has been universally admitted; and, from this source, he imbibed a large portion of that fine spirit of independence, which constitutes the great charm of the Greek and Roman writers.

Respecting the opinions of Boece upon matters of government, the Bishop of Carlisle remarks, "That his principles of polity are no better than those of Buchanan." That Buchanan should be no favourite with this Prelate, is not wonderful, considering the freedom

<sup>1</sup> Hectoris historici tot quod mendacia quæris  
Si vis ut numerem (lector amici) tibi;  
Idem me jubeas fluctus numerare marinos  
Et liquidi stellas denumerare poli.

LLUYD.

<sup>2</sup> Non solum artium liberalium cognitione supra quam illa ferebant tempora insignem; sed humanitate et comitate singulari præditum.—*Buchan. Lib. II.*

<sup>3</sup> Vir singularis ingenii, felicitatis, et facundi oris.

<sup>4</sup> Lesley, Lib. IX.

with which he treats of Kings and of Monarchy. On these topics, however, the older historian writes with more caution than his successor; and it is surely much to his honour, that his History, written at the commencement of the 16th century, and addressed to the reigning Prince, contains not one slavish thought, nor the slightest trace of a servile spirit. He neither disguises the vices nor palliates the profligacy of former Monarchs; but paints them in their most odious colours, as objects of avoidance to succeeding Princes. Indeed, he dwells with perhaps too much satisfaction upon the detail of royal crimes, and the punishments which generally followed them, during the earlier periods of the Scottish dynasty.

In forming a final estimate of the literary character of Boece, we must bear in mind, that when scholar-craft, in this country at least, was rare, he was a scholar, and contributed, by reviving ancient learning, to dispel the gloom of the middle ages;—and that, while the history of his country existed only in the rude page of the Chroniclers who preceded him, or in the fading records of oral tradition, he embodied it in narrative so interesting, and language so beautiful, as to be worthy of a more refined age.

JOHN BELLENDEN.<sup>1</sup>

THE accounts given of this accomplished Scholar are very imperfect, and it is doubtful if materials now exist, from which it is possible to extract any satisfactory history of his life.

It has been generally supposed that he was a man of honourable descent, and in some way connected with the ancient family of Achinoul. The authors of the *Biographia Britannica*, upon the authority of Mackenzie, dignify him with the title of *Sir John*; and add, that his father, Mr Thomas Bellenden of Achinoul, was Director to the Chancery in 1540, and Clerk Register in 1541.<sup>2</sup> There is no sufficient authority, however, for this account of his genealogy. He appears to have been born in the Lothians, towards the close of the 15th century.<sup>3</sup> His education was unquestionably liberal; and in 1508, we find his name entered, as follows, in the Records of the University of Saint Andrews: "1508. *Jo. Ballētyn nac "Lau(doniæ)."* It is probable that he remained there for several years, which was necessary before he could be laureated. His education was afterwards completed

---

<sup>1</sup> This author's name has been variously written, Ballantyne, Ballentyne, Ballendyne, Ballendene, and Bellenden. In the Auchinleck MS. the translator is styled, "Maister John Ballentyne, Channon of Ross." At the end of the same MS. the name is spelled "Ballantyne."

<sup>2</sup> Vol. I. p. 460.

<sup>3</sup> Bale says of him, "Ex orientali Scotia oriundus."



at the University of Paris, where he took the degree of Doctor of Divinity ; and the effects of his residence upon the Continent may be traced both in his idiom and language.

He returned to Scotland during the minority of James the Fifth ; and his writings contain internal evidence of his having been early introduced to the notice of that Monarch. Sir David Lindsay had been his fellow-student at Saint Andrews, and he seems to have been associated with this eminent person in directing the education of his Prince. He addresses James as "your humyl "servitor sen your first infance ;" and his remarkable Letter, recommending to the attention of the King his translation of Boece, is written very much in the tone of a zealous preceptor. It explains the kingly duties with a freedom which no other character could have warranted the writer in using.<sup>1</sup>

There is some reason to suppose, that, about the year 1528, Bellenden held the situation of Secretary to the Earl of Angus. The circumstances under which James the Fifth was detained at Falkland by that nobleman, with the subsequent escape of the Monarch, are well known. Angus lost no time in pursuing the fugitive, but he was met upon his route to Stirling by a Herald with a royal proclamation, declaring that no member of the family of Douglas should, on pain of treason, approach within six miles of the Court. This order was obeyed by the Earl, and from that hour may be dated the fall of his princely house. He retired to Tantallon, and was soon afterwards, along with his principal adherents, attainted in Parliament.

---

<sup>1</sup> Croniklis, vol. II. p. 515, 516.

The Rolls exhibit the following entry relative to this subject.

“ *Quarto, September 1528.*

“ In presence of the Kingis grace, and Lordes, and the  
 “ estatis of Parliament, comperit *Maister Johnne Ballen-*  
 “ *tyne*, servitour and secretar to Archibald Erle of An-  
 “ gus. And gaif in the resonis underwritten. And pro-  
 “ testit efter the forme and tenour of the samin, off the  
 “ quhilk the tenour follows.—Thir are the reasonis that  
 “ we, Archibald Earle of Angus, George Douglas his  
 “ brother, and Archibald Douglas of Kilspindy, allegis for  
 “ us, quhy we suld not be accusit nor compellit to an-  
 “ swer at this time to the summondis of treasone made  
 “ on us, at our Soverane Lordis instance.”

There is a subsequent entry on the same day, from which it appears that “ *Maister Johnne Ballentyne*, Sec-  
 “ retar to the Erle of Angus, comperit,” and gave secu-  
 rity, that the Earl should appear and underly the sentence  
 of the Parliament.

It would not, however, have suited the purposes of James, to trust the fate of Douglas to the Great Council of the nation. A jury of his sworn foes was accordingly selected, to which the decision of the question was committed. Forfeiture followed as a matter of course, and the *broad lands of the Douglas* were gifted to those by whom he had been condemned, as the reward of their guilty subservience to the wishes of their Sovereign.

Bellenden, in all likelihood, shared at first in the disgrace of the family of Douglas; and this was probably the dismissal to which he alludes in “ *the Proheme of the Cosmographie*.” His poetical talents, however, seem speedily to have restored him to royal favour, and in 1530, he is thus celebrated as a Court poet by Sir David Lindsay,

in his Preface to the *Testament*, and the *Complaint of King James's Papingo* :—

But now of late has start up heastily,  
A cunning clerk, which writeth craftily ;  
A plant of poets, called *Ballanten*,  
Whose ornat writs my wit cannot defyne ;  
Get he into the Court authority,  
He will precel Quintin and Kenedy.<sup>1</sup>

In 1530 and 1531, Bellenden was employed, by the command of the King, in translating Boece's History ; and he delivered a manuscript copy of his work to his royal employer, in the summer of 1533. About the same period, he translated a portion of Livy. These dates are ascertained from the following notices in the Treasurer's accounts. In the end of 1530, or beginning of 1531, there is a payment—

“ To Maister John Ballentyne, be the Kingis precept, for his translating of the Cronykill, £30.”

“ 1531. Oct. 4.—To Maister John Ballentyne, be the Kingis precept, for his translating of the Croniclis, £30.”

“ Item thaireftir to the said Maister Johne, be the Kingis command, £6.”

“ 1533. July 26.—To Meister Johne Ballantyne, for ane new Cronikle gevin to the Kingis Grace, £12.”

“ Item to him in part payment of the translation of Titus Livius, £8.”

“ — Aug. 24.—To Maister John Ballentyne, in part payment of the second buke of Titus Livius, £8.”

“ — Nov. 30.—To Maister John Ballentyne, be the Kingis precept, for his lauboris done in translating of Livie, £20.”

---

<sup>1</sup> Lindsay's Works, 1806. Vol. I. 287.

The literary labours of Bellenden were still farther rewarded by his royal master. The Archdeanery of Moray having become vacant, while the See of Moray was also vacant, the patronage devolved upon the King. Sir John Duncan, parson of Glasgow, Alexander Harvey, a churchman, and Sir Patrick Muir, chaplain, having endeavoured to purchase from the Pope the appointment of Mr James Douglas to the Archdeanery, they were put under prosecution for this misdemeanour, about August 1536. In the subsequent year, Duncan and Harvey were found guilty, and denounced rebels; upon which, the following grant of the Escheat of their benefices for 1536, was given to Bellenden.

1537. *Sept. 9.*—"Grant to Maister Johne Bellendene  
" of all the fruits of the parsonage and chantory of Glas-  
" gow, and other pensions and benefices, pertaining to Sir  
" John Duncan parson of Glasgow, for the year last past,  
" and of all other property which pertained to the said Sir  
" John, and to Alexander Harvey, with the fruits of the  
" said Alexander's benefices and pensions for the said year,  
" all escheat to the King, by their being denounced rebels  
" on a decree of the Lords of Council, for having broken  
" the Acts of Parliament, in purchasing and pleying of  
" the Archdenery of Murray, in the Court of Rome, in  
" prejudice of the King's privilege and patronage of the  
" said Archdenery, the See of Murray being vacant."<sup>1</sup>  
Bellenden paid for this grant a composition of 350  
merks.

---

<sup>1</sup> Privy Seal Register, XI. 31.

He got a similar grant of the Escheat of the benefices and pensions of these two persons for the year 1537, and of all their other property, forfeited to the King. This second grant is dated the 8th of April, 1538; and Bellenden paid a composition of £300 Scots for it.<sup>1</sup> He was afterwards presented by the King to the vacant Archdeanery of Moray, and he also got a Prebend in the Cathedral of Ross; but the date of these appointments is uncertain.

Mackenzie, in his *Life of John Leslie, Bishop of Ross*,<sup>2</sup> has given a very indistinct and erroneous account of Bellenden, in which he is followed by Goodall.<sup>3</sup> These writers confound the translator of the *Chronicles*, with Sir John Bellenden of Achinoul, who was Justice Clerk in the reign of Queen Mary. Mackenzie states that our author was nominated a Senator of the College of Justice in 1554, by the title of Lord Achinoul. Lord Hailes justly remarks, that, laying aside the similitude of names, the only reason for identifying Lord Achinoul with the translator of Boece, arises from the following lines in the “*Proheme of the Cosmography* :”

And fyrst occurit to my remembering,  
How that I wes in service with the King,  
Put to his Grace in yeris tenderest,  
*Clerk of his Comptis.*

“ Dr Mackenzie,” continues Lord Hailes, “ gravely

<sup>1</sup> Vol. XI. 69.

<sup>2</sup> Vol. II. p. 595-600.

<sup>3</sup> Scotstarvet's *Staggering State*, p. 130.



says that *Clerk of the Comptis, is Clerk Register.*"<sup>1</sup> Indeed the whole of Mackenzie's account of Bellenden must be received with distrust. It is at variance with that of Dempster, and other writers, who state the period of his death to have been four years before the date of Lord Achinoul's appointment.

Bellenden appears to have enjoyed the royal favour for a longer period than generally falls to the lot of those who devote themselves to the service of Princes. But he at length, excited, and suffered from the envy of his competitors. Subsequent to his disgrace at Court, he became, in conjunction with Dr Laing, an active opponent of the Reformation, and so deeply involved in the disputes to which it led, that he resolved to retire to a country, where his opinions were likely to be more generally popular than they were, at this period, in his native land. The ardent spirits with whom the Reformation in Scotland originated, were unwearied in their exertions; and the conflict which their opponents had to sustain, was fierce and relentless. To escape from these troubles, Bellenden went to Rome, where he died in 1550. Both Bale and Dempster attest this fact,—the latter, however, who misnames him *James*, with some hesitation: *Obiit Romæ, anno ut puto, 1550.*<sup>3</sup>

THE writings of Bellenden justify our regret that so little is known of their author. That he was a man of

<sup>1</sup> *Catalogue of Lords of Session.* Note 16th.

<sup>2</sup> Coneus, *De Duplici Statu Religionis apud Scotos*, p. 16.

<sup>3</sup> P. 107.

genius, and great acquirements, is indubitable. Dempster celebrates him as skilled in every department of divine and human learning. “*Laboriosa cura, et incredibili studio artes omnes, humanas atque etiam divinas “percepit.”* The commendation of the Bishop of Ossory is equally ample; and there can be no doubt that he was held in respect amongst his contemporaries, as a Poet, a Historian, and a Scholar. The first of these characters recommended him, as we have seen, to James the Fifth, and secured his advancement to situations of honour and emolument. His poetry abounds in lively sallies of imagination, and discloses the workings of a rich and exuberant fancy. According to his early Biographers,<sup>1</sup> he wrote many poetical pieces, consisting of *Visions* and *Miscellanies*, which are now lost. Those which have reached us, are principally *Poems* prefixed to his prose works. They are generally allegorical, and distinguished rather by incidental beauties, than by the skilful structure of the fable. The story, indeed, is often dull, the allusions obscure, and the general scope of the piece unintelligible. These faults, however, are pretty general characteristics of allegorical poets; and they are atoned for, in him, by the striking thoughts, and charming descriptions in which he abounds; and which, “like the threads of gold, the rich Arras, beautify his works quite thorow.”

The most considerable of his Poems is the *Proheme of the Cosmographe*, which the reader will find reprinted in the present Work. The principal incidents of this piece

---

<sup>1</sup> Bale and Dempster.

are borrowed from the classical allegory of the *Choice of Hercules*. Its original title was *Vertue and Vyce*, and it was addressed to James the Fifth. The Poet feigns, that worn out with the fatigue of study, he retired to a flowery meadow, to meditate upon the vanity of human pursuits, and upon the vicissitudes of his own fortune. His first disgrace at Court, which, as we have seen, was probably consequent upon the fall of the family of Douglas, is attributed to the baleful and malicious influence of the stars. Wearied, at length, with his melancholy musings, he sinks into a profound slumber, during which, the vision of a young and glorious Monarch, seated upon a throne, rises to his fancy. Two Goddesses appear, sparkling with beauty and rubies, and contending for the favour of the Prince,—the name of the one *Delight*, and of the other *Virtue*. After exhibiting opposite views of the sources of human happiness, and while they are waiting the decision of the Monarch, the Poet awakes, afraid to violate truth, by disclosing the royal selection. The *Choice of Hercules* is not closely followed, and the merit of the poem, as we have it, may be almost entirely attributed to Bellenden. It must have been written between 1528 and 1530, when James the Fifth was in his nineteenth year. The piece is, throughout, full of fancy and poetry, and the metaphors are generally drawn from the most agreeable objects in nature. The transitory character of human happiness is illustrated, by comparing it to the early decay of the rose, the lily, and the violet; and the utter nothingness of an inactive life is likened to the trackless path of a vessel, which leaves no print upon the waves; or of a bird, whose busy wing pierces the air, leaving no



trace of its course. The effect of virtue upon the mind of man, is compared to the healing influence of precious balm upon disease,—to the breath of flowers,—and to the departure of darkness before the resplendent beams of morn.

The *Proheme of the History* is of a graver and less poetical cast. Perhaps the most striking passage it contains is the descant on Nobility. It appears from this piece, that the translation of Boece's history was not intended for general circulation, but for the young nobles, in whose behalf the *Statute of Education* was passed in the previous reign.

Tharefore thow ganis, for na catyve wichtis  
Allanerly, bot unto nobyll men.

The *Proloug apoun ye Traduction of Titus Livius*, is of a moral, but not very poetical character. It has been printed in the Dissertation, prefixed to Dr Leyden's edition of the *Complaint of Scotland*. After conciliating Bellona and Apollo, the Poet invokes the accomplished James to be "the Muse and Ledare of his pen;" and perhaps the principal interest of the *Proloug*, consists in representing the Monarch as a patron of literature.

An unpublished Poem of Bellenden's, on the Conception of Christ, is to be found in the Hyndford Manuscript; but the poetical merit of this piece is inconsiderable.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> This MS., which is preserved in the Advocates' Library, bears the

BELLENDEN'S Chronicle, which closes with the death of James the First, is rather a free version than a literal translation of Boece; and possesses in several respects the character of an original work.<sup>1</sup> Many of the historical errors of the latter are corrected—not a few of his redundancies retrenched—and his more glaring omissions supplied. The general structure of the History, however, remains untouched; and the line of the Kings of Scotland is maintained in all the antiquity and splendour which Boece assigns to it.

Among the more striking passages of the Translation, we may refer to the story of Caractacus. After an interesting detail of his unsuccessful warfare against the Romans, which was closed by the treason of his step-mother Cartumandia, the British Prince appears as a captive at Rome, attended by his wife, and all his kindred. His horses and chariots are exhibited before him, as the

---

date of 1558; a great part of it, however, has evidently been written at a more recent period.

<sup>1</sup> Bellenden not unfrequently introduces into his narrative passages of considerable length, of which no trace is to be found in the original. Instances of this occur in vol. 2d, pages 297, 299, 373, and 479. The story of the White Hart, which attacked David the First, while hunting on Rude-day; the animadversions on that king's excessive liberality to the church; the remark which it drew from James the First; the defence of Robert Bruce from the suspicion of having occasioned the capture of Dunbar, by withdrawing his vassals from its defence; and the information as to the nickname, and losses of Archibald, Earl of Douglas, are all supplied by the translator. Numerous other instances occur throughout the work. In general, however, Bellenden has rather abridged his author; but he has done it judiciously; the uninteresting passages being those upon which this liberty has been most freely exercised.

monuments of his defeat ; and the spectacle is gazed upon by the Roman people, with a mixture of triumph and of pity. The heart of the warrior is unsubdued even by the presence of the Emperor. He addresses the Roman Potentate with the courage of a patriot King ; and Roman magnanimity immediately rewards him by pardon and freedom.<sup>1</sup>

The terror of the Roman army during the first night after their victory over Eugenius, is also powerfully delineated ; and the passage affords an admirable specimen of the force and variety of the ancient language of Scotland.<sup>2</sup> It has been often quoted. The animating speech too of the Scottish general to his army, on the eve of the conflict with Maximus, is worthy of notice.<sup>3</sup>

Many characters are described by Bellenden with a vigour and conciseness superior to the original. Of this, his account of Constantine, the third brother of Eugenius, and of “ King Culine and his vicious life,” afford instances.<sup>4</sup> The unfortunate expedition of the English princes, Osbret and Ella, to the North, with the subsequent terror and desolation of Scotland, exhibits a fine piece of historical painting.

Bellenden is remarkably successful in the translation of Speeches. There are few better specimens of simple and ancient eloquence, than the two orations of Kenneth ;—the first, said to have been delivered to a convention of

---

<sup>1</sup> B. III. C. xvi.

<sup>2</sup> B. VI. ch. xvii.

<sup>3</sup> Id.

<sup>4</sup> B. VIII. ch. vii.—B. XI. ch. vi.

his nobles at Scone,<sup>1</sup> for the purpose of procuring their assistance in purging “his realme of all misdoaris;”—and the second,<sup>2</sup> delivered in a similar situation, in order to induce his nobles to concur in an alteration of the ancient Scottish law, relative to the succession to the crown. The speech of Bruce to his army previous to the battle of Bannockburn, and that of Alexander Seaton’s wife, “ane wise woman, above the spreit of man,” are of a different and higher character, and present fine examples of hortatory eloquence.

The wild tale of Macbeth, and the Weird Sisters, to which the genius of Shakespeare has given historical reality,<sup>3</sup> does not lose its interest in the translation of the Archdean of Moray.<sup>4</sup> The tragic poet borrowed liberally from Hollingshed’s English version of the *Croniklis*, adopting, in many instances, not only the thoughts, but the language even of the Scottish historian. This is particularly observable in Malcolm’s feigned account of his own profligacy; in Macduff’s pathetic valedictory address to Scotland;<sup>5</sup> and in the circumstances of that fearful conflict, which terminated in the death of the usurper.<sup>6</sup> The character of Lady Macbeth, is but obscurely hinted at in the *Croniklis*; and to Shakespeare alone are we indebted for that splendid personification of guilty ambition. In the structure of his drama, the poet avails himself of in-

<sup>1</sup> B. XI. ch. vii.

<sup>2</sup> B. XI. ch. ix.

<sup>3</sup> Lord Hailes.

<sup>4</sup> B. XII. ch. iii. iv. v. vi. vii.

<sup>5</sup> Macbeth, Act iv. Sc. 3. *Croniklis*, B. XII. C. vii.

<sup>6</sup> Macbeth, Act. v. Sc. 7. *Croniklis*, Id.

cidents which are to be found in Bellenden's account of the murder of Duffus by Donevald.<sup>1</sup>

It was not till the beginning of the 16th century that the art of printing was introduced into Scotland. In 1507, Chapman and Millar established a press at Edinburgh, under a patent. They printed a variety of Poetical Tracts in 1508; and the first volume of the *Breviary of the Church of Aberdeen* in 1509. The second volume of this work was printed in 1510. Bellenden's *Chronicle* was certainly the next work of any consequence printed in Scotland. It has been already stated, that the precise date of its publication is unknown. Assuming, however, that there were more editions of the work than one, and that they must have been printed previous to 1541, when Davidson obtained the situation of King's Printer; we may safely conclude, that it is one of the earliest and most considerable specimens of Scottish Typography which exists.

It is, besides, the purest specimen we possess of the early prose of Scotland; and it affords a mine, from which the richest ore of the ancient language of the Lowland Scots may be extracted. The invaluable Dictionary of Dr Jamieson has rescued that language from the oblivion into which it was hastening; and, in it, liberal use has been made of the stores of Bellenden. That the Lowland Scotch has claims to a high degree of antiquity, seems now generally admitted. The notion that it is derived

---

<sup>1</sup> Book XI. chap. iv.



exclusively from the Anglo-Saxon, has been discarded, while its origin has been successfully traced to the ancient Gothic. It is a rich, varied, and powerful dialect. The mixture of French words is easily accounted for, by the early intercourse which existed between the two nations. Indeed, many families of French and Norman extraction, settled in Scotland as early as the reign of Malcolm Canmore; and at subsequent periods, migrations of this sort became extremely frequent. The natives of France brought their language along with them; and as the dialect of the court and of the provinces of Scotland was the same, the use of Norman-French became prevalent. The language of the Continent was thus directly imported into Scotland; and, accordingly, we find many French words and phrases in our early prose writers, which at no period have formed any part of the dialect of England. This subject might be farther illustrated by a reference to the similarity between the early Romances of France and of Scotland. Many of the tales collected in the *Fabliaux* of Le Grand, were familiar to the peasantry of Scotland in the early part of the Sixteenth Century. But what has been already stated, goes far to establish, that we are not indebted to our Southern neighbours for the earlier Continental contributions to our language. These came to us directly from France, while the stock upon which they were grafted, was of Gothic origin.

Among the works of Bellenden, Bale enumerates a tract on the Pythagoric Letter, and a discourse upon Virtue and Pleasure, neither of which are extant. Other writers state that he wrote a Life of Pythagoras. With respect to the discourse upon Virtue and Pleasure, it is not at all improbable, that Bale may refer to the *Pro-*

*heme of the Cosmographie*, the allegorical character of which has been already explained. The Epistle to James the Fifth, which has also been mentioned as a distinct work, is obviously the letter subjoined to the translation of Boece. This sufficiently appears from the first words of it, as given by Bale, *Erasmus Roterodamus, in libro de*. The epistle “Direckit be ye translatoure to the kyngis grace,” commences “Erasmus Roterodamus, in his buke.”

Bale seems to imagine that Bellenden composed a piece, *super quodam somnio*, but it is more than probable that this too refers to the *Proheme of the Cosmographie*, which assumes the form of a vision. The last article in Bale’s Catalogue of the writings of Bellenden, is a book said to contain *Diversi generis Carmina*. This is not extant; nor is there any satisfactory evidence that such a work was ever published. Dr Campbell states that several of Bellenden’s poems were in the possession of Mr Lawrence Dundas, Professor of Humanity in the University of Edinburgh; and others are still supposed to exist in the repositories of private families.<sup>1</sup> Bale mentions it as a report, without, however, giving any opinion as to its truth, that Bellenden continued the History of Boece to the year 1536. This certainly was at one period his intention. After alluding, in the *Proheme of the History*, to what he has already done, he continues,

And yet becaus my time hes bene so schort;  
I think quhen I have opportunitie  
To ring thair bell into ane othir sort.

---

<sup>1</sup> “It is certain that many of his writings are in the hands of persons of distinction in Scotland, who are careful preservers of such kind of curiosities.”—*Biograph. Britan.*



THE classical acquirements of Bellenden are attested by a translation of the First five Books of Livy, executed at the command of James the Fifth. A copy of this manuscript work, which is not noticed by our author's earlier biographers, was presented to the Advocates' Library, by the late Lord Ellick, to whom it appears to have belonged in 1730. It is in excellent order; and the hand-writing may be attributed to the early part of the Sixteenth Century; but whether it is that of the Archdean of Moray, must remain a matter of doubt. The notices which have already been quoted from the Treasurer's Accounts, shew that the Translation of Livy was executed in 1533.

The version of the Roman Historian, seems to be rendered with the same freedom and spirit which distinguishes that of Boece; and it is to be hoped, that at no very distant period, so valuable a relict of our early literature will be rescued from the obscurity in which it at present remains. To the specimens of it which are already before the public in Dr Leyden's *Introduction to the Complaint of Scotland*, may be added, the appeal of the elder Horatius in behalf of his son, which is very happily translated:

“ O Romanis (said he) have ze sa feirs and innative  
 “ cruelte in zoure hartis, yat ze may se him bound under  
 “ ye galloas w<sup>t</sup> grete torment and punycioun: quhom  
 “ ze saw laitlie decorit and triumphant, w<sup>t</sup> hie victorie of  
 “ zor inemyies. Ibelief ye Albanis hisu nmerciful fais my  
 “ nocht behald sa terribil sicht and cruelte done to him.  
 “ Pas yow Burreo, and bynd yai handis, quhilkis latelie  
 “ quhen yai war armit, conquest sa hie empire to Romane

“ pepill : Pas yow Burreo, and covir ye hede of yat cam-  
 “ pioun, quhilk is ye deliverare of yis ciete fra thirldome:  
 “ Hing up his body in ane unchancy tre : Skurge him now  
 “ within ye Pomerie, amang ye horaciane Pillaris ; and  
 “ spulezeis conquest be him of inemyis ; or ellis skurge  
 “ him utouth ye Pomerie amang ye sepulcuris of Cura-  
 “ cianis. Ze can have him to na maner of placis within  
 “ zoure senzeorie ; bot his grete meritis, and glore of vic-  
 “ torie, sall ay deliver him fra sic schamefull and vile puny-  
 “ tioun.”

It appears from the poetical *Prologue*, that it was Bel-  
 lenden's original intention to have translated the whole  
 of Livy ; but the following verses subjoined to it in a  
 later hand, in the copy already referred to, lead to the in-  
 ference, that the translator never completed more than  
 five Books of his task :

Fyve buikes ar here by Ballantyne translated ;  
 Restis zet ane hundred threttie fyve behind,—  
 Quhilkis if ye samyn war alsweill compleated,  
 Wald be ane volume of ane monstrous bind.—  
 Ilk man perfytes not quhat they aunc intend,  
 So fraill and brittle ar our wretched dayes :  
 Let sume man then begin q' he doeth end,  
 Give him ye first, tak yame ye secund praise :  
 No, no ! to Titus Livius give all,  
 That peerles prince for feattis historical.

A. HOME, *St Leonardes.*

IN giving to the Public this reprint of the *Croniklis of  
 Scotland*, it may be safely stated, that the lover of antique  
 lore will find it rich in *barbaric pearl and gold*. The for-  
 mer may be rudely set, and the latter coarsely wrought ;

but the intrinsic value of the gem and of the metal remains the same. The rust of age has not obscured the fancy and imagery with which the work abounds; and if all the inaccuracies of Boece are not corrected, and all his fables not discarded, it can only be said, in apology for the venerable Archdean, that *some degree of credulity may be excused, in an age when all men were credulous.*



## SUBSCRIBERS.

---

REV. L. ADAMSON, Cupar, Fife.  
LIBRARY OF THE FACULTY OF ADVOCATES.  
GABRIEL ALEXANDER, Esq. Advocate.  
THOMAS ALLAN, Esq.  
JOSEPH BAIN, Jun. Esq. Glasgow.  
THE HON. LORD BANNATYNE.  
ROBERT BELL, Esq. Advocate.  
THE MOST NOBLE THE MARQUIS OF BUTE.  
ALEXANDER CAMPBELL, Esq.  
ELIAS CATHCART, Esq. Advocate.  
WILLIAM CATHCART, Esq.  
JAMES CHEAPE, Esq. of Stratyrum.  
ANDREW CLEPHANE, Esq. Advocate.  
JOHN CLERK, Esq. of Eldon, Advocate.  
HENRY COCKBURN, Esq. Advocate.  
JOHN COCKBURN, Esq.  
GEORGE CRANSTOUN, Esq. Advocate.  
PATRICK CRICHTON, Esq.  
THE HON. JOHN LESLIE CUMING, General.  
JOHN CUNNINGHAM, Esq. Advocate.  
J. G. DALYELL, Esq. Advocate.  
CAPTAIN DAVIDSON.  
JAMES DUNDAS, Esq. W.S.  
ROBERT DUNDAS, Esq. of Arniston, Advocate.  
ALEXANDER DUNLOP, Esq. Advocate.  
ROBERT FERGUSON, Esq. of Raith.  
THE RIGHT HON. THE EARL OF FIFE.  
JOHN FULLERTON, Esq. Advocate.  
J. T. GIBSON, Esq.  
GEORGE GORDON, Esq. of Hallhead.  
ROBERT GRÆME, Esq. Advocate.  
PETER HALKERSTON, LL.D.  
ALEXANDER HENDERSON, Esq. Surveyor-Gen. of the Post-  
Office.  
THE HON. LORD HERMAND.  
LAURENCE HILL, Esq. Glasgow.  
DAVID IRVING, LL.D.  
HENRY JARDINE, Esq.  
FRANCIS JEFFREY, Esq. Advocate.  
JAMES KEAY, Esq. Advocate.  
VISCOUNT KEITH.  
SIR ALEXANDER KEITH, of Ravelston and Dunnottar.  
T. F. KENNEDY, Esq. of Dunure, M.P.

JOHN KERR, Esq. Glasgow.  
 JOHN KIRKPATRICK, Esq. Advocate.  
 MR DAVID LAING.  
 SIR THOMAS DICK LAUDER, of Fountainhall, Bart.  
 MR W. H. LIZARS.  
 J. G. LOCKHART, Esq. Advocate.  
 ÆNEAS MACBEAN, Esq. W.S.  
 WILLIAM M'DOWALL, Esq. of Barr.  
 WILLIAM M'DOWALL, Esq. Advocate.  
 J. W. MACKENZIE, Esq. W.S.  
 J. N. MACLEOD, Esq. of Macleod.  
 JAMES MAIDMENT, Esq. Advocate.  
 THOMAS MAITLAND, Esq. yr. of Dundrennan, Advocate.  
 GILBERT LAING MEASON, Esq. of Lindertis.  
 MR ALEXANDER MILNE, Forres.  
 JAMES MONCRIEFF, Esq. Advocate.  
 J. S. MORE, Esq. Advocate.  
 J. A. MURRAY, Esq. Advocate.  
 JAMES NAIRNE, Esq. W.S.  
 R. A. OSWALD, Esq. of Auchencruive.  
 ALEXANDER OSWALD, Esq. Advocate.  
 MESSRS PAYNE & FOSS, Pall Mall, London.  
 ROBERT PITCAIRN, Esq. W.S.  
 JAMES RENNIE, Esq. Civil Engineer.  
 JOHN RICHARDSON, Esq. London.  
 PATRICK ROBERTSON, Esq. Advocate.  
 ANDREW RUTHERFURD, Esq. Advocate.  
 SIR WALTER SCOTT of Abbotsford, Bart.  
 CHARLES SELKRIG, Esq. Accountant.  
 SIR SAMUEL SHEPPERD, LORD CHIEF BARON.  
 THOMAS SIVWRIGHT, Esq. of Meggetland.  
 ANDREW SKENE, Esq. Advocate.  
 RIGHT HON. EARL SPENCER, K.G., *Large Paper*.  
 SIR SAMUEL STIRLING, Bart. Advocate.  
 WILLIAM STIRLING, Esq.  
 JAMES TAIT, Esq.  
 MR A. THOMSON, *Large Paper*.  
 ALEXANDER THOMSON, Esq. Banchory.  
 THOMAS THOMSON, Esq. Advocate.  
 MR ROBERT TRIPHOOK, London—3 Copies.  
 JAMES TYTLER, Esq. of Woodhouselee, W.S.  
 P. F. TYTLER, Esq. Advocate.  
 GEORGE VEITCH, Esq. W.S.  
 JAMES WEDDERBURN, Esq. His Majesty's Solicitor-General.  
 ROBERT WHIGHAM, Esq. of Lochpatrick, Advocate.  
 MR ISAAC WILSON, Hull—3 Copies, *Large Paper*.  
 THOMAS GUTHRIE WRIGHT, Esq. W.S.  
 LIBRARY OF WRITERS TO HIS MAJESTY'S SIGNET.



# Heir beginnis the hystory and croniklis of Scotland.





Nyghe of man be inclinacioun  
 In sondry wyse is geuin, as we se.  
 Sum men ar geuin to detractioun,  
 Inuy, displeisur, or malancolie,  
 And to thair nyghbouris hes no cherite.  
 Sum ar so nobill and full of gentilnes,  
 Thay luf no thing bot Joy and merynes.

¶ Sum ar at vndir, and sum maid vp of nocht.  
 Sum men luffis peace, and sum desiris weir.  
 Sum is so blyth in to his mery thocht,  
 He curis nocht; so he may perseueir  
 In grace and fauour of his lady deir.  
 Sum boldin at othir in maist cruell feid  
 With lance and dagar rynnis to the deid.

¶ Ane hes that mycht ane hundzeth weil sustene,  
 And leiffis in wo and pennance at his table.  
 And of gud fallois comptis nocht ane bene,  
 His wrechit mynd is so insaciabie.  
 As heuin and hell wer no thing bot ane fable  
 He birnis ay, but sycht to gud or euil,  
 And rynnis with all his baggis to the deuil.

¶ And I the prentar that dois confidir weil  
 Thir sondry myndis of men in thair leuing,  
 Desiris nocht bot on my laubour leil  
 That I mycht leif, and of my Just wynnynge  
 Mycht first pleis God, and syne our noble Kyng.  
 And that ze reders housum and attent  
 Wer of my laubour and besynes content.

And in this wark that I haue heic assailzeit  
 To bring to sycht, maist humely I exhort  
 Zow nobill reders, quhare that I haue failzeit  
 In letter, sillabe, poyntis lang, or schozt.  
 That ze will of zour gentrice it support.  
 And tak the sentence the best wyse ze may,  
 I sall do better (will God) ane othir day.

¶ Finis.



# THE CONTENTIS

OF

## THIS BUKE.



N the first, the Proheme apon the Cosmographie; schaw-  
and the fine of vicius and virtewis leiffing, and causis  
quhy the translatoure tuke this werk on hand.

The discriptioun of Scotland; devidit in rubrikis and  
cheptouris.

Ane compendious narratioun of the auld institutionis, maneris,  
and leving of Scottis; with ane morall doctrine, deploring sindry re-  
cent and evill conswetudis brocht in this realme, to the gret diffor-  
mte of the pepill now present in the samin.

Ane schort recapitulation of all kingis of Britane, fra the first be-  
ginning thair of, to the empire of King Hary the VIII., regnand now  
with gret felicite abone Inglismen.

The table of the historie; contenand every buke and cheptour  
craftely severit be thaimself.

The names of all kingis and governouris of Scotland sen the realme  
began; schawing, in quhat bukis and cheptouris of the historie fol-  
lowing, thair livis and marciall dedis sal be esalie foundin.

The proheme apon the historie; schawand, breiffelie, the con-  
tentis and maist notable thingis in this buke.

The beginning of Scottis, and quhy thay wer callit with that name;  
thair happy cuming out of Egipt to Spanye, Ireland, the Ilis of Al-  
bion, and to that regioun that wes callit be thaim Scotland.

The vailyeant and weirlye dedis of all kingis, princis, governouris,  
and chiftanis of Scotland; with maist dangerus and terribil battallis  
fochtin, be sindry chancis of fortoun, aganis the Britonis, Pichtis,  
Saxonis, Inglismen, and Danis.

The beginning of Pichtis; thair confideratioun with Scottis in amite, blud, and freindschip; thair weris lang continewing aganis the Romanis, be support of Scottis; thair exterminioun and finall expulsioun out of Albion be the weris of Scottis.

The beginning of Britonis; thair lang weris, persevering aganis the Romanis. How thai wer subdewit, and thair realme maid tributar in forme of province; and, finalie, dounge out of Britane in Walis be weris of Saxonis.

The cuming of Saxonis in Britane; thair weris, slichtis, and marciall dedis, wrocht, be sindry chancis, aganis the Britonis, Scottis, and Pichtis.

The weris of Inglismen, eftir the cuming of Saxonis.

Mony uncouth merveillis and wounderfull thingis, schawin ay in the samin season as thay fell; with the names of maist notable Clerkis and Sanctis, levand for the time in the world.

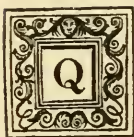
Mony grave concionis, orisonis, consultationis, and epistillis, contenant richt fructuus and morall doctrinis; with sa resolute and degeest responses, that na othir buke sal be foundin mair proffitable nor pleasand to the reders.

Ane epistill, direckit be the translatoure to the Kingis grace, in the letter end of this buke; inducing his Hienes to frequent reding of the historie precedent.

FINIS.

*Followis the Proheme apon the Cosmographic.*

THE  
PROHEME  
OF THE  
COSMOGRAPHE.



UHEN silvir Diane, ful of bemis bricht,  
Fra dirck eclips wes past, this othir nicht,  
And in the crab, hir propir mansion, gane;  
Artophilax contending at his micht,  
In the gret eist, to set his visage richt;  
I mene, the ledar of the Charle-wane;  
Abone our heid wes the ursis twane:  
Quhen sterris small obscuris in our sicht,  
And Lucifer left twinkland him allane:

The frosty nicht, with hir proluxit houris,  
Hir mantill quhit spred on the tender flouris:  
Quhen ardent lauboure hes addressit me  
Translait the story of our progenitouris,  
Thair gret manheid, hie wisdom, and honouris;  
Quhen we may cleir, as in ane mirroure, se  
The furus end sum time of tirannie;  
Sum time the glorie of prudent governouris:  
Ilk stait apprisit in thair faculte.

My very spreit desiring to repres  
My emptive pen of frutles besines,

## THE PROHEME

Awalkit furth to tak the recent aire ;  
 Quhen Priapus, with stormy weid oppres,  
 Raqueistit me, in his maist tendernes,  
 To rest ane quhile amid his gardingis bare.  
 Bot I no maner couth my mind prepare  
 To set aside unplesand hevines,  
 On this and that contemplating solitare.

And first occurrit to my remembring,  
 How that I wes in service with the King ;  
 Put to his Grace in yeris tenderest,  
 Clerk of his Comptis, thought I wes inding,  
 With hart and hand, and every othir thing  
 That micht him pleis in ony maner best ;  
 Quhill hie invy me from his service kest,  
 Be thaim that had the Court in governing,  
 As bird but plumes heryit of the nest.

Our life, our giding, and our aventuris,  
 Dependis from thir hevinlie creaturis  
 Apperandlie be sum necessite.  
 For thought ane man wald set his besy curis,  
 So far as laboure and his wisdom furis,  
 To fle hard chance of infortunite ;  
 Thought he eschew it with difficulte ;  
 The cursit weird yit ithandle enduris,  
 Gevin to him first in his nativite.

Of erdlie stait bewaling thus the chance,  
 Of fortoun gud I had na esperance.  
 So lang I swomit in hir seis deip,  
 That sad avising with hir thochtful lance,  
 Couth find na port to ankir hir firmance ;  
 Quhill Morpheus, the drery god of sleip,  
 For very reuth did on my curis weip,  
 And set his sleuth and deidly contenance  
 With snorand vanis throw my body creip.

Me thocht I was in to ane plesand meid,  
Quhare Flora maid the tender blewmis spreid,  
Throw kindlie dew and humouris nutritive;  
Quhen goldin Titan, with his flammis reid,  
Abone the seis rasit up his heid;  
Diffounding down his heit restorative  
To every frute that nature maid on live,  
Quhilk wes afore in to the winter deid,  
For stormis cald and frostis penitrive.

Ane silver fontane sprang of watter cleir  
In to that place quhare I approchit neir.  
Quhare I did sone espy ane fellown reird  
Of courtly gallandis in thair best maneir,  
Rejosing thaim in season of the yeir,  
As it had bene of Mayis day the feird.  
Thair gudlie havingis maid me nocht affeird.  
With thaim I saw ane crownit King appeir,  
With tendir downis rising on his beird.

Thir courtlie gallandis settand thair intentis  
To sing, and play on divers instrumentis,  
According to this Princis appetit;  
Two plesand ladyis come pransand ouir the bentis;  
Thair costlie clethin schew thair mighty rentis.  
Quhat hart nicht wis, thay wantit nocht ane mit;  
The rubeis schone apone thair fingaris quhit;  
And, finalie, I knew, be thair consentis,  
This ane, Virtew; that othir, hecht Delite.

Thir Goddesses arrayit in this wise,  
As reverence and honoure list devise,  
Afore this Prince, fell down apone thair kneis;  
Sine dressit thaim in to thair best avise,  
So far as wisdome in thair power lyes,  
To do the thing that nicht him best appeis,  
Quhare he rejosit in his hevinly gleis;

" Gif thow desiris in the seis fleit  
 " Of hevinly blis, than me thy lady treit ;  
 " For it is said be clerkis of renoun,  
 " Thair is na pleseir in this eird so gret  
 " As quhen ane luffar dois his lady meit,  
 " To quikin his life of mony deidly swon.  
 " As hiest pleseir but comparison,  
 " I sall the geif, into thy yeris swete,  
 " Ane lusty halk with mony plumis broun ;

" Quhilk sal be found so joyus and plesant,  
 " Gif thow unto hir mery flichtis hant,  
 " Of every blis that may in erd appeir,  
 " As hart will think, thow sall no plente want ;  
 " Quhill yeris swift, with quhelis properant,  
 " Consume thy strenth, and all thy bewte cleir."  
 And quhen Delite had said on this manear,  
 As rage of youtheid thoct maist relevant,  
 Than Virtew said, as ye sall eftir heir :

" My landis braid, with mony plentuous schire,  
 " Sall gif thy Hienes, gif thou list desire,  
 " Triumphant glore, hie honoure, fame devine ;  
 " With sic pissance, that thaim na furius ire,  
 " Nor werand age, nor flame of birnand fire,  
 " Nor bitter deith, may bring unto rewine.  
 " Bot thow mon first insuffer mekill pine,  
 " Abone thy self that thow may have empire :  
 " Than sall thy fame and honoure have na fine.

" My realme is set among my fois all ;  
 " Quhilkis hes with me ane weir continewall,  
 " And evir still dois on my bordour ly ;  
 " And, thought thay may no wayis me ourithrall,  
 " Thay ly in wait, gif ony chance may fall  
 " Of me sum time to get the victory.



“ Thus is my life ane ithand chevalry.  
“ Laubour me haldis strang as ony wall,  
“ And no thing brekis me bot slogardy.

“ Na fortoun may aganis me availl,  
“ Thocht scho with cludy stormis me assaill.  
“ I brek the streme of scharp adversite.  
“ In weddir louin and maist tempestius hail,  
“ But ony dreid, I beir ane equall sail;  
“ My schip so strang that I may nevir dé.  
“ Wit, reason, manheid, governis me so hie,  
“ No influence nor steris may prevaill  
“ To regne on me with infortunite.

“ The rage of youtheid may nocht dantit be,  
“ But gret distres and scharp adversite;  
“ As be this reason is experience:  
“ The finest gold or silver that we se,  
“ May nocht be wrocht to our utilite,  
“ But flammis kene and bitter violence.  
“ The more distres, the more intelligence.  
“ Quhay salis lang in hie prosperite,  
“ Ar sone ouriset be stormy violence.

“ This fragill life, as moment induring,  
“ But dout, sall the and every pepill bring  
“ To sickir blis, or than eternall wo.  
“ Gif thou be honest lauboure dois ane thing,  
“ Thy panefull laubour sall vanes but tarying,  
“ Howbeit thy honest werkis do nocht so:  
“ Gif thou be lust dois ony thing also,  
“ The schamefull deid, without dissevering,  
“ Remanis ay, quhen pleseir is ago.

“ As carvell ticht fast tending throw the see,  
“ Levis na prent amang the wallis hie;  
“ As birdis swift, with mony besy plume,

“ Peirsis the aire, and wait nocht quhare thay fle ;  
 “ Siclik our life, without activite,  
 “ Giffis na frut, howbeit ane schado blume.  
 “ Quhay dois thair life into this erd consume  
 “ Without virtew, thair fame and memorie  
 “ Sall vanis soner than the reky fume.

“ As watter purgis and makis bodyis fair ;  
 “ As fire be nature ascendis in the aire,  
 “ And purifyis with heitis vehement ;  
 “ As floure dois smell ; as frute is nurisare ;  
 “ As precius balme revertis thingis sare,  
 “ And makis thaim of rot impacient ;  
 “ As spice, maist swete ; as ros, maist redolent ;  
 “ As stern of day, be moving circular, e  
 “ Chasis the nicht with beunis resplendent :

“ Siclik my werk perfitis every wicht  
 “ In fervent luf of maist excellent licht,  
 “ And makis man into this erd but peir ;  
 “ And dois the saule fra all corruptioun dicht  
 “ With odoure dulce, and makis it more bricht  
 “ Than Diane full, or yit Appollo cleir ;  
 “ Sine rasis it unto the hiest speir,  
 “ Immortaly to schine in Goddis sicht,  
 “ As chosin spous, and creature most deir.

“ This othir wenche, that clepit is Delite,  
 “ Involvis man, be sensuall appetite,  
 “ In every kind of vice and miserie ;  
 “ Becaus na wit nor reason is perfite,  
 “ Quhare scho is gide, bot skaithis infinite,  
 “ With doloure, schame, and urgent poverté.  
 “ For scho wes get of frothis of the see ;  
 “ Quhilk signifies, hir plesoir vennomit  
 “ Is midlit ay with scharp adversite.

“ Duke Hanniball, as mony authouris wrait,  
“ Throw Spanye come, be mony passage strait,  
“ To Italy in furour bellicall;  
“ Brak down the wallis, and the montanis slait,  
“ And to his army maid ane oppin gait,  
“ And victoryis had on the Romanis all:  
“ At Capua, be pleseir sensuall,  
“ This Duk wes maid so soft and deligait,  
“ That with his fois he wes sone ouirthrall.

“ Of feirs Achill, the weirlie dedis sprang  
“ In Troy and Grece, quhill he in virtew rang;  
“ How lust him slew, it is bot reuth to heir.  
“ Siclik the Trojanis, with thair knichtis strang,  
“ The vailyeant Grekis fra thair roumes dang;  
“ Victoriusslie exercit mony yeir:  
“ That nicht thay went to thair lust and pleseir,  
“ The fatall hors did throw thair wallis fang,  
“ Quhais prignant sidis wer full of men of weir.

“ Sardanapall, the prince effeminat,  
“ Fra knichtlie dedis wes degenerat;  
“ Twinand the thredis of the purpur lint  
“ With fingaris soft, amang the ladyis sat;  
“ And with his lust couth nocht be saciat,  
“ Quhill of his fois come the bitter dint.  
“ Quhat nobill men and ladyis hes bene tint  
“ Quhen thay with lustis wer intoxicat,  
“ To schaw at lenth, my tounge suld nevir stint.

“ Thairfore Camil, the vailyeant chevaleir,  
“ Quhen he the Gallis had dantit be his weir,  
“ Of heritable landis wald have na recompence;  
“ For, gif his barnis and his freindis deir  
“ Wer virtewis, thay couth nocht fail ilk yeir  
“ To have ineuch be Romane providence;

“ Gif thay wer gevin to vice and insolence,  
 “ It wes nocht neidfull for to conques geir,  
 “ To be occasioun of thair incontinence.

“ Sum nobill men, as poetis list declare,  
 “ Wer deifeit; sum goddis of the aire;  
 “ Sum of the hevin: as Eolus, Vulcan,  
 “ Saturn, Mereury, Appollo, Jupitare,  
 “ Mars, Hercules, and othir men preclare,  
 “ That glore immortal in thair livis wan.  
 “ Quhy wer thir peple callit goddis than?  
 “ Becaus thay had ane virtew singulare,  
 “ Excellent, hie abone ingine of man.

“ And otheris ar in reik sulphurius;  
 “ As Ixion, and wery Sisiphus,  
 “ Eumenides the Furyis richt odibill,  
 “ The proud giandis, and thristy Tantalus;  
 “ With huglie drink, and fude most vennomus;  
 “ Quhare flammis bald and mirknes ar sensibill.  
 “ Quhy ar thir folk in panis so terribill?  
 “ Becaus thay wer bot schrewis vicius,  
 “ Into thair life, with dedis most horribill.

“ And thought na frute wer eftir consequent  
 “ Of mortall life, bot for this warld present  
 “ Ilk man to have allanerlie respect;  
 “ Yit virtew suld fra vice be different,  
 “ As quik fra deid, as riche fra indigent.  
 “ That ane, to glore and honour ay direct;  
 “ This othir, saule and body to neclect:  
 “ That ane, of reason most intelligent;  
 “ This othir, of beistis following the affect.

“ For he that nold aganis his lustis strive,  
 “ Bot leiffis as beist of knowlege sensitive,  
 “ Eildis richt fast, and deith him sone our halis.

“ Thairfore the mule is of ane langar live  
 “ Than stonit hors; also the barant wive  
 “ Apperis young, quhen that the brudie falis.  
 “ We se also, quhen nature nocht prevalis,  
 “ The pane and dolour ar sa pungitive,  
 “ No medicine the pacient avalis.

“ Sen thow hes hard baith our intentis thus,  
 “ Cheis of us two the maist delitius:  
 “ First to sustene ane scharp adversite,  
 “ Danting the rage of youtheid furius;  
 “ An sine possaid triumphe innumerus,  
 “ With lang empire, and hie felicite:  
 “ Or haif, ane moment, sensualite  
 “ Of fuliche youth, in life voluptuous;  
 “ And all thy dayis full of miserie.”

Be than, Phebus his fry cart did wry  
 Fra south to west, declinand besaly  
 To dip his steidis in the oceane;  
 Quhen he began ouirsile his visage dry,  
 With vapouris thik, and cloudis full of sky;  
 And Notus brim the wind meridiane,  
 With wingis donk, and pennis full of rane,  
 Awalkenit me; that I nicht nocht aspy  
 Quhilk of thaim two was to his lady tane.

Bot sone I knew thay war the Goddesses  
 That come in sleip to vailyeant Hercules,  
 Quhen he was young, and fre of every lore  
 To lust or honour, povertie or riches;  
 Quhen he contemptnit lust and idilnes,  
 That he in virtew nicht his life decore;  
 And werkis did of maist excellent glore.  
 The more inressit his panefull besines,  
 His hie triumphe and loving was the more.



Than, throw this morall eruditioun  
Quhilk come, as said is, in my visioun,  
I tuke purpos, or I forthir went,  
To write the story of this regioun,  
With dedis of mony illuster campioun.  
And, thought the pane apperis vehement,  
To make the story to the redaris more patent,  
I will begin at the discriptioun  
Of Albion, in maner subsequent.

FINIS.

# HEIR BEGINNIS THE COSMOGRAPHE

AND

## DISCRIPTION OF ALBION.

---

### Chap. First.

*How all thingis is subdewit to alteratioun and deith ; and na thing  
permanent in the erd.*



TRAIST nane hes sa dirk intelligence, bot knawis Cosmographie maist necessar to the knowlege of historyis ; and yit to discrive the samin, is the office of na smal ingine. Attoure, all the auctouris, that hes writtin upon the discription of the warld, ar patent and knawin to ilk regioun and pepill ; amang quhome hes bene mony crafty and resolut men, schawing mony gret thingis above ingine of men, with so profound sentence, that the samin is na thing different fra the verite, in discription of mony uncouth and divers thingis succeeding continewally, to the gret commodite and pleseir of reders. Yit sen the mater that thay treit is not solide nor permanent in the samin forme and image as it was first found, apperis baith to unletterit pepil and utheris quhilkis hes na sicht to the continewal alteration of materis, that the verite is not schawin to thaim in al partis. And sen all thingis quhilkis ar comprehendit within the speir of the mone, ar sa thirlit to deith and alteration, that thay ar othir consumit afore us,

or ellis we afore thame ; apperis na thing mair corruptible, nor yit of mair alteratioun, than the erd and situatioun thair of ; becaus it changis sa mony figuris be lang age and proces of yeris. For we nocht al-  
 lannerly may se presently be our ene, bot findis be mony crafty and  
 profound historicianis, that quhare sum time bene maist notable  
 cietes, or maist plentuous lesuris and medois, now, throw erdquaik  
 and trimbling, or ellis be continewall inundation of watteris, nocht  
 remanis bot othir the huge seis, or ellis unprofitable ground and  
 sandis. Attoure the see, be alluvioun and pres of rageand watters,  
 cumis in on sum landis and gangis furth on utheris, as daily occurris  
 be experience ; for baith seis and watteris gevis, be injust merchis,  
 als mekle to sum landis as thay reif fra utheris. Heirfore I belief,  
 be sindry chances and lang proces of time, that every thing sall not  
 be respondent to the samin perfection and knowlege as it was dis-  
 crivit be auld cosmographouris, in the figure and situation of the erd.  
 Thairfore na man suld have admiration, howbeit recent authouris  
 discrive the warld in sum uthir figure and sort than it hes bene dis-  
 crivit afore be Pomponius Mela, Ptholome, and othir auld cosmo-  
 graphouris ; for the erd is now mair frequent in pepil than it was in  
 thay dayis, and the passage in al cuntreis mair knawin ; throw quhilk  
 the situation of all regionis, be exact and scharp deligence of authouris,  
 is the mair patent. Attoure, gif thir auld cosmographouris war bot  
 men as we ar, followis na admiration, howbeit thay had na sicker  
 cognosance and ful erudition of al thingis ; and, for that caus, thay  
 nicht not writ forthir than thay saw be thair awin inquisition, or  
 ellis be experience of utheris authouris past afore thame. For thir  
 reasonis, we think it litil wrang sum times nocht to follow al thair  
 opinionis : for thay had not knowlege nor experience of all materis ;  
 and, thairfore, we dar the mair baldly writ sum thingis for the com-  
 mon proffet, specially concernyng the figure and situation of Scot-  
 land, with the maneris of the pepill thair of, in sum uthir sort than  
 hes bene schawin afore be uthir authouris : for we have not onely  
 sene the samyn, bot hes knowlege thair of be lang experience and  
 use ; throw quhilk, this our quhatsumevir werk sal not be unprofi-  
 tabil nor yit unplesand to the reders, for in it sal be schawin the  
 maneris and conditioun of the pepill of Scotland, with the situation  
 thair of. Attoure, to mak the reders more bowsum and attent, we

promit faithfullie to writ na thing in this werk bot allanerlie sik thing as bene maist patent and knawin to us, othir be our awin exact diligence and industrie, or ellis be rehers of otheris richt trew and faithful auctouris; and, thairfore, gif this our werk be found pleasant to the reders; we sall writ sum othir tim mair largelie of othir materis, baith to thair eruditoun and pleseir.

## Chap. Second.

*The Discriptioun of Albion, and quhy it wes callit with that Name.  
The beginning of Britonis and Scottis.*



HE hail Ile of Albion, quhilk contenis baith the realmes of England and Scotland, as is discrivit be the Latine and Greik cosmographouris, is enveronid on every side with the gret oceane; havand on the eist side, the Almane seis; on the south side, the Franche and Britane seis; on the west side, the Ireland seis; and on the north side, the Norroway seis. This Ile is extendit be lang passage fra the south-south-eist to the north-nor-west, and is mair extendit to the lenth than breid, nocht far different fra the figure of ane triangle. This Ile, be auld cosmographouris, wes callit Albion, and remanis yit undir the samin name. Sum auctouris sayis, this Ile wes callit Albion, *ab albis montibus*; that is to say, fra the quhit montanis thairof, full of calk: Utheris allegis, it wes callit Albion, fra ane lady namit Albyne; quhilk history is nocht unlik the fabulis that ar writin of the fiftie douchteris of Danaus, King of Argives. This Albyne, as is allegit, with hir fiftie sisteris, eftir that thay had slane al thair husbandis, pullit up salis, and come out of Grece throw the seis of Hercules to Spanye; and, fra Spanye, come throw the Franche and Almane seis but ony impediment to the said Ile; and, eftir hir arriving in the samin, namit it Albion fra hir name. This Albyne, with hir fiftie sisteris, eftir thair cuming in the said Ile, conversit with devillis in forme of men, and consavit childrin be naturall commixtion. Thir childrin

increscit of sa huge stature and pissance, that thay wer callit be the peple giandis ; and inhabit the said regioun continewallie to the time of Brutus, the first beginner of Britonis. This Brutus wes nepot, or ellis pronepot, to the gret Trojane Eneas ; and, becaus he wes exilit and banist for slauchter and othir gret offensis done be him in Italie, he wes constrainit to depart with the residew of Trojanis, his fallois, to serche sum new dwelling. Eftir lang travell be tempestuous and storme seis, he arrivit in Albion, fra the beginning of the world MMM.XXVII yeris. This Brutus and his fallowis, eftir thair cuming in Albioun, invadit the giandis afore rehersit with sindry chancis of battall ; and, finalie, brocht thaim to sa hie rewine, that baith thair landis and guddis fell in pray to Brutus and his fallowis : and sa the cuntre wes callit Britane, and the pepill Britonis. Bot the beginning of Scottis wes in ane uthir maner. It is writtin be our anciant historiographouris, that Gathelus, ane richt illuster and vailyeant knight, descending be lang progressioun and linage of the blud riall of Grece, maryit Scota, douchter to King Pharo of Egipt ; and, thocht mony riche landis fell to him, with gret honouris be singulare manheid, in the realme of Egipt, yit he wes so astonist be mony terrible and grevus plagis appering, be prophecy of Moises, in plane eversioun of the realme and peple of Egipt, that he thought na thing sa gud nor proffitable as to be maist remote and distant thairfra. Gathelus, movit for thir causis, come furth of the mouth of Nile, with his wife, his freindis, and servandis, Grekis and Egip-tianis, throw the seis Mediterrane ; and, finalie, brokin with lang and incredible danger of uncouth chancis, he arrivit in the north part of Spanye : and to conques the more benevolence of his wife, he namit his pepill Scottis, eftir hir name. Thair vulgar langage wes callit Gathelik. Gathelus, eftir his cuming in Spanye, sent ane band of weirmen in Ireland ; quhilkis, be singulare manheid and prudence, dantit so the pepill thairof, that thay gat the hail empire of the said Ile, and rang in it mony yeris eftir, with gret honoure and glore of armis.



## Chap. Third.

*How the Scottis and Pichtis come in Albion. Of thair sindry Linage and Maneris ; and how the said Ile was inhabit be thre sindry Pepill.*



ROTHESAY, ane of the kingis sonnys of Ireland, come, schort yeris eftir, with ane cumpany of young and hardy pepill, in the Ilis of Albion ; and, becaus he fand the samin waist and nocht inhabit as than with ony empire of Britonis, he sat down with his remanent fallowis, wiffis, and barnis, in the said Ilis, and namit thaim Hebreδες, fra the name of Hibernia, or ellis fra the name of Hiber, the first son of Gathelus. This Rothesay come sone eftir, with his freindis out of the said Ilis, in Albion ; and, sa mekil as he gat possessioun of, he callit it Scotland. The day that Scottis come first in Albion, wes fra the beginning of the warld MMMM.DC.XVII yeris. Mony yeris eftir thair cumming in Albion, thay wer callit Re-Albinis, that is to say, Kingis of Albion ; to mak thaim sum thing different fra the remanent kingis that inhabit the said land eftir or afore thair cuming. Forthir, thoucht the Scottis, be thair singulare manheid and prudence, rang continewallie but ony interruption baith in Spanye and Ireland, yit thair name is perist in thai partis ; othir be thair commixtion with uncouth blud, or ellis be roust and lang proces of yeris ; throw quhilk remanis na Scottis in memory, bot thay that inhabitis the last boundis of Albion. Attoure the Spanyeartis, that dwellis yit in the montanis and uthir desertis of Spanye, knawis na thing of the Romane weris ; and ar litill different fra Ireland men, baith in thair maneris, habit, and langage. The Britonis, becaus thay wer mony yeris afore us in Albion, occupyis the south and maist plentuous boundis thair of : and we inhabit the north partis, full of montanis ; quhilk ar nocht sa fertil and commodius as the said landis occupyt be Britonis. Eftir the cuming of Scottis and Britonis on this maner in Albion, ane uncouth peple namit Pichtis, uthirwayis

namit Agathirsanis, quhilkis were banist out of Sarmathia, come in Denmark, quhair thay sone eftir gat schippis, with all provisioun effering thairto; and, eftir thair finall arriving in Albioun, thay sat down in the waist and middil boundis betwix Britonis and Scottis, and maid wid marchis betwix baith thair realmes. The cuming of Pichtis in Albioun wes eftir the cuming of Scottis in the samin, ccc. yeris; yit amang sum authouris risis ane fuliche dout, quhidder the Scottis or Pichtis come first in this regioun. Sum of thir authouris allegis, that Rewther wes the first beginnar of Scottis in Albioun. Bot this opinioun is far different fra the treuth of our historie; for five Scottis kingis rang continewallie, ilk ane succeeding to uthir, afore Rewther; as apperis cleirly in the historie following. And sa this Ile of Albioun wes inhabit, fra the beginning thairof, with thre sindry pepill; that is to say, Britonis, Scottis, and Pichtis. The first part of this Ile, becaus it wes inhabit be Brutus and his posterite, wes namit Britane; the secound and mid part, becaus it wes inhabit be Pichtis, wes namit Penthland; and the remanent boundis thairof wer inhabit be Scottis, and namit Scotland. Yit the Romane historicianis and Ptolome, quhen thay treit ony thing concerning this Ile of Albioun, callit the hail ile, Britane; and all the peple thairof, Britonis. Thir thre peple, namit all under ane name Albanis, inhabit the said Ile; yit the Romanis, in all partis quhare thay come within this Ile, namit the peple thairof with sindry names: for thay namit the men of Walis, Tegenianis, fra Tegenia; the men of Angus, Horrestianis, fra Horrestia; the men of Cauder and Callender wod, Calidonianis, fra Calidonia; the men of Galloway, Brigandis, fra Brigantia; as apperis be Cornelius Tacitus, quhilke writis, that beyond the Britonis dwellis in Allbion, to the gret north, two peple richt different fra uthir in maneris and nature; that ane, for thair yallo hair, callit Pichtis, descending of Albanis; and this uthir, for thair blak and curland hair, callit Scottis, na thing different fra Spanyeartis in nature and conditionis. This Ile, in our dayis, is inhabit allanerly be two peple, Inglismen and Scottis; the south partis ar inhabit be Inglismen, and the north part be Scottis. Now have we schawin the causis quhy the Britonis wer callit with that name, and the maner of thair cumming in Albioun; and we sall schaw, in

the end of this cosmographie, with quhat peple the realme of Britane hes bene inhabit continewallie, unto the time of King Hary the VIII., regnand now with gret felicite abone Inglismen.

### Chap. Fourth.

*The Boundis of Albioun ; with the sindry Commoditeis thairof in generall. Of the gret infirmiteis that fallis to the Peple thairof, for thair intemperance ; and of the Religion usit be thaim in auld times.*



THE Ile of Albioun contenis, in the hail circumference and compas circular, MM milis ; havand in lenth DCC milis, and in breid CCCL miles ; as apperis weill be the fute thairof fornence the Franche seis. And fra the fute thairof it procedis ay the more small, quhill it come to the uter marchis and last boundis baith of England and Scotland : for betwix the Mule of Galloway, fornence the Ireland seis, to Sanct Ebbis Heid, fornence the Alhane seis, ar skars CLX milis in breid ; and fra thens it gaderis ay mair small, quhill it be cumin to the last boundis thairof, quhare it hes skarslie xxx milis in breid. It is ane richt profitable Ile ; full of peple ; and nocht onlie richt plentuous of store and bestiall, bot of all kind of cornis in every boundis thairof, saiffing allanerlie thay boundis quhair God, of his singulare gudnes, hes ordanit maist riche minis of gold, silver, tinne, bras, copper, and quicksilver, with sic fouth and abundance of metallis, that the samin ar nocht onlie sufficient for all maner of necessaris to the peple of the said Ile, bot ar sufficient to all uthir oure nichtbouris that dwellis about us, gif our peple had perfite craft and industrie to win the samin. Bot the superflew abundance of all uthir thingis necessar to the use of man, quhilk nature hes productit in oure regioun, makis the peple the les industrius and crafty, deliting ay mair in sleuth than ony exercitioun ; for beside the gret fouth of gers, cornis, and bestiall in our landis, beside the gret abundance of fowlis in the air, sa gret plente is of fische in all partis of our seis, specially towart the

north, that the samin is sufficient ineuch to nuris all our peple, howbeit thair wer na frutis growand on oure land; as apperis be experience: for all landis that lyis about us, as France, Flanderis, Zeland, Holland, and mekill of Almany, cumis with sindry flotis, sekand fische yeirlye in our seis; and nocht allanerlie, be thair prudent industry, winnis fische sufficient to sustene thaimself, bot, be generall marchandice of thir fische, thay sustene the peple of all uthir cuntreis; passand, in the time of Lentroun, throw the seis Mediterrane, ay selland thair fische, to thair gret proffet and winning. Mony uthir riche and precius thingis ar to be gottin in the said Ile, haldin in gret delit to the eist peple of the warld. Quhat may be said of our wol? quhilk is sa quhit and small, that the samin is desirit be all peple, and coft with gret price, speciallie with marchandis quhair it is best knawin. Of this woll is maid the fine skarlettis, with mony uthir granit and deligat clathis. Heirfore I dar baldlie affirme, gif the Albanis had sic grace that thay nicht leif with concord amang thaimself, or gif thair realmes, be ony honest way, nicht cum under the empire and senyorie of anc king; thay nicht nocht allanerlie haif all necessaris within thaimself, uncoft; bot, with small difficultie, nicht dant all nichtbouris and cuntreis liand thaim about, quhen ony externe or uncouth weris hapnit to invaid thaim. Thay have sa elegant stature, sa fair and lusty bodyis, that na uthir peple may be preferrit to thaim. Thay ar richt ingenius and abill, als well to letteris as uthir virtewis and corporall exercitioun of the handis; richt hardy and reddy to all jeoperdyis baith in weir and peace, in sic maner that na thing may be difficill to thaim, gif thay leiffit temperatlie. Thairfore the provident Beginnar of the warld hes nocht but gret resoun maid thair region nakit and bair of winis; knowing, be his eterne wisdom, that winis, howbeit the samin ar richt necessar to all uthir peple, ar richt skaithfull to the nature of Albanis: for thay ar gevin to sic unnaturall voracite and desire of uncouth metis and drinkis, that thay can nocht refrene thaimself fra immoderat excesse, as apperis weill be experience; for, throw thair crapulus and schamfull glutone, thay ar strikin oftymes with sa dangerus and irremediable infirmitis, that howbeit thow wer accompanit with thaim all thair tender age, thow sall find thaim, throw thair intemperance and surfet diet, sa fowsumlie growin in thair mid or latter age, that



thay sall appeir als uncouth to thy sicht as thow had nevir knawin thaim in thair tender age; quhairthrow thay sal appeir erar misfas-sonit monstouris than ony naturall peple. Sindry of thaim, throw surfet diet, growis furius in thair latter age, with mony sorowfull maledéis following thaim; for, as the proverbe sayis, sendill ar men of gret gluttonie sene have lang dayis, or agit with proces of yeris, becaus thair excessive and intemperat diet consumis al the substantiall humouris of thair bodyis. Bot we wil return to our purpos. The Albanis, as writis Cesar, in his Commentaris, and Cornelius Tacitus, wer richt religious, eftir the rite that wes in thay dayis; for in thay dayis wer the preistis of Britane, namit Driades, richt expert baith in naturall and morall philosophie. Be thair doctrine, come the first sculis of thair sect and opinion in France. The principall sect of thir preistis wes in the Ile of Man, quhilk wes in that time the spectacle and fontane of all honest eruditoun and letteris; and, fra thir preistis wer anis profest in Catholik faith, thay perseverit with gret constance in it, but ony spot of herise.

### Chap. Fifth.

*The Discriptioun of Est, West, and Middill Bordouris of Scotland;  
with the maist notable Townis and Fludis thairof.*



HE Pichtis had sum time the principall and maist plenteus boundis of al the landis that ar now under the empire of Scottis; eftir that thay had rongin in the samin, M.CLI yeris, under ane blude, amite, and freindschip with Scottis; concurrand with thaim equalie in every danger and jeopardy of battall aganis the Romanis and Britonis; and sum times fecht and aganis the Scottis, thair awin confiderat freindis, be unprudence of young and suspect personis: quhil at last, be outragius and exorbitant haitrent, rais sic slauchter and murdir on all sidis, that thay wer brocht to uter rewine, and dounge out of Albion, be the weris of



Scottis. And thocht the Scottis hes bene oftymes brokin with maist terrible and dangerus weris of mony sharp ennimes, yit, be divine benevolence, thay fluris hail unto thir dayis, and hes dantit al thair ennimes. Thir commodites, quhilkis ar now schawin generalie of Albion, ar patent, with mony uthir singulare prerogativis, speciallie amang the Scottis in the Hieland: for the peple thair of hes na repair with marchandis of uncouth realmes; and, becaus thay ar nocht corruppit, nor mingit with uncouth blude, thay ar the more strang and rude, and may suffir mair hungir, walking, and distres, than ony uthir peple of Albion; maist hardy at jeoperdyis; richt agill and deliver of bodyis; richt ingenius to every new inventioun; maist sichty in craft of chevalrie; and kepis thair faith and promes with maist severite and constance. Scotland hes the Mers, quhilk wes sum time the maist plenteus regioun of Pichtis, for thair marche, fornenche the Almane seis. This regioun, sa lang as it wes inhabit be Pichtis, wes namit Deere; and, eftir the expulsioun of Pichtis, it wes namit the Mers, that is to say, the marchis; for the Scottis, eftir the expulsioun of Pichtis, ekit thair marchis to Tweid, quhilk devides Northumbirland fra the Mers. On the tothir side, sindry small burnis discendis fra the hillis of Cheviot, and uthir montanis liand thair about, deviding Cumbir fra Annandail, and fallis in the watter of Sulway. This watter of Sulway rinnis in the Ireland seis, and is the marche of Scotland, fornenche the west bourdouris. The hillis of Cheviot, fra quhilk springis mony small burnis on ilk side, makis the middil marche of Scotland. The Mers hes sindry marchis at sindry partis quhair it is extendit. Sum time it hes the Almane seis; sum time, Eist Louthiane; sum time, Tweid; and sum time, Forth, for the marchis. Amang mony strang castellis in the Mers is the town and castell of Berwik, sum time namit Ordolutium, and the inhabitantis thair of namit Ordoluce. Tweid first springis fra ane small fontane, and, be agmentation of uthir watteris that fallis in it, it discendis with braid stremes in the Almane seis. Beyond Tweid, to the middill marche under Cheviot, lyis Tevidale, that is to say, the vale of Tyf. Beyond it lyis Esdail, the vale of Esk; for Esk rinnis throw the middis thair of. Fornens Esdail, on the tothir side, lyis Eusdail, namit fra the watter of Eus, and fallis in the watter of Annand: bot Tyf and Esk fallis in Tweid. On the

tothir side, fornence the Ireland seis, lyis Annandail, fra the watter of Annand. It marchis sum times with the out boundis of Nidis-dail, quhair all thir thre rivers forsaid, Eus, Annand, and Sulway, discendis togidder, under ane streme, in the Ireland seis. In Annandail is ane loch namit Lochmaben, five milis of lenth, and foure of breid, full of uncouth fische. Beside this loch is ane castell, under the same name, maid to dant the incursion of thevis. For nocht allanerlie in Annandail, bot in all the dalis afore rehersit, ar mony strang and wekit thevis, invading the cuntre with perpetuall thift, reif, and slauchter, quhen thay se ony trublus time. Thir thevis, becaus thay have Inglismen thair perpetuall ennimes, liand dry marche apoun thair nixt bordour, invadis Ingland with continewal weris, or ellis with quiet thift; and leiffis ay ane pure and miserabill life. In the time of peace, thay ar so accustomit with thift that thay can nocht desist, bot invadis the cuntre, (howbeit thay ar ay miserialie put down,) with ithand heirschippis. Mony riche and plentuous boundis of Scotland lyis waist, for feir of thair invasion. Nocht far fra Sulway ar mony sinkand sandis, sa perilus, that na peple may transport thaim self throw the samin, but gret difficulte and danger of thair livis. This vale of Annand wes sum time namit Ordovitia, and the pepill namit Ordovices; quhais cruelteis wes sa gret, that thay abhorrit nocht to eit the flesche of yoldin prisoneris. The wivis usit to slay thair husbandis, quhen thay wer found cowartis, or discomfist be thair ennimes; to gif occasioun to otheris to be more bald and hardy quhen danger occurrit: Quhill at last thay wer finalie distroyit be the weris of Romanis. On the west borduris, to the gret north, lyis Nidis-dail, namit fra the water of Nith. It beginnis with ane narow and strait hals, and inccessis mair braid, quhair it lyis to the middil marchis of Scotland. In Nidis-dail is the toun of Dunfreis, quhair mony small and deligat quhitis ar maid, haldin in gret dainte to marchandis of uncouth realmes.

## Chap. Sixth.

*The Discription of Galloway, Kyle, Carrik, and Cunninghame; with the notabill Townis, Lochis, and Revers in the samin.*



**A**BONE Nidisdaill is Galloway, namit sum time, Brigantia, and the peple thair of namit Brigandis. This region is devidit be the watter of Cre in two partis: the part that lyis nerest to Nidisdaill, is callit Nethir Galloway; the tothir part, that lyis abone Cre, is callit Uvir Galloway. In Nethir Galloway is Kirkcoubrie, ane riche toun, full of marchandice. In Uver Galloway is the abbay of Quhittern, dedicat to the haly bischop Sanct Niniane; quhair his blissit body restis in gret veneratioun of peple. Abone Quhittern is the toun of Wigtoun; and nocht far fra it, is the loch of Myrtoun. The half of this loch fresis be natnall congelatioun, as utheris lochis dois; the tothir half fresis nevir. In Galloway ar two uthir lochis, Salset and Newtramen, of sik like lenth and breid as Loch Myrtoun. Galloway rinnis, with ane gret snout of craggis, be lang passage, in the Ireland seis. This snout is callit be the peple, the Mulis Nuk; and, be the cruikin of it in the seis, it makis two gret lochis, namit be the pepil, Loch Reane, and Lowis. Sum of thir lochis ar xxx, and sum xvi, milis of lenth. Thay ar baith ful of ostreis, hering, congir ellis, mussillis, and coklis, with mony uthir fische. Sum men haldis, that Brigance wes the samin regioun of England that is now callit Walis, quhair the Britonis leiffit mony yers eftir that thay wer doung out of Britane: bot this opinion is vane; for the Romane auctouris sayis, the Ile of Man lyis fornence Brigance, and is mid passage betwix it and Ireland, as yit apperis be experience. And howbeit the brayis, be alluvioun and flux of seis, ar worne, and mair distant fra uthir than thay wer afore, yit the samin latitude and elevatioun of the pole that Ptolome assignis to Brigance, correspondis weil to the elevatioun of the pole abone Galloway, quhilk is distant and severit be lang jurnay fra Walis; for the Ile of Man lyis thre hundreth milis fra Walis, in the

sicht of Galloway. Attoure, be testimoniall of sindry auctouris, we say, that out of Brigance, the toun of Spanye quhilk is now namit Compostella, come ane new cumpany of peple in Ireland, and wer namit Spanycartis; and out of Ireland come ane gret cumpany of the same pepill, with King Fergus, in Albioun; and, in remembrance of the ciete of Brigance, quhilk wes sum time be thaim inhabit in Spanye, thai war all callit Brigandis. To this opinion applaudis Cornelius Tacitus, saying, the Brigandis wer descendit of the Spanycartis, and dwellis in the remot and last boundis of Britane; for he callis Britane the hail Ile of Albioun. Thir regionis afore hersit, that is to say, Annandail, Nidisdail, and Galloway, nocht allanerlie aboundis in fine woll and store of bestiall, bot ar richt profitable in all maner of cornis, except quhiet. Abone Galloway is Carrik, ane part of Silurie; for Silurie is devidit in thre partis, that is to say, Carrik, Kyle, and Cunninghame. In Carrik wes sum time ane riche ciete under the same name; quhais ruinus wallis schawis the gret magnificence thairof. In this cuntre ar mony strang castellis, richt strenthly baith be nature and craft of men. In this region ar mony fair ky and oxin, of quhilk the flesche is richt delicious and tender; the talloun of thair wambis is sa sappy, that it fresis nevir, bot flowis ay, be nature of the self, in maner of oulie. Beyond Carrik is Kyle, namit fra Coyll, King of Britonis, quhilk wes slane in the said region. In Kyle is ane stane, nocht xii milis fra the toun of Air, xxx fut of hicht, and thre ellis of breid, callit be the peple the Deif Stane; for quhen ane man is at the fut of it, he may nothir heir quhat is said nor done on the tothir side, howbeit ane cannon wer schot at it; nochtheles, ay the more he standis a dreich fra it, he heris ay the better. Nixt Kyle is Cunninghame, the thrid part of Silurie; quhais peple wer maist noisum to Romanis. In Kyle is ane loch namit Doune, fra quhilk discendis the watter under the same name, and rinnis in the Ireland seis. In Cunninghame is ane loch namit Garnoth, nocht unlike to Loch Doun, full of fische; and nocht far fra it is the toun of Largis, quhare sum time faucht King Alexander the Thrid, with gret glore of victorie, aganis the Danis.



## Chap. Seventh.

*The Discription of Renfrew, Clyddisdail, Lennox, Lowmond, Argyle, Louchquahair, Lorne, and Kintyre ; with all notabill thingis contenit in the same.*



HE watter of Clyde devides the Lennox, on the north side, fra the barony of Renfrew ; and risis out of the samin montane within the wod of Calidone, fra quhilk risis Annand ; and discendis with lang passage in the Ireland seis. Not far fra the fontanis of Clyde springis the fontanis of Forth, quhilk discendis, with ample and braid boundis, in the Almane seis. On the tothir side, the watter of Clyde, eftir that it hes roun lang towart the north, crukis ay inwart, quhill it come to the montanis of Granyebane ; sine discendis with lang passage to the south, quhill it fall in the Ireland seis. The cuntre, quhair it rinnis, is callit Clyddisdail. Betwix Clyde and Lennox lyis the baronie of Renfrew ; in the quhilk ar twa lochis, namit Quhynsouth and Leboth, sum xx and sum xii milis of lenth, richt plentuous and full of fische. Abone Renfrew, to the Ooceane seis, lyis the Lennox, namit, be Ptolome, Lelgonia ; in quhilk is ane gret loch namit Lochmond, xxiv milis of lenth, and viii milis of breid. Within this loch ar xxx Ilis, weil biggit with kirkis, templis, and housis : and in this loch ar thre notable thingis ; fische swomand but ony fin ; ane richt dangerus and storme wal, but ony wind ; and ane Ile that fletis heir and thair as the wind servis. This loch standis at the fute of the montanis of Granyebene, quhilkis wer sum time the gret marchis betwix the Scottis and Pichtis, and gangis fra Lochlowmond to the mouth of Dee. The Pichtis had na landis beyound the montanis of Granyebene, nor yit liand to the Ireland seis ; for thir boundis wer ay inhabit be Scottis. viii milis fra Lochlowmond is the castell of Dunbritane, namit sum time, Alcleuch ; quhair the watter of Levin fallis in Clyde. Beyound Lochlowmond is Argyle, ane cuntre ful of rochis, craggis, and montanis.



In it ar twa lochis, Lochfine and Lochquho. The land is devidit in thre partis; the land that lyis in middis thair of is callit Knapdail. In Lochfine is mair plente of hering than is in ony seis of Albion. In Lochquho ar mony fische, sik as leiffis on fresch watter. In Argyle ar twa castellis, Glennunquhart and Enconell; and in it ar xii Ilis: bot thay ar mair proffitable in store of bestial, than ony cornis. In Argyle ar mony riche minis, full of metall; bot ye pepill thair of hes na craft nor industry to win the samin. It is said, in this cuntre is ane stane of sic nature, that it kendlis cauld stra, or hardis in fire, quhen it is involvit thairwith. In Argyle ar vii uthir lochis; sum xxx milis in lenth and breid, and sum les. It wes said be Schir Duncane Campbell to us, that out of Garloll, ane loch of Argyle, the yeir of God m.d.x yeris, come ane terrible beist, als mekil as ane grew-hound, futit lik ane ganar, and straik doun gret treis with the dint of hir tail; and slew thre men quhilkis wer at thair hountis with thre straikis of hir tail: and wer not the remanent huntaris clam up in strang aikis, thay had bene all slane in the samin maner. Eftir the slauchter of thir men, scho fled speidlie to the loch. Sindry prudent men belevit gret trubill to follow in Scotland, be appering of this beist; for scho was sene afore, and ay trubil following thair-etter. Marcheand with Argyle lyis Lorn, quhilk wes sum time bot ane part thair of; for it lyis in maner of ane tounge within the Ireland seis, with ane lang hals, lx milis of lenth and breid. This tounge, that rinnis sa far within the seis, wes sum time namit Novantia; bot now is it callit Kintyre, that is to say, the Heid of Lorn. The outmaist part of this tounge is not xvi milis fra Ireland. Sum auctouris sayis, baith Argyle and Kintyre wer namit Novantia; for Ptolome makis na mention of Argyle in his cosmographie. In Lorn growis beir with gret plente. Beyound Lorne is Lochquhabir, quhilk wes sum time ane part of Murrayland. It is full of minis, sic as irne and leid, and richt proffitabill in store of bestiall. In it ar mony woddis, lochis, and rivers, full of salmond and uthir fische, swomand sa plenteuslie, that the samin is tane but ony craft. The principall rivers of Lochquhabir ar Lochtie and Spanye; howbeit the cause thair of be uncertane. Lochtie risis nocht viii milis fra Lochness, and fallis, under the same name, in the Almane seis. Beside it is ane roche crag, dipband with ane lang hals in the seis, namit Hardnomorth.

In the mouth of Lochtie wes ane riche toun namit Inverlochtie, quhair sum time wes gret change, be repair of uncouth marchandis; quhill at last it wes sa uterlie destroyit be weris of Danis, that it come nevir to the honour and magnificence as it had afore: and quhiddir the samin procedis be sleuth of our pepill, or be invy of limmers, quhilkis may suffir na wallit tounis in this cuntre, it is uncertane. Beyound Lochtie is the castell of Dunstafage, sum time namit Evonium. Beyound Dunstafage is the mouth of the watter of Spanye, quhair it fallis in the Almane seis.

### Chap. Eighth.

*The Discription of Ros, Stranavern, and Murrayland; with the Louchis, Fludis, and Notable Townis thair of.*



BEYOUND the watter of Spanye lyes Ros, sum time namit Lugia; rising with ane strait narow hals, and thaireftir is cassin furth, with mair braid lesuris, valis, and montanis; circulit, baith on the ta syde and the tothir, with the oceane. This cuntre, quhair it lyes maist approchand to the Ireland seis, hes richt difficill passage, and ganis mair for store of bestiall than ony habitatioun of man. It is best manurit for nence the Almane seis: richt plentuus baith of gers and corn; for thir hailsum valis, quhare the rivers descendis, makis the herbis richt delicius and nurisand. In Ros ar sindry lochis, bot Lochbroun is maist. Mony rivers ar in Ros, full of fische. In Ros is Cromarte, ane firth and sicker port to all shippis, to saif thame fra danger of tempest, namit be the peple, the Heil of Schipmen. In Ros is the toun of Thane, quhair the blissit banis of Sanct Dutho restis in gret veneratioun of peple. In ane vale of Ros ar twa housis, round in forme of ane bell; and ar saiffit to our dayis in memory of sum antiquiteis of our eldaris. Merchand with Ros lyes Stranavern, the outmaist boundis of Scotland; of quhilk the se cost lyes north-north-west, and crukis in agane sum time fornens the Almane seis, havand for-

nens it, on the gret north, Cathnes; on the gret eist, Sutherland; on the gret south, Ros; and, on the gret west, the north-nor-west seis. Thre gret craggis lyis on the outmaist side of Stranavern, namit Hoy, Howbroun, and Downisbie; and becaus thir thre rochis schutis far in the see, thay mak twa gret firthis and lochis, severit fra uthir. Merchand with Cathnes lyis Sutherland, ane proffitable cuntre baith for store and cornis. On the yond side of it lyis Murray, sum time namit Vararis. Bot it hes nocht the samin marchis now as it had than; for all the boundis betwix Spay and Nes to the Ireland seis, wer namit Murray: bot now it lyis sum time beyound the watter of Spay and Kissok, quhil it cum to the Ireland seis. Betwix Ros and Murray, the land crukis in with ane gret discens and vale, in quhilk fallis five rivers, Nes, Nardyn, Findorn, Los, and Spay. Spay rinnis with sa feirs and violent streme, that the see tide, quhen it cumis in maist swiftlie, may nocht resist the violent discens and streme of this watter, bot is, with the preis and streme thairof, born down per force to the seis. Nes risis fra ane loch under the same name, nocht viii milis fra the samin loch that Lochtie cumis fra, and rinnis in the Ireland seis. Nothir fresis the water of Lochtie, nor yit the loch that it cumis fra, in ony storme of winter; and, to the greter admiratioun, ony frosin thing that is cassin in it, meltis and resolvis hastelie: it is, thairfore, richt proffitable to al frosin beistis. In the mouth of Nes standis the toun of Innernes; quhare sum time wes gret plente and tak of herying, howbeit thay be now evanist, for offence that is maid aganis sum Sanct. Treuth is, quhen ony avaricius and unhappy men fechtis for the fische that God sendis, be his infinit gudnes, to the sustentatioun of the peple, and diffoulis the see be thair blude; mony yeris eftir, na fische swomis in that place. Beside Lochnes, quhilk is xxiv milis of lenth, and xii of breid, ar mony wild hors; and, amang thame, ar mony martrikis, bevers, quhitredis, and toddis; the furringis and skinnis of thaim ar coft with gret price amang uncouth marchandis. In Murray is nocht allanerlie gret abundance and fouth of quheit, beir, aitis, and siclik cornis, with gret plente of nutis and appillis, bot in it ar gret fouth of fische, and speciallie salmond. In this cuntre is ane uncouth maner of fisching: for the peple makis ane lang mand,

narrow halsit, and wyid mouthit, with mony stobis inouth, maid with sik craft, that the fische thrawis thameself in it, and can nocht get furth agane; and als sone as the see ebbis, the fische ar tane dry in the crelis. In Murray is ane loch namit Spynee, quhair gret plente is of swannis. The cause quhy the swannis multiplyis sa fast in this loch, is throw ane herbe namit Olour, quhilk burgeonis with gret fertilitie in the said loch, and the seid of it is richt nurisand and delicius to swannis. This herbe is sa brudy, that quhair it is anis sawin or plantit, it can nevir be distroyit; as may be provin be experience: for, thought this loch be v. milis lang, and wes sum time, as the memorie of man yit beris, full of salmond and uthir gret fische, yit, fra this herbe began to burgeon in it, the watter is growin sa schauld, that ane man may waid throw the maist partis thair of; and, thairfore, all maner of gret fische is quit evanist out of it. In Murray land is the Kirk of Pette, quhare the banis of Litill Johne remanis, in gret admiratioun of pepill. He hes bene fourtene fut of hicht, with square membrs effering thairto. VI yeris afore the cuming of this werk to licht, we saw his hanche bane, als mekill as the haille bane of ane man; for we schot our arme in the mouth thair of: be quhilk apperis how strang and square pepill grew in our regioun, afore thay wer effeminat with lust and intemperance of mouth. In Murray is the toun of Elgin, nocht far fra the mouth of Spay; in quhilk is the nobill cathedrall kirk of Murray, decorit richelie with the college of Channonis. Sindry riche abbayis ar in Murray: as Killos, of the ordoure of Cestuus; and Pluscardie, of the ordoure Clunacensis.



## Chap. Ninth.

*The Discriptioun of Boene, Anye, Buchquhane, Mar, Mernis, Fiffe, and Angus; with the Lochis, Fludis, Abbayis, Tounis, and uthir notable thingis thairof.*



ARCHEAND with Murray, lyis Boene and Anye; twa plentuous regionis in store of bestiall, liand, with ample and roume boundis, to the seis. Thir regionis ar full of scheip and nolt, for the sindry lesuris and woddis in the samin; and throw the middis thair of rinnis the watter of Dovert. In the mouth of this watter standis the toun of Bamf. Under thir two regionis afore namit, lyis Buchquhane, ane profitable land for scheip; for it passis all cuntreis, liand about it, in riches of quhit and deligat woll. Mony watteris ar in Buchquhane; all full of salmond, except Rattra, in quhilkis ar nane. In Buchquhane is the castell of Slanis, the Constablis hous, of Scotland: beside quhilk is ane mervellus cove; for the watter that droppis in it, growis, within schort time, in maner of ane hard quhit stane; and, wer nocht the cove is oft temit, it wald be fillit sone with stanis. Na rattonis ar sene in this cuntre; and, als sone as thay ar brocht thair, thay de. In Buchquhane growis aitis but ony tilth or seid. Quhen the peple passis with set purpos to scheir thir aitis, thay find nocht but tune hullis; yit quhen thay pas but ony premeditatioun, thay find thir aitis ful and weil ripit. Thir thingis cumis nocht be nature, but erar be illusioun of devillis, to the dissait of blind and supersticius pepill. Under Buchquhane lyis Mar; ane plentuous region in store of bestiall, lx milis in lenth and breid, fra the Almane seis to Badyenoch. In it is the ciete of Abirdene, the bishoppis seit; with generall Universite, flurising in all science; and wes foundit, be the nobill Bischop William Elphinstoun, with ane riche and magnificent college. This ciete lyis betwix two riche rivers, Done and Dee; in quhilkis ar mair fouth of salmond, than in ony part of Albion. Marchand with Mar lyis the Mernis, to the see; ane riche cuntre for store of

bestiall : in it is Dunnothir, the Marschel of Scotlandis hous. In the Mernis is the toun of Fordoun ; quhare the blissit banis of Sanct Paladie restis, in gret veneratioun of peple. On the out-marchis of Mernis rinnis the watter of Esk, uthirwayis namit Northesk ; ane dangerus watter, quhare mony passingeris perisis for falt of ane brig. Bordorand with the Mernis lyis Angus ; quhilk wes sum time ane part of Horrestia, and is dividit with thre rivers, Northesk, Southesk, and Tay. In Angus is ane hie montane, dippard in the Almane seis, callit the Reid Brayis. Tay risis, far beyond the montanis of Granyebene, fra Loch Tay, quhilk is xxiv milis of lenth, and x milis of breid ; and discendis, with gret plente of fische, quhill it cum in the Almane seis, beside Dundee, the toun quhair we wer born ; quhair mony virtewus and lauborius pepill ar in, making of claith. In Angus ar mony uthir gud townis, as Montroys, Brechin, and Forfair ; with sa gret noumer of castellis, that it wer ouir tedius labour to writ thaim all. In Angus ar mony lochis, full of fische : and in it ar mony abbayis ; as Resteneth, of Channons regulare, eftir the ordour of Augustine ; Aberbrothak, and Coupar : the first, of the ordour of Turonen ; and the nixt, of the ordour of Cistuuns. In the vale of Esk is sa quhit and small wol, that it hes na compar in Albioun. Beside Tay is Fiffe, sum time ane part of Octolyne. In it growis all maner of cornis, with als gret plente as dois in ony part of Albioun ; and, quhare na cornis ar, it is richt profitabill in store of bestial. In Fiffe ar won blak stanis, quhilk hes sa intolérable heit, quhen thay ar kendillit, that thay resolve and meltis irne, and ar thairfore richt profitabill for operation of smithis. This kind of blak stanis ar won in na part of Albion, bot allanerlie betwix Tay and Tyne. In Fiffe is maid gret plente of quhit salt. In Fiffe ar mony noble townis ; as Sanct Androis, the archebischopis seit of Scotland, Kirkeawde, Disart, Kingorne, Cowpar, and Dunfermeling ; quhare ane riche abbay is decorit with generall sepulturis of kingis. Mony uthir abbayis ar in Fiffe, dedicat to the Blissit Virgine ; as Culros, Bawmerinoch, Petmoyg, and Pettinweme. In Fiffe ar sindry lochis ; as Loch Torre, Lochlevin. In Lochlevin is ane castell, with mony ilis ; and in ane of thaim is the kirk of Sanct Phillane. Fiffe is devidit fra Louthiane be the reveir of Forth, quhilk rinnis, with ane braid firth, in the Almane seis. This firth



is richt plentuous of coelis, osteris, muschellis, selch, pellok, mer-swine, and quhalis; with gret plente of quhit fische. Amang mony uthir ilis in this firth is the Ile of May, decorit with the blude and martirdome of Sanct Adriane and his fallowis. In the middis of this Ile, springis ane fontane of fresche and purifyit watter outhrow ane roche crag; to the gret admiratioun of peple, considerin it lyis in the middis of the seis. Beside this Ile is ane wondrous crag, risand within the see, with sa narro and strait hals, that na schip nor bait may arrive bot allanerlie at ane part of it. This crag is callit the Bas; unwinnabill be ingine of man. In it ar coves, als proffitable for defence of men, as thay wer biggit be crafty industry. Every thing that is in that crag is ful of admiration and wonder. In it ar incredible noumer of Soland Geis; nocht unlik to thir fowlis, that Plinius callis See Ernis; and ar sene in na part of Albion, bot in this crag and Ailsay. At thair first cumin, quhilk is in the spring of the yeir, thay gadder sa gret noumer of treis and stikkis to big thair nestis, that the samin nicht be sufficient fewell to the keparis of the castell, howbeit thay had na uthir provision; and thocht the keparis tak fra thir fowlis thir stikkis and treis, yit thay tak litil indingnation thair of, bot bringis haistellie agane als mony fra uthir placis quhair thay fle. Thay nuris thair birdis with maist deligat fische; for, thocht thay have ane fische in thair mouth abone the seis, quhair thay fle, yit gif thay se ane uthir bettir, thay lat the first fal, and doukis, with ane fellow stoure, in the see, and bringis haistellie up the fische that thay last saw; and thought this fische be reft fra hir be the keparis of the castell, scho takkis litill indingnation, bot fleis incontinent for ane uthir. Thir keparis, of the castell for-said, takis the young geis fra thaim with litill impediment; thus cumis gret profet yeirlie to the lord of the said castell. Within the bowellis of thir geis, is ane fatnes of singulare medicine; for it helis mony infirmiteis, speciallie sik as cumis be gut and cater disceding in the hanches or lethies of men and wemen. In this crag growis ane richt delicius herbe; and, quhen it is transportit or plantit in ony othir part, it is of litill sapor or gust. In this crag wes sum time ane stane, full of ene and holis, like ane watter spounge, holkit in the middis; of sik nature, that all salt watter that is waschin thair-with, becumis incontinent fresche and delicius to the mouth. We

heir, now, that this stane is in Fast Castell. In ane Ile of Forth, is the abbay of Sanct Colme, of Channons regulare, eftir the ordour of Sanct Augustine. Mony othir Ilis ar in this firth, full of cunningis. Oftimes are sene in this firth uncouth and wounderfull fische, with coulis hinging our thair bedis, like monkis; and signifyis ay mortalite of men and beistis quhare thay ar sene.

### Chap. Tenth.

*The Discriptioun of Louthiane, Striveling, Menteith, Calidone Wod, Bowgewall, Garcoth; with the notable Cieteis, Castellis, and Fludis, thair of.*



IN the south side of Forth lyis Louthiane; callit, with that name, fra Loth, ane of the principall kingis of Pichtis. Louthiane is maist plentuous ground of Scotland. In it ar mony abbayis, castellis, and tounis; as Hadingtoun, Dunbar, North Berwik, Leith: bot Edinburgh passis thaim all, baith in polese, reparation, wisdom, and riches: and abone it is the castell undir the same name, sum time callit The Madin Castell, and yit remanis undir the same name. Nocht two milis fra Edinburgh is ane fontane, dedicat to Sanct Katrine, quhair sternis of oulie springis ithandle with sic aboundance, that, howbeit the samin be gaderit away, it springis incontinent with gret aboundance. This fontane rais throw ane drop of Sanct Katrinis oulie, quhilk wes brocht out of Mont Sinai, fra hir sepulture, to Sanct Margaret, the blissit Quene of Scotland. Als sone as Sanct Margaret saw the oulie spring ithandle, be divine miracle, in the said place, scho gart big ane chapell thair, in the honour of Sanct Katherine. This oulie hes ane singulare virtew aganis all maner of cankir and skawis. Nocht far fra the mouth of Forth is the castel of Dunbar; quhilk, be nature and crafty indустre of man, is the strenthiest hous, this day, of Albion. Dunbar wes sum time the cheif chemis of the Erlis of Marche. Nocht far fra it is ane toun undir the same name, with

ane magnificent and riche college of Channons, foundit and honorably dotat be the said Erlis. On the eist side of Louthiane lyis the Mers; the cuntre quhilk by us is first discrivit. Under the Mers lyis Tevidail; and abone it lyis Twedail. Under Twedail lyis Dryisdail, Waulecpdail, Douglasdail, and Clydisdail. All thir dalis beris the name of that rever that discendis throw thaim. The principall toun of Clydisdail is Glasqu, the archebischoppis seit; quhare ane nobill kirk is dotat richelie in the honour of Sanct Mungow, and biggit with gret magnificence. In Glasqu is ane generall Univer-site, and study of all liberall science. In Clydisdail is ane riche mine of gold and asure, won but ony laubour: sum times ar won in it, sindry precious stanis of variant hewis. This goldin mine wes found in the time of King James the Feird; quhilk had so mony singulare virtewis, that he had decorit his realme with infinite riches be this mine, gif God had fortunit him to have had dayis. Now, be sleuth and negligence of uncrafty peple, this mine dois small proffet. Fra Glasqu, north, lyis Menteith, and Strivelingschire, marcheand with Argyle and Lennox. In Strivelingschire is the toun of Striveling; and abone it standis the castel under the samin name, sum time namit the Dolorus Montane. At this toun began the gret wod of Calidon. This wod of Calidon ran fra Striveling throw Menteith and Stratherne to Atholl and Lochquhabir; as Ptolome writtis, in his first table. In this wod wes sum time quhit bullis, with crisp and curland mane, like feirs lionis; and, thought thay semit meik and tame in the remanent figure of thair bodyis, thay wer mair wild than ony uthir beistis, and had sic hatrent aganis the societe and cumpany of men, that thay come nevir in the woddis nor lesuris quhair thay fand ony feit or haind thairof; and, mony dayis eftir, thay eit nocht of the herbis that wer twiehit or handillitt be men. Thir bullis wer sa wild, that thay wer nevir tane but slicht and crafty laubour; and sa impacient, that, eftir thair taking, thay deit for importable doloure. Als sone as ony man invadit thir bullis, thay ruschit with so terrible preis on him, that thay dang him to the eird; takand na feir of houndis, scharp lancis, nor uthir maist penitrive wappinnis. It is said, King Robert Bruce, eftir his coronatioun, went to ane hunting in this wod, havand bot ane quiet cumpanie with him, and eschapit narowlie of his lief; for ane of the bullis, ef-

tir that he wes sair woundit be the huntaris, ruschit feirsle on the king, howbeit he had na wapinnis in his hand to debait himself fra the dint thair of: Incontinent, ane man of gret spreit, quhilk wes standing neir by, lap afore the king; and nocht allanerlie kest the bull be manifest force to the erd, bot held him, quhill the remanent huntaris slew him with thair wappinnis. This man, that rescourisit the king, wes callit Turnbull, and wes rewardit with riche landis be the king. And thought thir bullis wer bred in sindry boundis of the Callidon Wod, now, be continewal hunting and lust of insolent men, thay ar distroyit in all partis of Scotland, and nane of thaim left bot allanerlie in Cumarnald. On the eist side of Menteith lyis Strathern; and marchis on the samin side with Fiffe. Out throw the valis of this regioun rinnis the watter of Ern, and fallis in Tay. And, nocht four milis fra the place quhare Ern fallis in Tay, is ane stane of small quantite, howbeit it be of mervellus nature; for thair is nothir preis nor ingine of man that may transport it out of the place quhair it lyis: attoure ane man, and ane hundreth, movis it elik. On the tothir side of Tay, beyound Angus and Gowrie, lyis Stermond; ane plentuus regioun, baith of gers and cornis. Nocht far fra Stermond lyis Athole; in quhilkis ar mony lusty valis, and fludis, ful of fische; and the ground sa riche, that it beris cornis but ony lauboure. In it is ane toun namit Lud; of quhilk the land is sa plentuus, that, gif it be weil manurit, it beris gud beir but ony seid. In Athole ar uthir landis, of mair contrarius nature; the quheir that is sawin in it degeneris, and turnis in ry. Under Buch-quhane and Boene, to the west, lyis Bostgewell, and Gareoth; richt plentuus regionis, baith in gres and cornis. In Gareoth is ane hill namit Doundore, that is to say, the Goldin Montane. The scheip that gangis on this montane ar yallo; thair teeth ar hewit like gold; thair flesche reid, as it wer littit with safron; thair woll is on the same maner. In this regioun is ane carnell of stanis, liand togidder, in maner of ane croun; and ringis, quhen thay ar dounge, as ane bell. Ane temple wes biggit, as sum men belevis, in the said place, quhare mony auld ritis and superstitionis wer maid to evill spretis. Mony uthir regionis ar in Scotland; as Bradalbane, Strabraun, and Bad-yenoth, with sindry uthir small landis and fludis; howbeit thay ar nocht sa notable as thir landis that we have schawin.



## Chap. Eleventh.

*Of the gret plente of Haris, Hartis, and uthir wild Bestiall in Scotland. Of the mervellus nature of sindry Scottis Doggis; and, Of the nature of Salmond.*



ECAUS we have discrivit all regionis of Scotland in speciall, we will schaw sum thing concerning thaim in general. And, first, we say, that in all boundis of Scotland, except thay partis quhair continewall habitatioun of peple makis impediment thairto, is gret plente of haris, hartis, hindis, dayis, rais, wolffis, wild hors, and toddis. Thir wild hors ar not tane but crafty slicht: for, in time of winter, the landwart peple puttis certane tame cursouris and meris amang thir wild hors; and, be thair commixtioun and frequent cumpanie, makis thaim so tame, that thay may be handillit. The wolffis ar richt noisum to the tame bestiall, in all partis of Scotland, except ane part thair of namit Glenmores, in quhilk the tame bestiall gettis litill dammage of wild bestiall, specialie of toddis; for ilk hous of this cuntre, nurisis ane young tod certane dayis, and mengis the flesche thair of, eftir that it be slane, with sic meit as thay gif to thair fowlis, or uthir smal beistis; and sa mony as etis of this meit ar preservit twa monethis eftir fra ony dammage of toddis: for toddis will eit na flesche that gustis of thair awin kind; and, be thair bot ane beist or fowll that hes nocht gustit of this meit, the tod will cheis it out amang ane thousand. In Scotland ar doggis of mervellus nature: for abone the commoun nature and conditioun of doggis, quhilkis ar sene in all partis, ar thre manner of doggis in Scotland, quhilk ar sene in na uthir partis of the world. The first is ane hound, baith wicht, hardy, and swift. Thir houndis ar nocht allanerlie feirs and cruell on all wild beistis, bot on thevis and ennimes to thair maister, on the same maner. The second kind is ane rache, that sekis thair pray, baith of fowlis, beistis, and fische, be sent and smell of thair neis. The thrid kind is na



mair than ony rache; reid hewit, or ellis blak, with small spraingis of spottis; and ar callit be the peple, Sleuthoundis. Thir doggis lies sa mervellus wit, that thay serche thevis, and followis on thaim allanerlie be sent of the guddis that ar tane away; and nocht allanerlie findis the theif, bot invadis him with gret cruele: and, thought the thevis oftymes cors the watter, quhair thay pas, to caus the hound to tine the sent of thaim and the guddis, yit he serchis heir and thair with sic deligence, that, be his fut, he findis baith the trace of the theif and the guddis. The mervellus nature of thir houndis wil have na faith with uncouth peple; howbeit the samin ar richt frequent and rife on the bordouris of Ingland and Scotland: attour it is statute, be the lawis of the Bordouris, he that denyis entres to the sleuthound, in time of chace and serching of guddis, sal be haldin participant with the crime and thift committit. Of fowlis, sic as leiffis of reif, ar sindry kindis in Scotland; as ernis, falconis, goishalkis, sparhalkis, marlyonis, and sik like fowlis. Of watter fowlis is sa gret noumer, that it is wonder to heir. Mony uthir fowlis ar in Scotland, quhilkis ar sene in na uthir partis of the warld; as capercailye, ane foul mair than ane ravin, quhilk leiffis allanerlie of barkis of treis. In Scotland ar mony mure cokis and hennis, quhilk etis nocht bot seid, or croppis of hadder. Sic like ar gret noumer of blak cokis and hennis, nocht unlike to ane fasiane, baith in quantite and sapoure of thair flesche; bot thay have blak fedderis and reid ee-breis. And beside thir thre uncouth kind of fowlis, is ane uthir kind of fowlis in the Mers, mair uncouth, namit gustardis, als mekle as ane swan; bot in the colour of thair fedderis, and gust of thair flesche, thay ar litil different fra ane pertrik. Thir last fowlis ar not frequent, bot in few noumer; and sa far haitis the company of man, that gif thay find thair eggis aindit or twichit be men, thay leif thaim, and layis eggis in ane othir place. Thay lay thair eggis in the bair erd. All othir kind of fowlis ar in Scotland, on the same maner as thay ar in ony othir realmes. Of fische is mair plente in Scotland, speciallie of salmond, than is in ony uthir partis of the warld. And, becaus the procreation and nature of salmond is uncouth and strange, we have inserit the maner thair of in this buke. Thir salmond, in the time of hervist, cumis up throw the smal wateris, speciallie quhare the watter is maist schauld and loun, and

spawnis, with thair wamis plet to uthir. The hie fische spawnis his meltis, and the scho fische hir rounis, and incontinent coveris thaim ouir with sand in the reveir; and, eftir thair spawning, thay grow sa lene and small, that na thing apperis on thaim bot skin and bane; and hes sa warsche gust, that thay ar unprofitable to eit. Sum men sayis, all othir salmond that metis thaim eftir thair spawning growis lene on the same maner as thay ar; for sindry of thaim ar found lene on the ta side, and fat on the tothir. Forthir, of thir rounis and meltis, quhilkis ar hid, as said is, under the sandis, growis, at the spring of the nixt yeir, small tender fische, na gretar than ane mannis thoume; and, gif thay be handillit, thay melt away like ane blob of watter. Always, at the first streme of watter that risis, thay discend to the see; and, within xx dayis eftir, thay grow in mervellus quantite, and, with maist fervent desire and appetite, returnis to the samin placis quhair thay wer generit. Forthir, becaus mony of the watteris of Scotland ar full of linnis, als sone as thir salmond cumis to the lin, thay leip; and sa mony as ar wicht, or lepis weil, thay get up throw the lin, and returnis to the place quhair thay wer bred, and abidis thair quhil the season cum of thair generatioun. Utheris, quhilkis lepis nocht cleirly ouir the lin, brekis thaimself be thair fall, and growis mesall. Utheris ar keppit in cawdrounis; for the landwart peple settis oftymes cawdrounis, playand with hait watter, at the cheik of the lin. Thus, quhen the salmond is faillis thair loup, thay fall callour in the said caldrounis, and ar than maist delitiuous to the mouth. It is defendit be our lawis, ta sla ony salmond fra the viii day of September, to the xv day of Novembre. Na man knawis quhair on thir fische leiffis; for na thing is found in thair wambe, quhen thay ar oppinnit, bot ane thik grosse humour.

## Chap. Twelfth.

*Of the sindry kindis of Mussillis and Cocles in Scotland. Of the Perlis that ar gottin in thame. Of sindry uncouth and strange Fische. Of the nature of Hadder.*



Ow we will schaw the nature of mussillis and coclis, of quhilkis mony kindis ar amang us. Sum ar small, with the meit thairof richt delicius to the mouth: utheris ar mair, nocht unlike, in forme and quantite, to the samin mussillis that hes the purple; and, howbeit thay have na thing thairof, thay ar yit richt delicius to the mouth: utheris ar lang and greter, callit Hors Mussillis, and ar gottin in sindry reveris, specialie in De and Done; and in thir mussillis ar generit the perlis. Thir mussillis, airlie in the morning, quhen the lift is cleir and temperat, opnis thair mouthis a litill abone the watter, and maist gredelie swellis the dew of the hevin; and, eftir the mesure and quantite of the dew that thay swellie, thay consave and breidis the perle. Thir mussillis ar sa doyn gleg of twiche and hering, that howbeit the voce be nevir so small that is maid on the bra beside thaim, or the stane be nevir sa small that is cassin in the watter, thay douk haistelie at anis, and gangis to the ground, knowing weill in quhat estimatioun and price the frute of thair wambe is to al peple. Als sone as the fischaris findis thir mussillis, thay thirst thaim fast togidder. The maner of thair taking followis: First, four or five personis passis in the rever togidder, and standis in maner of ane round cirkill within the watter to thair schulderis. Ilk ane of thaim hes ane staffe in thair hand, that thay sall nocht slide; and sine thay luke and viseis throwe the cleir and purifyit watter, quhill thay se the mussillis; and, becaus thay may nocht tak thaim up with thair handis, thay cleik thaim up with thair tayis, and slingis thaim to the nixt brayis. The perlis that ar gottin in Scotland ar nocht of littill valoure; for thay have ane cleir schinand quhitnes, round and licht; and sum times ar als mekle as the naill of ane mannis fingar: of quhilkis we have

had part. It wes schawin to us, be thaim that come fra Sanct James, that thair is siclike mussillis in Spanye; bot thay have na perle, for thay leif in salt watter. In all the see-costis of Scotland ar coclis and mussillis on the same maner; thought tha be mair proffitable to the mouth, than ony procreatioun of perlis. Mony uncouth forme and figuris of fische ar in Scotland: sum of thaim armit with schellis; sum with hard skalis; and sum of thaim ar round as ane ball, bakkit like ane hurcheon, havand bot ane conduct baith to purge thair wambe and ressave thair meit. To schaw every kind of fische that is in Scotland, it wer bot ane faschious and vane lauboure; for the samin ar knawin to al cuntreis. Of al othir kindis of fische is sa gret plente throw all partis of our seis, that, howbeit infinit noumer of thaim wer tane away on the ta day, na thing thairof sal be mist on the morow. Attoure ane thing is, that cumis not but singulare providence of God; for ay the mair derth and penurite of vittallis is in Scotland, the fische swoumis with the more abundance and plente. Attoure in all the desertis and muris of this realme growis ane herbe, namit hadder, but ony seid, richt nutritive baith to beistis and fowlis; specialie to beis. This herbe, in the moneth of July, hes ane floure of purpure hew, als sweit as huny. The Pichtis maid of this herbe, sum time, ane richt delicius and hailsum drink. Nochtheless, the maner of the making of it is perist, be exterminioun of the said Pichtis out of Scotland; for thay schew nevir the craft of the making of this drink bot to thair awin blud. Attoure thair is na part of Scotland sa unproffitable, bot it producis othir irne, or ellis sum othir proffitable kind of metal; as may be notabilly provin throw all the Ilis of Scotland.



## Chap. Thirteenth.

*The Discription of the Ilis of Scotland; and of the maist notabill thingis thair of.*



EN we ar now falling in commoning of the Ilis, we will discribe the same, in maner and forme as followis. Fornens Scotland, to the Ireland seis, lyis XLIII Ilis; of quhilkis sum ar xxx milis lang, utheris xii milis, utheris mair, and utheris les. Thir Ilis wer callit be sum auctouris, Ebonie; and be utheris ar callit Hebrede. The principall Ile is the Ile of Man, quhilk lyis fornens Galloway, and wes sum time the principall seit of the preistis namit Driades; as Cornelius Tacitus, Cesar, in his Commentaris, and mony othir Romane auctouris testifyis. North fra the Ile of Man lyis Arrane, uthirwayis namit Botha. This secound name wes gevin to it be Sanct Brandane; for he biggit sum time ane hous in it, namit Both. Fra Arrane lyis Helaw, and Rothesay, namit fra the first Scot that brocht the Scottis out of Ireland in Albioun. Nocht far fra thir Ilis is Ailsay; quhair sielik plente of soland geis is, as we schew afore in the Bas. Fra Ailsay lyis mony uthir Ilis, devidit and severit be thair awin names, full of minis; sik as irne, tin, leid, and uthir metallis: Yit the maist notable Ile of Scotland is Ila, quhilk lyis, beyound the toung of Lorne, in the sicht of Lochquhabir; ane riche cuntre, xxx milis of lenth, richt plentuus of corne, and full of metallis, gif thair wer ony crafte and industrius peple to win the samin. Nocht far fra Ila lyis Cumbra, and Mula, als mekill as Ila, baith in lenth and breid. In this Ile of Mula is ane cleir fontane, two milis fra the see: fra this fontane discendis ane litil burne, or strip, rinnand ful of rounis to the seis. Thir rounis ar round and quhit, schinand like perle, full of thik humour; and, within two houris eftir that thay come to see, thay grow in gret cocles. Schort gait fra thir Ilis is Iona, othirwayis namit Colmekill; in quhilk is ane abbay, full of devot religiis men. This abbay wes the commoun sepulture of all Scottis kingis,



fra the time of King Fergus the Secound, to the time of King Malcolm Canmore, quhilk biggit the abbay of Dunfermling; quhair the maist part of our kingis lyis, sen the fundatioun thair of. Pass-and forthwart to the north-nor-west seis, fornens Ros, is ane Ile namit Lewis, LX milis of lenth. In this Ile is bot ane reveir. It is said, gif ony woman waid throw this watter at the spring of the yeir, thair sall na salmond be sene for that yeir in the said watter: otherways, it sall abound in gret plente. Beyond the Lewis lyis two Ilis, namit Sky and Rona. In this last Ile is incredible noumer of selch, pellok, and meirswine, na thing astonist for the sicht of men. The last and outmaist Ile is namit Hirtha; quhare the elevatioun of the pole is LXIII greis. And, sen the elevatioun of the pole abone the Ile of Man is LVII greis, ilk gre extending to LXII milis and ane half in distance, as Ptolome and uthir astronomeris nowmeris, I conclude, that fra the Ile of Man, the first Ile of Albion, to Hirtha, the last Ile thair of, ar CCCLXXVII milis. This last Ile is namit Hirtha, quhilk, in Irsche, is callit ane scheip; for in this Ile is gret nowmer of scheip, ilk ane gretar than ony gait buk, with hornis lang and thikkar than ony horne of ane bewgill, and hes lang talis hingand down to the erd. This Ile is circuitit on every side with roche craggis; and na baitis may land at it bot allanerly at ane place, in quhilk is ane strait and narow entres. Sum time thair micht na pepill pas to this Ile but extreme dangeir of thair livis; and yit thair is na passage to it bot quhen the seis ar cawme but ony tempest. In the moneth of Juny, ane preist cumis out of the Lewis in ane bait to this Ile, and ministeris the sacrament of baptisme to all the barnis that hes bene borne in the yeir afore. Als sone as this preist hes done his office, with certane messis, he ressavis the tindis of all thair commoditeis, and returnis hame the same gait he come. In the Ile of Lewis ar two kirkis; ane dedicat to Sanct Peter, and the tother dedicat to Sanct Clement. The fame is, als sone as the fire gangis furth in this Ile, the man that is haldin of maist clene and innocent life layis ane wosp of stra on the alter; and, when the pepill are gevin maist devotly to thair praers, the wosp kindellis in ane bleis. Beyond thir Ilis is yit ane uthir Ile, bot it is not inhabit with ony pepill. In it ar certane beistis, nocht far different fra the figure of schiep, sa wild that thay can nocht be tane but girnis: the hair of

thaim is lang and tattie, nothir like the woll of scheip nor gait. Betwix thir Ilis is oftymes richt dangerus passage: for the see, be contrarius stremes, makis collision; sum times yettand out the tid, and sum times swelleand and soukand it in agane, with sa forey violence, that quhen the schippis ar saland throw thir dangerus veilis, oftymes thay ar othir drownit, or ellis brokin on craggis. The gretest vele heiroy is namit Corbrek; for it will othir sink, or ellis draw ane schip to it, howbeit it be distant thairfra ane mile.

### Chap. Fourteenth.

*Of the nature of Claik Geis, and of the sindry maner of thair procreation; and, Of the Ile of Thule.*



ESTIS now to speik of the geis generit of the see, namit Clakis. Sum men belevis, that thir clakis growis on treis be the nebbis; bot thair opinioun is vane. And, becaus the nature and procreatioun of thir clakis is strange, we have maid na litill lauboure and deligence to serche the treuth and verite thairof. We have salit throw the seis quhare thir clakis ar bred; and findis, be gret experience, that the nature of the seis is mair relevant caus of thair procreatioun than ony uthir thing. And howbeit thir geis ar bred mony sindry wayis, thay ar bred ay allanerly be nature of the seis: for all treis that ar cassin in the seis, be proces of time apperis first worme-etin, and in the small boris and hollis thairof growis small wormis: first, thay schaw thair heid and feit, and last of all thay schaw thair plumis and wingis; finally, quhen thay ar cumin to the just mesure and quantite of geis, thay fle in the aire as othir fowlis dois: as was notably provin, in the yeir of God m.cccc.xc, in sicht of mony pepill, beside the castell of Petslego. Ane gret tre was brocht, be alluvion and flux of the see, to land. This wonderfull tre was brocht to the Lard of the ground, quhilk sone efter gart devide it be ane saw. Apperit than ane multitude of wormis thraving thaim self out of sindry hollis and boris of this tre.

Sum of thaim war rude, as thay war bot new schapin ; sum had baith heid, feit, and wingis, bot thay had na fedderis ; sum of thaim war perfit schapin fowlis. At last the pepill, havand ilk day this tre in mair admiration, brocht it to the kirk of Sanct Androis, beside the town of Tyre, quhare it remanis yit to our dayis. And, within two yeris efter, hapnit sic ane lik tre to cum in the firth of Tay, beside Dundee, worme-etin and hollit, full of young geis in the samin maner. Siclike, in the port of Leith, beside Edinburgh, within few yeris efter, hapnit sic ane like cais. Ane schip, namit the Cristofir, efter that scho had lyin III yeris at ane ankir in ane of thir Ilis, wes brocht to Leith ; and becaus hir timmer, as apperit, failyeit, scho was brokin down : incontinent apperit, as afore, al the inwart partis of hir worme-etin, and all the hollis thairof full of geis, on the samin maner as we have schawin. Attoure, gif ony man wald allege, be vane argument, that this Cristofir was maid of sic treis as grew allanerly in the Ilis, and that all the rutis and treis that growis in the said Ilis, ar of that nature to be finaly, be nature of the seis, resolvit in geis ; we preif the cuntre thairof be ane notable example, schawin afore our ene. Maister Alexander Galloway, Person of Kinkell, was with us in thir Ilis, gevand his mind, with maist ernist besines, to serche the verite of thir obscure and misty dows ; and, be adventure, liftet up ane see-tangle, hingand full of mussill schellis fra the rute to the branchis. Sone efter, he opnit ane of thir mussill schellis : bot than he was mair astonist than afore ; for he saw na fische in it, bot ane perfit schapin foule, smal and gret ay effering to the quantite of the schell. This Clerk, knawin us richt desirus of sic uncouth thingis, come haistely with the said tangle, and opnit it to us, with all circumstance afore rehersit. Be thir, and mony othir reasonis and examplis, we can not beleif that thir clakis ar producit be ony nature of treis or rutis thairof, bot allanerly be the nature of the oceane see, quhilk is the caus and production of mony wonderful thingis. And becaus the rude and ignorant pepil saw oftymes the frutis that fel of the treis, quhilkis stude neir the see, convertit within schort time in geis, thay belevit that thir geis grew apoun the treis, hingand be thair nebbis, siclik as appillis and uthir frutis hingis be thair stalkis. Bot thair opinioun is nocht to be sustenit ; for, als sone

as thir appillis or frutis fallis of the tre in the see flude, thay grow first worme-etin, and, be schort proces of time, ar alterat in geis.

Now we have schawin sufficientlie ineuch of the Ilis of Scotland, gif we had schawin ane thing; that is to say, nocht allanerlie wes the Ile of Thule, with all the remanent Ilis of Scotland sene by us, bot als wer sene be mony Romane auctouris: for Cornelius Tacitus sayis, the Romane navy, quhilk wes send about the Ilis be command of Julius Agricola, saw this Ile of Thule, with the remanent Ilis liand thairabout. And thought Ptolome writtis, that the Ile of Thule lyes among the Ilis of Scotland, yit his writing, be provin experience, may have na faith: for Thule is mony milis distant fra Schetland; for Schetland lyes beyound Orkney, approechand to Noroway. Sum auctouris sayis, that Thule is the samin Ile that we call Island: for thir auctouris sayis, that Thule is the last Ile of the oceane see; and sa is Island; quhilk lyes in the cauld and frosty seis beyound the cirkill artik to the north pole. The peple of Island, becaus na cornis growis in it, leiffis allanerlie of fische. Thay bray dry fische als small as meil, and baikis thaim with watter at the fire, and usis it in maner of breid.

### Chap. Fifteenth.

*The Discriptioun of Orkney, Schetland, with sindry uthir small Ilis; and of the maneris and conditionis of the Peple thairof.*



**B**EYOUND all the Ilis of Scotland lyes Orkney; sum part to the north-nor-west seis, and sum part to the Almane seis. The principall Ile of Orkney is Pomonia, the bishoppis seit, in quhilk ar two strong castellis. In Orkney growis na quheit; and it is nakit of wod: all othir cornis growis in it with gret plente. Orkney hes na vennomus beistis, more than Ireland; na beist, ennime to the nature of man, may leif in Orkney. And sen we ar now fallin in speking of Ireland, howbeit it pertenis na thing to the purpos we tuke on hand, we will schaw ane wonder thairof, quhilk passis all wonderis that evir we red



afore in ony othir bukis. In Ireland is ane loch, and about the samin, be mony milis, growis nothir herbe nor tre. And, gif ony tre be affixit and set down in this loch, within the space of ane yeir eftir, this tre alteris: for sa mekle of it as is hid within the erd, turnis in ane hard stane; it that is hid in the watter, turnis in irne; and sa mekle as is abone the watter, kepis the nature of the tre: and so the tre, stane, and irne, ar junit togidder under ane stok. Bot we will returne to Orknay, to schaw litill les wonderis of it. And, first, howbeit the pepill be gevin to excessive drinkin, and, be plente of beir, makis the starkest ail of Albioun, yit nane of thaim ar sene wod, daft, or drunken: als thay come hail and feir in thair bodyis to extreme age, but ony use of medcinary, with strang and fair bodyis. The yowis of this cuntre hes ay two lammis, or ellis thre, at anis; and of wild foull and tame, is mair fouth in Orknay than in ony part of Albioun. Thair hors ar litill mair than asinis; bot thay may indure mair labour than eny othir hors. To speik of fische, thair is mair aboundance thair of than ony uncouth peple may be-leif. In Orknay is ane gret fische, mair than ony hors, of mervellus and incredible sleip. This fische, quhen scho beginnis to sleip, fesnis hir teith fast on ane crag abone the watter. Als sone as the marineris findis hir on sleip, thay cum with ane stark cabill in ane boit; and, eftir that thay have borit ane gret hole throw hir tale, thay fesne hir be the samin. Als sone as this fische is awalknit, scho makis hir to leip with gret force in the see; and, fra scho find himself fast, scho writhis hir out of hir awin skin, and deis. Of the fatnes that scho hes, is maid oulie in gret quantite; and of hir skin, becaus it induris lang, is maid strong cabellis. Ane hundreth milis beyound Orknay lyis Schetland; of quhilk the riches standis onlie in fische, dryit be son. Mony hidis and skinnis of oxin, scheip, gait, and martrikis, dryit with the sonne, cumis out of this cuntre in Scotland; and, on the same maner, the marchandis of Holland, Zeland, and Almanie, cumis yeirlye to Schetland, to interchange uthir marchandyis with the peple thair of; quhilkis ar of the same nature and conditionis as the peple is of Orknay. Beyound Schetland ar mony Ilis, quhilkis leiffis on the same maner as it dois. And, thought the peple of thir Islis be pure, yit thay leif langer, and ar better content of thair livis, than thay that hes mair welth and riches of the world.



Na contentioun is amang thaim for singulare proffet. Ilk man providis for sa mekle fische, in the simer, as may sustene his hous agane the winter. Thir peple ar nakit of all ambitioun and vice, and nevir trublit with uncouth weris. Amang all pleseiris, quhilkis ar josit be mankind, thay think na thing sa gud, as to leif in concord and peace, havand ane quiet life but ony uthir displeseir. This perfection of life cumis to thaim onlie throw thair simplicitie; and followis, be the samin, the futsteppis of Crist. Ilk yeir, anis cumis to thaim ane preist out of Orknay, and ministris to thaim the sacrament of baptisme; and, eftir that he haif done his devore, he resavis his teindis justlie, and returnis, the samin gait he come, to Orknay. Forthir, gif ony giftis of nature may be noumerit amang wardly guddis, I say thir Ilis hes may feliceis and guddis than ony uthir cuntreis: for the peple thairof ar fair, lusty, and strong of body; dotat with mony giftis of nature; and hes gud heill of body, quhilk may be preferrit to all riches, as weil knawis thir men that hes experience of lang infirmiteis. Forthir, gif the peple be maist riche, that standis sa content with thair awin guddis, that thay covet na utheris, I say thir peple ar als happy as ony uthir peple of the world. Forthir, gif ony man wald say thir thingis that I writ ar vane, considrin I wes nevir in thir Ilis; I say, I wes weil informit of thame be ane noble man, Edward, sum time Bischop of Orknay: for to this Bischop come ane man out of thir Ilis, and nocht allanerlie schew thir thingis, with all circumstance afore rehersit, bot als verifit thaim be himself; for he passit the commoun stature of men, and sa wicht, that na man durst contend nor wersle with him; and he wes fairer of visage and hide, than wes ony lady of the world. Be thir reasonis apperis, that the auctorite of thay auctouris is na worth, that sayis, all peple far fra the sonne ar barbour and miserable; for thair is na happiar creaturis in the world than thir peple of thir landis forsaide. Amang the rochis and craggis of thir Ilis growis ane maner of electuar and goun, hewit like gold, and sa attractive of nature, that it drawis stra, flox, or hemmis of claithis to it, on the samin maner as dois ane adamont stane. This goume is generat of see froith, quhilk is cassin up be continewal repercussion of craggis aganis the see wallis; and, throw ithand motioun of the see, it growis als teuch as glew, ay mair and mair; quhill, at last, it

fallis doun of the crag in the see. It is said, be thaim that hes experience thairof, that this goun, quhen it lyes on the crag, is like ane froith and blob of watter; becaus it is nocht than sufficientlie wrocht be motioun of the see. Oftimes the see tangle is found involvit with this goume; becaus it is dounge heir and thair sa mony wayis be alluvion of watter, and, sa lang as it fletis, it is sone involvit with ony thing that it metis. Twa yeir afore the cumin of this buke to licht, arrivit ane gret lomp of this goun in Buchquhane, als mekle as ane hors; and wes brocht hame be the hirdis, quhilkis wer kepaned thair beistis, to thair housis, and cassin in the fire. And, becaus thay fand ane smelland odour thairwith, thay schew to thair maister, that it wes ganand for the sens that is maid in the kirkis. Thair maister wes ane rud man as thay wer; and tuke bot ane litill part thairof, and left the remanent behind him, as mater of litill effect. All the partis of this goun, quhen it wes brokin, wes of the hew of gold, and schane like the licht of ane candill. The maist part of this goun and electuare wes distroyit be rud peple, afore it come to ony wise mannis eris; of quhome may be verifiyit the proverb, *The sow curis na balme*. Als sone as I wes advertist thairof, I maid sic diligence, that ane part of it wes brocht to me at Abirdene. Thir ar the maist notable thingis that we culd find concerning the Ilis of Albion, Orknay, and Schetland.

Thus, it wer neidfull to put ane end to our Cosmographie, wer nocht ane uncouth and wouderfull historie taris a litill our pen. Maister James Ogilby, with uthir noble men, wes send as ambassatouris fra the maist noble prince King James the Feird to the King of France; and, be tempest of see, thay wer constrainit to land in Norroway, quhare thay saw, nocht far fra thaim, mony wild men, nakit and roch, on the same maner as thay ar paintit: and, at last, thay gat advertising be landwart peple, that thay wer doun beistis, under the figure of men. In time of nicht, thay usit to cum in gret cumpanyis to landwart villagis; and, quhair thay find na doggis, thay brek up durris, and slayis al the peple that thay find thairintill. Als sone as thay heir the nois of doggis, thay evanis, and dar nocht abide. Thay ar of sa huge strenth, that sum times thay pull up treis be the rutis, and fechtis thairwith amang thaim self. The ambassatouris wer astonist be thir monstouris, and maid stark waches,

Na contentioun is amang thaim for singulare proffet. Ilk man providis for sa mekle fische, in the simer, as may sustene his hous agane the winter. Thir peple ar nakit of all ambitiou and vice, and nevir trublit with uncouth weris. Amang all pleseris, quhilkis ar josit be mankind, thay think na thing sa gud, as to leif in concord and peace, havand ane quiet life but ony uthir displeseir. This perfection of life cumis to thaim onlie throw thair simplicitie; and followis, be the samin, the futsteppis of Crist. Ilk yeir, anis cumis to thaim ane preist out of Orknay, and ministris to thaim the sacrament of baptisme; and, eftir that he haif done his devore, he resavis his teindis justlie, and returnis, the samin gait he come, to Orknay. Forthir, gif ony giftis of nature may be noumerit amang wardly guddis, I say thir Ilis hes may feliceis and guddis than ony uthir cuntreis: for the peple thair of ar fair, lusty, and strong of body; dotat with mony giftis of nature; and hes gud heill of body, quhilk may be preferrit to all riches, as weil knawis thir men that hes experience of lang infirmiteis. Forthir, gif the peple be maist riche, that standis sa content with thair awin guddis, that thay covet na utheris, I say thir peple ar als happy as ony uthir peple of the world. Forthir, gif ony man wald say thir thingis that I writ ar vane, considrin I wes nevir in thir Ilis; I say, I wes weil informit of thame be ane noble man, Edward, sum time Bischop of Orknay: for to this Bischop come ane man out of thir Ilis, and nocht allanerlie schew thir thingis, with all circumstance afore rehersit, bot als verifiit thaim be himself; for he passit the commoun stature of men, and sa wicht, that na man durst contend nor wersle with him; and he wes fairer of visage and hide, than wes ony lady of the world. Be thir reasonis apperis, that the auctorite of thay auctouris is na worth, that sayis, all peple far fra the sonne ar barbour and miserable; for thair is na happiar creaturis in the world than thir peple of thir landis forsaide. Amang the rochis and craggis of thir Ilis growis ane maner of electuar and goun, hewit like gold, and sa attractive of nature, that it drawis stra, flox, or hemmis of claithis to it, on the samin maner as dois ane adamont stane. This goume is generat of see froith, quhilk is cassin up be continewal repercussion of craggis aganis the see wallis; and, throw ithand motioun of the see, it growis als teuch as glew, ay mair and mair; quhill, at last, it

fallis doun of the crag in the see. It is said, be thaim that hes experience thairof, that this goun, quhen it lyis on the crag, is like ane froith and blob of watter; becaus it is nocht than sufficientlie wrocht be motioun of the see. Oftimes the see tangle is found involvit with this goume; becaus it is dounge heir and thair sa mony wayis be alluvion of watter, and, sa lang as it fletis, it is sone involvit with ony thing that it metis. Twa yeir afore the cumin of this buke to licht, arrivit ane gret lomp of this goun in Buchquhane, als mekle as ane hors; and wes brocht hame be the hirdis, quhilkis wer kepaned thair beistis, to thair housis, and cassin in the fire. And, becaus thay fand ane smelland odour thairwith, thay schew to thair maister, that it wes ganand for the sens that is maid in the kirkis. Thair maister wes ane rud man as thay wer; and tuke bot ane litill part thairof, and left the remanent behind him, as mater of litill effect. All the partis of this goun, quhen it wes brokin, wes of the hew of gold, and schane like the licht of ane candill. The maist part of this goun and electuare wes distroyit be rud peple, afore it come to ony wise mannis eris; of quhome may be verifiyt the proverb, *The sow curis na balme*. Als sone as I wes advertist thairof, I maid sic diligence, that ane part of it wes brocht to me at Abirdene. Thir ar the maist notable thingis that we culd find concerning the Ilis of Albioun, Orknay, and Schetland.

Thus, it wer neidfull to put ane end to our Cosmographie, wer nocht ane uncouth and wouderfull historie taris a litill our pen. Maister James Ogilby, with uthir noble men, wes send as ambassatouris fra the maist noble prince King James the Feird to the King of France; and, be tempest of see, thay wer constranit to land in Norroway, quhare thay saw, nocht far fra thaim, mony wild men, nakit and roch, on the same maner as thay ar paintit: and, at last, thay gat advertising be landwart peple, that thay wer doun beistis, under the figure of men. In time of nicht, thay usit to cum in gret companyis to landwart villagis; and, quhair thay find na doggis, thay brek up durris, and slayis al the peple that thay find thairintill. Als sone as thay heir the nois of doggis, thay evanis, and dar nocht abide. Thay ar of sa huge strenth, that sum times thay pull up treis be the rutis, and fechtis thairwith amang thaim self. The ambassatouris wer astonist be thir monstouris, and maid stark waches,



with gret fris birnand all nicht ; and, on the morow, thay pullit up salis, and departit. Forthir, thir Norroway men schew to the said ambassatouris, that thair wes nocht far fra thaim ane peple that swomit all the simer like fische in the sec, leiffand ay on fische ; and in the winter, becaus the watter is cald, thay leif of wild beistis that discendis fra the montanis ; and sum time bringis thir bestis hame to thair covis.

And sa endis heir the Cosmographie and Discription of Scotland.

---

*Ane prudent doctrine maid be the Auctoure, concerning baith the new Maneris and the auld of Scottis.*



BECAUS sindry nobill men hes desirit me to schaw the auld maneris of Scottis, quhilkis ar skatterit in sindry partis of this Buke, under ane compendius treit, that it may be knawin, how far we, in thir present dayis, ar different fra the maneris and leiffing of our auld faderis : and thought I knaw na thing bettar, bot the schawing thair of will draw me in hatrent of sindry gret personagis ; for few ar, that may suffir thair vices to be taxit, or thaimself to be reprevit ; yit, becaus I stand sum part under the reverence of thir nobill men forsaid, I have condiscendit, as I may, to thair desiris. For thay allege, it will be profitable to the rederis ; speciallie to sik men, that ar nocht gevin our immoderatlie to thair awin affectioun, nor yit our mekill sopit in sensuall pleseir ; for sik men may be reducit fra thair errouris. And, thairfore, I intend, first, to schaw, quhat maneris hes bene amang our eldaris, baith in time of weir and peace ; and be quhat ingine, wisdom, and chevelrie, thay have debatit aganis sa mony strong ennimes, howbeit thair ennimes come oftines in this realme with maist dangerus incursionis : and, finalie, we will schaw, how the notable strenth, vigour, and soverane virtew, failyeit ay the mair amang thaim, that thay declinit fra the temperance of thair eldaris :



quhill, at last, it is cumin to thir dayis, in quhilkis we leif in gret tranquillite; howbeit the samin is mair be benevolence and sleuth of our nichtbouris, than ony manlie prowis of our self. Now will I schaw, the schortest way I may, how we, in thir present dayis, ar drownit in all maner of avarice and lust. Yit I belief, that sic men as ar of severe life, following the temperance of thair eldaris, sall reiose to heir the honourable maneris of thair eldaris; utheris, that ar of mair brutall and vicius life, seing thair vices taxit with sic dishonour, sall dres thaim plesandlie to revert, fra thair evil and schamefull dedis, to better life. First, I suppone, that the thing that I say, in repreving the corruppit maneris of the warld now present, be nocht takin in repreif of every man; bot allanerlie to sik men that leiffis with intemperance: for sik men deservis mair repreif than I may gif thaim, at this time. And gif ony man findis his bile opnit for purgatioun be me, that he hide nocht his infirmite, bot erar seik the best rameid he may, to amend his life.

Our eldaris, howbeit thay wer richt virtewis baith in weir and peace, wer maist exercit with temperance; for it is the fontane of all virtew. Thay wer of temperat sleip, meit, and drink, and sic refectionis as wer preparit with litill laubour or cost. Thair breid wes maid of sic stuf as grew maist esalie on the ground. Thair vitallis wer nocht siftit, as we do now, to mak thaim delicius to the mouth; bot wer all ground togidder under ane forme. The flesche maist frequent amang thame, wes othir wild flesche, won on the fellis be thair hunting, quhilk maid thaim of incredible strenth; or ellis it wes of thair awin tame bestial, specially beif, as we do yit in our dayis: howbeit we ar richt far different fra the use and custome of all uthir nationis. The steirkis, quhen thay ar bot young velis, ar othir slane, or ellis libbit to be oxin, to manure the land; bot the quiokis war nevir slane quhill thay wer with calfe, for than thay ar fattest, and maist delicius to the mouth. The common meit of our eldaris was fische; nocht for the plente of it, bot erar becaus thair landis lay oftymes waist, throw continewal exertion of chevelry, and for that caus thay leiffit maist of fische. Thay disjunit airy in the morning with smal refection, and sustenit thair liffis thairwith quhil the time of sowper; throw quhilk thair stomok was nevir surfetly chargit, to empesche thaim of uthir besines. At the sowper thay

war mair large ; howbeit thay had bot ane cours. Quhen thay kest thaimself to be mery, thay usit maist aqua vite ; nocht maid of cost-ly spicis, bot of sic naturall herbis as grew in thair awin yardis. The common drink that thay usit was aill ; and, in time of weir, quhen thay lay in thair tentis, thay usit nocht bot watter. Ilk man had als mekill mele as micht suffice him for the day, and maid breid thairof at the fire ; on the samin maner as the Romanis did, specialy Antonius Caratallus, Empriour. Thay had sendill flesche in thair campis, bot gif it war won be pray of ennimes. Thay eit, for common, flesche half raw ; for the saup is maist nurisand in that maner. Attoure, thay had ay with thaim ane gret vessell, wrocht full of butter, cheis, mele, milk, and vinacre, temperit togidder ; be quhilk thay saiffit thair liffis mony dayis fra extreme hungar, soukand the jus and humouris thairof, quhen na vittallis, throw incursionis of ennimes, micht be found. And, howbeit thay had peace with thair ennimes, thay sufferit nocht thair bodyis to be corruppit with sleuth ; bot wer exercit othir in continewall hunting ; for in that game was gret honour amang our eldaris ; or ellis thay had exercition of rinn- ing, sum times fra the planes to the montanis, and fra the mon- tanis to the planis ; or ellis thay war exercit in wirsling, or uthir corporall exercition. Thay had thair hedis ay cowit, as the Span- yeartis usis ; but ony bonet or cover, les than thay war trublit with infirmitie. Nane of thame, throw ithand cowing of thair hedis, grew beld. Thay yeid commonly bairfutit ; and, gif thay had ony schone, thay dippit thaim first in the watter or thay put thaim on, specialy in winter quhen maist schill and persand stormes apperit, that thair sollis, quhilkis war hardin with the hetis of the semer and snawis of winter, suld be the mair abil to sustene laubour. Thair abulyement was not maid be motion of insolence, bot erar efter the general gise of the cuntre. Thair hois war maid of smal lint or woll, and yeid nevir above thair kne, to make thaim the mair waldin and sowpill. The mantillis that thay usit in winter wes maid of gros woll ; and in semer wes maid of small and finest woll that thay micht get. Thay slepit on benkis, or bonchis of stra, bot ony cover ; and lernit thair sonniss, fra thair first yeris, to eschew eis, and to sleip on the samin maner. Ilk moder wes nurice to her awin barne. It was ane sus- pition of adultre aganis ony woman, quhare hir milk failyeit. The

wemen thocht thair barnis war not tender nor kindly to thaim, bot gif thay war nurist als weill with the milk of thair breist, as thay war nurist afore with the blude of thair wambe. Attoure, thay held that thair barnis war degenerat fra thair nature and kind, gif thay war nurist with uncouth milk. Thay war sa accustomit with ithand pine and laubouris, that thay curit nothir the fervent heites of the semer, nor yit the schil frostis in the winter. Thay travelit maist on thair fute; and, in the time of weir, thay had thair cariagis and vittallis turst with thaim on thair hors: and, quhen dangeir occurrit, thay refusit na maner of besines nor laubour that nicht pertene to forsy campionis. Gif it hapnit thaim, be mischance, to be vincust, thay fled with sic spede to the montanis, that na horsmen nicht ouirtak thaim. The injure done to ony ane of thaim, was repute sa common to thaim al, that thay wald nevir evoid the displeseir thairof out of thair hertis, quhill the samin war recompanisit with the blude of thair ennimes. He that wes maist noble, desirit erest to fecht in the wangard, quhare his vassalage and manheid nicht be maist knawin. The nobillis and commonis contendit quhay suld be maist faithful to othir; and quhen the capitane, throw his fers spreit and hardines, apperit in ony extreme dangeir of ennimes, all the band that was of his opinion, ruschit sa fersly to his defence, that othir thay deliverit him out of that present dangeir, or ellis all at anis lois thair lives with him. The sepulturis of all nobillis war decorit with als mony hie stanis, rising about the same, as he had slane afore of ennimes in his life. He that was found in the army but flint and furisine, or but his swerd beltit fast to his sidis, was schamefully scurgit; and he that sald his swerd, or laid it to wed, was degradit of auctorite, and banist, as unworthy creature, out of thair cumpany. He that fled in time of battall, or departit fra the army without command of the capitane, was slane, but ony dowme, quhare evir he nicht be apprehendit; bot his gudis war gevin to his sonne. The wemen war of litil les vassalage and strenth than was the men; for al rank madinnis and wiffis, gif thay war nocht with child, yeid als weill to battall as the men. Als sone as the army was passand forthwart, thay slew the first levand beist that thay fand; aud nocht allanerly baithit thair swerdis with the blude thairof, bot taistit the

samin with thair mouth, with na les religion and faith, than thay had bene than sicker of sum felicite following. Gif thay saw thair awin blude in battall, thay grew nocht astonist; bot, boldin in maist brime fury, set thaim to revenge the samin. In all battallis assaileit be thaim, thay socht nevir victory be treason, falsset, nor slicht; and thocht ay degrading to thair nobilite, to vincus thair ennimes with ony othir thing bot force of fechting. Thay held it for gret febilnes to revenge ony displeseir, hatrent, or slauchter, be treason; attour, sencerite and simpilnes was equally honorit amang thaim all. Quhen thay war to pas on thair ennimes, ilk man yeid, as we do now, apon his awin cost, except sa mony as war wagit. He that was trublit with the falling evil, or fallin daft or wod, or havand sic infirmite as succedis be heritage fra the fader to the son, was geldit; that his infeckit blude suld spreid na forthir. The wemen that was fallin lipper, or had ony othir infection of blude, was banist fra the cumpany of men; and, gif scho consavit barne under sic infirmite, baith scho and hir barne war buryit quik. All dronkattis, glutonis, and consumers of vittallis, mair than was necessar to the sustentation of men, were tane, and first commandit to swelly thair fouth of quhat drink thay plesit, and incontinent thairefter was drownit in ane fresche rever. Forthir, howbeit thay had na administratioun of justice in time of weir, yit sic justice was ministerd in time of peace, that oftimes thay war our severe in thair punishment; for thay knew weil, fra thair pepil wer drawin fra battall to peace, thay suld be gevin to sa mony enormiteis, that the samin nicht nocht be dantit but gret punishment. For the pepill war of sic nature, als sone as thay knew thaimself guilty of ony offence committit aganis the kingis majeste or commounweill, thay set thaim to rais divisioun amang the gret princis of the realme: nochtheles, quhen thay ar tretit with soft and moderat empire, thay ar found richt humane and meke pepil, richt obeysand to reason; and nocht allanerly kepis thair faith efter the reason of thair contract, bot gevis ane gowpin, or ellis sum thingis mair abone the just mesure that thay sell. This consuetude is sa straitly kepit, that gif the samin be nocht done, the biar will nocht stand to the contract of merchandice. Thay usit the ritis and maneris of Egyptianis, fra quhome thay tuk thair first beginning. In all thair secret besines, thay usit not to writ with common letteris



usit amang othir pepill, bot erar with sifars and figuris of beistis maid in maner of letteris; sic as thair epithafis, and superscriptioun abone thair sepulturis, schawis: nochtheles, this crafty maner of writing, be quhat sleuth I can not say, is perist; and yit thay have certane letteris propir amang thaimself, quhilkis war sum time vulgar and commoun. Forthir, thay that spekis with the auld tounge of that cuntre, hes thair asperatioun, thair diptongis, and thair pronounciation, better than ony othir pepill. The commonis ar nocht exercit thairwith; bot allanerly thay that dwellis in the hie partis of the land: and, becaus thir men hes thair langage mair eloquent and propir than the commonis hes, thay ar callit poetis; and makis poetis, effering to thair cruditoun and science, with mony gret cerimonyis. Beside mony craftis and science, quhilkis thay have translatit in thair awin tounge, thay profes maist the science of medinary, and ar richt excellent in it; for thay know the nature of every herbe that growis in thay cuntreis, and curis all maner of maledyis thairwith. Heirfore I say, thair is na region in the world sa barrant nor unfrutfull, be distance fra the sonne, bot, be providence of God, all maner of necessaryis, to the sustentatioun of man, may be gottin plesandly in it, gif thair war sic pepill that culd laubour it, effering to the nature thair of. Nochtheles, as our eldaris, quhilkis dwelt continewally merchand with the realme of England, lernit the Saxonis tounge, be frequent jeoperdeis and chance of battall, sustenit mony yeris aganis thaim; sa the pepill, now present in Scotland, hes tint baith the langage and maneris of writing usit sum time be our eldaris, and hes now ane new maner of writingis and langage: howbeit, the Hieland hes baith the writingis and langage as thay had afore, mair ingenius than ony othir pepill. How may thair be ane greter ingine, than to make ane bait of ane bull hid, bound with na thing bot wandis? This bait is callit ane currok; with the quhilk thay fische salmond, and sum time passis our gret rivers thairwith; and, quhen thay have done thair fisching, thay beir it to ony place, on thair bak, quhare thay pleis. Bot we wil return to the maneris of our anciant freindis.

Be chance of sindry seasonis, specially about the time of King Malcolme Canmore, al thingis began to change. For quhen oure nichtbouris, the Britonis, war maid effeminat be lang sleuth, and



doung out of Britane be the Saxonis in Walis, we began to have alliance, be proximate of Romanis, with Inglismen; specially efter the exterminium of Pichtis: and, be frequent and daily company of thaim, we began to rute thair langage and superflew maneris in oure breistis; throw quhilk the virtew and temperance of our eldaris began to be of litil estimation amang us. Than we war gevin, efter the arrogance and pride of Inglismen, to vane glore and ambu- tion of honouris, and began that time to seke new names of nobilite; howbeit, afore thay dayis, he was maist nobil, that was decorit mair with virtew than riches, confiding mair in his awin dedis, than in ony dedis of his eldaris. Than began, in Scotland, the maneris of Dukis, Erlis, Lordis, and Baronis; for afore thay dayis, the prin- cipall men of Scotland under the king war callit Thanis, that is to say, Gadderaris of the Kingis malis; and war ay rewardit be the king, as thair faith and virtew deservit. Bot now I beleif nane hes sic eloquence, nor fouth of langage, that can sufficiently declare, how far we, in thir present dayis, ar different fra the virtew and tem- perance of our eldaris. For quhare our eldaris had sobriete, we have ebriete and dronkinnes; quhare thay had plente with sufficence, we have immoderat cursis with superfluite; as he war maist noble and honest, that culd devore and swelly maist: and, be extreme de- lligence, serchis sa mony deligat coursis, that thay provoke the sto- mok to ressave mair than it may sufficiently degest; throw quhilk we ingorge and fillis our self, day and nicht, sa full of metis and drinkis, that we can nocht abstene, quhill our wambe be sa swon, that it is unabil to ony virtewis occupation. And nocht allanerly may surfet dennar and sowper suffice us, abone the temperance of oure eldaris, bot als to continew our schamefull and immoderit vo- racite with duple dennaris and sowparis; throw quhilk mony of us ganis to na othir besines bot to fil and teme our wembe. Attour to continew this schamefull intemperancé, abone the necessar sustenta- tion of nature, we geif us to sic unhappy laubour, that na fische in the see, nor foule in the aire, nor best in the wod, may have rest; bot socht heir and thair, to satisfy the hungry appetit of gluttonis. Nocht allanerly ar winis socht in France, bot in Spainye, Italy, and Grece; and, sum time, baith Aphrik and Asia socht, for new deli- cius metis and winis, to the samin effect. Thus is the warld sa uter-

ly socht, that all maner of droggis and electuaris, that may nuris the lust and insolence of pepill, ar brocht in Scotland, with maist sump-tuus price, to na les dammage than perdition of the pepill thair of: for, throw this immoderat glutony, our wit and reason ar sa blindit within the presoun of the body, that it may have no knowlage of hevinly thingis; for the body is involvit with sic clowdis of fatnes, that, howbeit it be of gud complexioun be nature, it is sa opprest with superflew metis and drinkis, that it may nothir weild, nor yit ouir the self; bot, confessand the self vincust, gevis place to all infirmiteis, quhill it be miserably distroyit: as apperis be sindry experience. For mony of our pepill, in remot and in maist cauld region, ar strikin oftymes with maist vehement fever, thair inwart bowellis blesand as thay war in ane ithand fire; quhilkis cumis of sic spicery and uncouth droggis, brocht out of remot cuntreis in this regioun. Utheris of thaim ar sa swollin, and growin full of humouris, that thay ar strikin haistely deid in the poplesy; and, howbeit thay recover for ane schort time efter, thay ar bot ane deid pepill; levand, and buryit in sepulture, havand bot ane schadow of life. The young pepill and barnis, following thir unhappy customis of thair faderis, gevis thameself to lust and insolence, havand all virtuus occupation and craftis in contemptioun; and, becaus thay ar lang customit and hantit thairwith, quhen time occuris of weir to defend the cuntre, thay ar sa effeminat and soft, thay pas on hors as hevvy martis; and ar sa fat and growin, that thay may do na thing in compare of the soverane manheid of thair eldaris. Als sone as thay ar returnit hame, becaus thair guddis ar not sufficient to nuris thame in voluptuus life and pleseir of thair wambe, thay ar gevin to all maner of avarice; and othir castis thame to be strang and maistrifull thevis, or ellis sawaris of dissention amang the nobillis.

Thir, and mony othir enormiteis following thaim, procedis originally fra the fontane of voluptuus leving and intemperance. Nocht-theles, wald we refrene us thairfra, I wait thair is na region under the sonne mair halsum, nor les subdewit to pestilence; nor yit mair commodius and nurisand of the life of man. Yit I am nocht sa disparit, bot traistis, within schort time, that all corruppit maneris of our pepill sal be reparit to ane better fassoun: for nocht allanerly, in sindry partis of this realme, remanis yit the futsteppis of mony

auld virtewis usit sum time amang our eldaris, bot als risis every day new fervent devotioun, to the ornament of Cristin faith. Ane thing I will say, under reverence of uthir realnes; thair was never pepill mair sicker in the Cristin faith, nor yit mair constant in thair faithful promis, than the Scottis hes bene, ay sen thair first beginning; and, thairfore, I say ane thing finally, nocht allanerly for thair loving, bot als in exhortation of thair perseverance: In sa far as our pepill, presently levand in this region, passis thair eldaris in sumptuous and riatus abulyement, in sa far thay ar mair eligant and honest in thair housis and letteris, and mair magnificent than afore in ornament of thair kirkis and templs. Thus want thay na maner of virtew that thair eldaris had, except the temperance of thair bodyis: to quhilk mot bring thame haistely the blissit Lord! Amen.

*Followis, Ane Compendius Recapitulation of all Kingis of Britane; sen the first beginning thair of, to the time of King Henry the VIII.*



HE history of Scotland is sa implicat with the history of England, that it is difficill to knaw. And becaus the crown of England hes bene josit with sindry pepill, be sindry chances and variance oftymes, I thoct expedient, for commodite and plescir of rederis, to nowmer thair genology first fra Brutus; be quhom the Britonis war brocht out of Grece in this Ile of Albion, fra the beginning of the warld, MMMM.XXXVII yeris; and josit the crown of Britane be the space of M.C.XVI yeris. In quhilk time, thay war invadit cruelly be Julius Cesar; and not only vineust, bot thair realm maid tributar, in forme of province. And howbeit thir Britonis had kingis lang time namit of the Britonis blud, yit thair realme was governit ay be Romanis, to the yeir of God, cccc.xxxvi yeris: and in that season thay war subdewit to Scottis and Pichtis; and nocht allanerly maid tributaris to thaim xxx yeris, bot gaif ouir mekill of thair landis to the empire of Scottis and Pichtis: as Paulus Diaconus, Beda, Sabellicus, and mony othir recent authouris, schawis at lenth in thair historyis. Nochtheles, thir

Britonis, impatient to sustene the empire of barbar pepill, becaus  
 thay war accustomit afore with Romane pleseris, chesit Constantine,  
 the son of Androenus, Duke of Bertanye, to be king, in hatrent of  
 Scottis and Pichtis. This Constantine come with sic pissance and  
 army in Britane, that he deliverit the Britonis of all servitude, and  
 recoverit thair realme fra our redemption, cccc.lxv yeris. Efter  
 Constantine, rang Constantius, his son; and efter Constantius, rang  
 Vortigern, the space of xxii yeris. In the mene time, the Scottis  
 and Pichtis rais with sic army, that thay almaist subdewit the  
 Britonis agane to servitude. Throw quhilk, Vortigern wes con-  
 stranit to seke support of Saxonis; and, be thair weris, resistit cer-  
 tane yeris, al invasion of Scottis and Pichtis: quhill, at last, he was  
 tane be slicht of Hengist, and brocht to extreme servitude; and ba-  
 nist, with all the Britonis, in Walis. Thus come the remanent  
 boundis of Britane under the empire of Hengist, and called Hen-  
 gist-land, and the pepill thairof Hengistis men; bot now, be cor-  
 ruption of langage, the realme is callit Ingland, and the pepill In-  
 glismen. The Britonis war not onely disparit be this trubil, bot,  
 mony yeris efter, faucht aganis Inglismen be King Arthure, with  
 sindry chancis of fortoun; bot, efter his deith, thay war subdewit  
 agane, and content to be callit Inglismen, under ane name with  
 Saxonis. Fra the deith of King Arthure, quhilk was in the yeir of  
 God D.XLII yeris, to the yeir of God M.xvi yeris, the realme of Ing-  
 land was gidit be Inglismen ay under the empire of ane king: bot  
 sone efter it was devidit in vii sindry kingdomes; and brocht agane  
 to the empire of ane king, under the samin marchis that it hes now.  
 And not lang efter, it was subdewit and conquest be Danis; and  
 v kingis of thair blud, continewally efter othir succeeding: of quhom  
 the last was namit Hardy Canute; quhilk maid mony proude lawis  
 abone Inglismen, and rang with sic tiranny, that the Inglismen fi-  
 naly rebellit, and slew all the Danis within the space of ane nicht.  
 Hardy Canute, invadit on al sidis, slew himself be disperation.  
 The Inglismen, efter his slauchter, creat Edward, the son of King  
 Eldrede, thair king; for this Eldrede rang abone thame afore the  
 cuming of Danis. Nochtheles the Inglismen, efter the slauchter of  
 King Edward, quhilk was ekit, for his haly lif, to the nowmer of  
 Sanctis, dred that the Danis suld cum on thame with new battall,



and thairfore creat Herald thair king; for he was discendit baith of the linnage of Inglismen and Danis. Thus was Edward, nevo to Sanct Edward, and bruthir to Sanct Margaret, the haly Quene of Scotland, disherist of the crown of England. This Herald, gevin to rage and insolence of lust, maryit the douchter of William, Bastard of Normandy, and, within few dayis efter, brocht hir in England. At last, he tuk sic hatrent aganis hir, and hir blud, that he causit hir to be schamfully defowlit with rebaldis and limmaris of his cuntre. William, the Bastard and Duk of Normandy, impatient to sustene this odious offence, come in England with gret army, and deprivit King Herald baith of his life and realme at anis, the yeir of God M.LXVI yeris; efter the first conques made on thame be Danis, L yeris. William, the Bastard and Concreour of England, tuk the crown efter the slauchter of King Herald; and causit the Normanis and Inglismen to increas togidder under ane blud, but ony memory of the name of Danis. The posterite of this William perseveris yit, with gret honour and victory, to thir dayis: regnand abone Inglismen at this time, King Hary the VIII.; quhilk, for his illuster and vailyeant dedis, sal be put in gret renoun and memory be our posterite.



# T A B U L A.

---

*Followis, the Table of the History; contenand the mater of every  
Buke, craftely severit be thaimself.*

---

## VOL. I.

### THE TABLE OF THE FIRST BUKE.

How Gathelus, our first progenitour, left the land of Grece, and  
come in Egypt; and maryit Scota, douchter to King Pharo.  
And of his cuming to Spanye. Chap. I. p. 1.

How Gathelus beildit the Ciete of Brigance, and namit al his pepil  
Scottis. How he send his ii sonnys in Ireland; and of his deceis.  
Chap. II. p. 4.

How Hemecus governit Ireland; and how Symon Brek was maid  
King efter his deith. Chap. III. p. 7.

Of the gret posterite of Scottis regnand in Ireland, efter Simon  
Brek. Of the first cuming of Scottis and Pichtis in Albion; and  
how the Pichtis war alliat with Scottis. Chap. IV. p. 10.

How the Britonis, be thair quent slichtis, dissolvit the band of alli-  
ance betwix Scottis and Pichtis. Of the trubil that fel thairthrow.  
Chap. V. p. 12.

How the Pichtis and Scottis maid thair ordinance to invaid othir  
be battal. How Ferquhard, King of Ireland, send his son, Fer-  
gus, with ane army, in support of Scottis, aganis the Pichtis; and  
how the said Fergus was maid King. Chap. VI. p. 15.

How King Fergus come with gret ordinance aganis the Pichtis.

How the dissait of Britonis was discoverit baith to Scottis and Pichtis. And of the Orisoun maid be Fergus to the King of Pichtis. Chap. VII. p. 17.

Of sindry consultationis maid be Pichtis; and how thay war recounsalit with the Scottis. Chap. VIII. p. 19.

How Coil, King of Britonis, was slane, and his army discomfist be Scottis and Pichtis. Chap. IX. p. 22.

Of King Fergus Orison to his noblis; and how the crown of Scotland was tailieit to him and his successouris.—Chap. X. p. 24.

How King Fergus partit the landis of Scotland amang the noblis of his realme. And of the maneris of brigandis. Chap. XI. p. 26.

How King Fergus maid concord betwix the princis of Ireland; and how he perist returnand be the Ireland Seis. Chap. XII. p. 28.

---

### THE TABLE OF THE SECUND BUKE.

How the Scottis, efter King Fergus deith, contendit for the crown. And how it was inhibit that young childrin sal be Kingis. Chap. I. p. 30.

Of King Ferithais; and of his deith. Chap. II. p. 34.

How Ferlegus was banist for the slauchter of King Ferithais. And of King Maynus. Chap. III. p. 37.

Of King Dorvidilla; and of his constitutionis, maneris, and deith. Chap. IV. p. 38.

Of the tyrane King Nathak; and of his slauchter. Chap. V. p. 40.

How Rewthar, ane young child, was maid King, contrar the lawis. How Ferquhard, Capitane of Lorne, was chasit be Dowall in the Ilis; and of his orison maid to the pepill thair of. Chap. VI. p. 41.

- How Ferquhard and Dowal, recounting othir be plane battal, war baith slane, with al the nobilite of Scottis and Pichtis; the King of Pichtis slane, and the King of Scottis tane. Chap. VII. p. 43.
- How the Scottis and Pichtis war dounge out of Albion be the Britonis. Chap. VIII. p. 44.
- How the Scottis and Pichtis recoverit thair landis, and discomfist Sisill, King of Britonis. And of the residew of King Rewtheris life. Chap. IX. p. 46.
- Of King Rewtha, and his lawis and governance. How Ptolome, King of Egypt, send his oratouris, to se the situation of Scotland. Chap. X. p. 47.
- Of King Thereus; and how he was exilit for his tyranny. How Conane, cheiftane of brigandis, was maid Governour during his proscriptioun. Chap. XI. p. 49.
- Of King Josyne. And of the experience and preching of two philosophouris. Chap. XII. p. 51.
- Of King Fynne, and his lawis. And of the college of clerkis in the Ile of Man. Chap. XIII. p. 53.
- Of King Durstus; and how he was slane for his cruel tyranny. Chap. XIV. p. 55.
- Of gret contention amang the capitanis. Of the orison maid be Charon, Capitane of Argyle. And how Ewin, the first of that name, was maid king. Chap. XV. p. 58.
- How Gillus, bastard son to King Ewin, slew two sonnys and two nepotis of Durstus, to make himself king; and how the thrid nepot, Edeir, eschapit. Chap. XVI. p. 61.
- How King Gillus was banist. How Cadall, cheiftane of Brigandis, was maid Governour, and slew Gillus in Ireland. And how Ewin the Secound was maid king. Chap. XVII. p. 64.
- How Cadal, returnand out of Ireland, lost the maist part of his army be rage of seis; and of the consolation maid to him be King Ewin. Chap. XVIII. p. 66.
- How the Kingis of Scottis and Pichtis war alliat togidder be marriage. How Balus, King of Orkney, slew himself be disperation. Of the wise counsall gevin be King Ewin to Edeir. Chap. XIX. p. 68.

## THE TABLE OF THE THRID BUKE.

- Of King Edeir; and how he revengit the heirschippis maid be the tratour Bredus in the Ilis. Chap. I. p. 71.
- How the Britonis send ambassatouris to King Edeir, for support aganis Julius Cesar. Of thair orison; and of King Ederis answer. And how the said Julius was dounge out of Albion, be support of Scottis. Chap. II. p. 72.
- How Julius returnit in Britane, and maid it tributar to Romane Empire. Chap. III. p. 76.
- Of sindry messagis send be Julius to Scottis and Pichtis; and of thair answer. Of Julius Hoif; and sindry opinionis concerning the first foundaris thairof. Chap. IV. p. 78.
- How the tratour Murket, and his complices, war punist. Of the deith of King Edeir. Of the vicious King Ewin the Thrid; and of his lawis and deith. Chap. V. p. 82.
- Of King Metellane. Of the nativite of Crist, our Salvioire. Of gret fouth of poetis, oratouris, and philosophouris, that flurisit in his time. Chap. VI. p. 84.
- Of King Caratak; and how he dantit sindry conspiratouris of his realme. How the Britonis, rebelland aganis the Romanis, war discomfist; and of thair message send to the Scottis. Chap. VII. p. 86.
- Of Caratakis answer. How the Britonis solistit Normanis and Picardis to rebellion; and how the said Britonis war discomfist be Romanis, and thair king slane. Chap. VIII. p. 89.
- How Claudius, Emprioure, come in Britane, and subdewit Orkenay to his empire. Of Sanct Peteris first cuming in Italy; and of the Assumptioun of the gloriis Virgine Mary. Chap. IX. p. 92.
- How sindry princis of Britane, conspirand aganis Arviragus, war discomfist. How the confiderat kingis come to support thir princis of Britane aganis the Romanis. Chap. X. p. 95.
- Of the message send to Caratak be Plancius, and his answer. Of the deith of Genissa. And how Vespasian was send in Britane, to dant the Britonis. Chap. XI. p. 99.

How the thre kingis of Albioun, movand weir aganis Vespasian, war discomfist. How Vespasian ressavit Arviragus to his mercy, and maid his landis tributar to Romane Empire.

Chap. XII. p. 101.

How Vespasiane wan the town of Camelon, and discomfist Caratak. Of his message send to Caratak; and of Caratakis answer.

Chap. XIII. p. 103.

How Caratak cumand with new army aganis Romanis, was vincust. Of the deith of Plancius; and how Ostorius was send in his place; and dantit the Britonis.

Chap. XIV. p. 106.

How Caratak fechtand, with new army, aganis the Romanis, was discomfist, and maid presoner to Ostorius, be treason of Cartumandia, his stepmoder.

Chap. XV. p. 108.

How Caratak was brocht to Rome, and how he returnit in Scotland. Of uncouth mervellis sene in Albioun; and of sindry nobil clerkis; and of the deith of Caratak.

Chap. XVI. p. 110.

## THE TABLE OF THE FEIRD BUKE.

How Corbrede was maid King of Scottis. How the Pichtis rebellit aganis the Romanis, and slew Ostorius, thair capitane.

Chap. I. p. 113.

How Manlius Valens, capitane of Britane, was discomfist be the Pichtis. How Didius was send in his place. Of the message send be Pichtis to Corbrede, and of his answer.

Chap. II. p. 115.

How Cartumandia, Quene of Scottis, was buryit quick. How the Scottis and Pichtis faucht aganis the Romanis, with uncertane victory, and war constranit to tak peace; and of the deith of Didius.

Chap. III. p. 116.

How Veranius was maid capitane of Britane, and of his deith. How Swetonius, his successoure, put the Ile of Man to sak. How Britonis maid new rebellion on the Romanis; and of sindry prodigies and mervellis sene in Albion.

Chap. IV. p. 119.



Of the complaint maid be Voadā, Quene of Britonis, to Corbrede.  
Of his message send to Cattus. Of Cattus answer. Of sindry  
incursionis maid be Scottis on the Romanis; and of the first  
cuming of the Murrayis in Scotland. Chap. V. p. 122.

Of the orisoun maid be Voadā, Quene of Britonis, to the confiderat  
Kingis; and how scho vincust the Romanis, and finally slew hir-  
self; and of the deith of King Corbrede. Chap. VI. p. 124.

Of sindry nobil clerkis. How Petir and Paule war martirit. How  
Dardannus was maid King of Scottis, and slane for his tyranny.  
Chap. VII. p. 128.

How mony Romane capitanis, for thair febill administration, war  
interchangit in Britane. How Galdus wes maid King of Scottis,  
and how he wes discomfist by Petulius. Chap. VIII. p. 131.

How the noble lady, Vodicia, invadit the Romanis with battall.  
How scho was finally slane, and hir army discomfist.

Chap. IX. p. 135.

How Julius Frontinus was maid capitane of Britane. Of his mes-  
sage to Pichtis, and of thair answer; and how the said Julius in-  
vadit the Scottis with gret injuris. Chap. X. p. 137.

How Julius Agricola was send in Britane. Of his frequent vic-  
toryis maid on Scottis and Pichtis; and how he subdewit sindry  
of thair landis to Romane empire. Chap. XI. p. 139.

How the King of Pichtis send his ambassatouris to Scottis, desiring  
support aganis the Romanis. How Agricola invadit the Scottis,  
baith be see and land. How the King of Pichtis was slane, be  
seditioun of his army. Chap. XII. p. 141.

How Galdus pecifyit al sedition amang the Pichtis; and how he  
faucht aganis the Romanis, and was discomfist.

Chap. XIII. p. 144.

How sindry Almanis and Danis come in support of Scottis and  
Pichtis. How the Romane navy perist in Pentland Firth.

Chap. XIV. p. 145.

How Agricola brocht his army our Tay. How Galdus come in  
defence of the Pichtis, with XL.M Scottis; and of his orison  
maid to exhort his army to battal. Chap. XV. p. 148.

Of the orisoun maid be Agricola to his army ; and of the huge victory falling to Romanis, be discomfitour of Scottis.

Chap. XVI. p. 151.

How Agricola reparit his navy, to pas about the Ilis of Albion, and brint sindry schippis of Danis. Of uncouth mervellis sene in Albion ; and of the deith of Agricola. Chap. XVII. p. 154.

How Tribellius was send in Britane. How the Romanis fell in gret divisoun amang thaimself ; and of the huge victory gottin on thaim be Galdus.

Chap. XVIII. p. 155.

How the Romanis war doun out of all partis of Scotland, and sindry times vincust, be the vailyeant Galdus.

Chap. XIX. p. 157.

Of the message send be Romanis to the confiderat Kingis, and of thair answer. How the confiderat Kingis gaif peace to Romanis.

Chap. XX. p. 160.

How all the strenthis of Scotland war recoverit fra the Romanis, be condition of peace ; and of the deith of Galdus.

Chap. XXI. p. 162.

## THE TABLE OF THE FIFT BUKE.

Of the vicius King, Lugtak ; and how he was slane for his unhappy life and tyranny.

Chap. I. p. 164.

Of King Mogallus ; and how he come with ane army aganis the Romanis. Of his orison maid to the sepulture of Galdus.

Chap. II. p. 166.

How the confiderat kingis come with thair armyis aganis the Romanis. Of the orison maid be Mogallus, and Lucius Antonius, to thair armyis ; and how the Romanis war discomfist.

Chap. III. p. 168.

How Adriane, Empriour, come in Britane ; and biggit ane strang wall, to saif the Britonis and Romanis fra Scottis and Pichtis. How he returnit in France, and left Victorine to be capitane of Britane.

Chap. IV. p. 171.

How Scottis and Pichtis partit the landis beyond the wall of Adriane. How King Mogallus was degenerit, in corruppit life, and slane for his tyranny. Chap. V. p. 173.

Of sindry nobill clerkis. Of the vicius King, Conarus; and how he wes degradit of all auctorite, and his servandis hingit for thair wickit counsall. Chap. VI. p. 175.

How Argadus was maid Governour of Scotland, during the time of Conarus in presoun; and of his life and governance.

Chap. VII. p. 177.

Of King Ethodius the First; and how he pecifyt the Ilis. How the Scottis and Pichtis brak down the wal of Adriane, and faucht aganis the Romanis, with sindry chancis of victory.

Chap. VIII. p. 179.

How Victorine was deprivit of auctorite; and Calphurnius Agricola send in his place. How Calphurnius reparit the wall of Adriane, and returnit to Rome.

Chap. IX. p. 181.

How Trebellius wes send in Britane, and was vincust be the Scottis and Pichtis. Of the rebellioun of Britonis aganis him; and of his message send to the Empriour.

Chap. X. p. 182.

How Argadus, lieutenant to King Ethodius, was slane, and his army discomfist in the Ilis. Of sindry lawis and actis maid be Ethodius; and of his slaughter.

Chap. XI. p. 185.

Of mony nobil clerkis. How Britane tuke the faith of Crist. Of the vicious King, Satrahell; and of his deith.

Chap. XII. p. 187.

Of King Donald the First. How the Britonis war inhibit be the Romanis, to have ony king of thair blude; and how thay solistit the Scottis and Pichtis to assist to thair rebellion.

Chap. XIII. p. 188.

How Severus, emprioure, come in Britane, to revenge the oppresionis done to Romanis. How the Britonis fled in Scotland. How the Scottis and Pichtis fechtand in support of Britonis, war discomfist.

Chap. XIV. p. 190.

Of gret cruelteis done be Severus, empriour, aganis the noblis of Britane. Of his weris aganis Scottis and Pichtis. How Anthonius reparit the wall of Adriane; and of the Empriouris deith.

Chap. XV. p. 192.

- How Anthonius slew his brothir, Getus, to make himself Emproure. How Scotland tuke the faith of Crist, and cunyeit money. Of mony nobill clerkis, in sindry partis of the world; and of King Donaldis deith. Chap. XVI. p. 194.
- Of King Ethodius the Secound; and how the noblis, finding him unabil to gide the realme, governit the samin, be thair auctorite, in gret justice. Chap. XVII. p. 196.

---

THE TABLE OF THE SEXT BUKE.

- How Athirco was maid King of Scottis. How the noblis conspirit aganis him, for his cursit tyranny; and how he slew himself, be disperatioun. Chap. I. p. 198.
- How Nathalak usurpit the crown, and persewit al the linnage of Athirco with gret cruelteis; and, finaly, was slane be his familiar servand. Chap. II. p. 200.
- Of King Findok; and how he dantit the Ilis, and was slane be two men thairof. Chap. III. p. 204.
- How Carance was banist for his brotheris slauchter, and Donald the Secound, maid King. Of his deith, and of sindry noble clerkis. Chap. IV. p. 206.
- How mony haly men war martyrit for the faith of Crist. How Donald of the Ilis, the thrid of that name, usurpit the crown, and was slane be Craithlint. Chap. V. p. 207.
- Of King Craithlint; and how the Scottis and Pichtis fell in contention, be thair hunting, and faucht, with gret slauchter, on al sidis. Chap. VI. p. 209.
- How Carance, brothir to Findok, returnit out of Italy, with gret riches, in Albion. How he conquest Westmureland, and maid peace betwix Scottis and Pichtis. Chap. VII. p. 211.
- How Carance, be support of Scottis and Pichtis, slew Bassiane, capitane of Britane, and tuk the crown thairof; and of his deith. And how the crown of Britane was restorit to Romanis. Chap. VIII. p. 215.

Of gret cruelte, done be Dioclesiane, Empriour, aganis Cristin pepil. How Coill vincust the Romanis, and conquest the crown of Britane. How he was alliat with Constantius, Emprioure; and of the nativite of gret Constantine. Chap. IX. p. 217.

How Fincormak was maid King of Scottis, and Octavius, King of Britonis. How Herculeus, Romane capitane, was slane be Octavius, and the Romanis vincust. How the Scottis and Pichtis come in support of Octavius, and chasit Traherus in France.

Chap. X. p. 220.

How Octavius was put fra the crown of Britane, be Traherus, Romane capitane. How the said Traherus was slane, and Octavius restorit to the crown; and of Fincormakis deith.

Chap. XI. p. 222.

How the heresyis of Arrius was condampnit. How Ireland tuke the faith of Crist. How Romak, Fethelmak, and Angusiane, contendit for the crown. How Romak was maid King, and slane efter for his tyranny.

Chap. XII. p. 224.

How Angusiane was maid King of Scottis. How Maximus subdewit the Britonis, be sindry victoryis. How Scottis and Pichtis invadit othir, with set batal. How baith thair Kingis war slane, and the Scottis discomfist.

Chap. XIII. p. 227.

How Fethelmak was maid King of Scottis; and how he slew Nectane, King of Pichtis, and wes slane efter, be thair treason, and of mony nobill clerkis.

Chap. XIV. p. 230.

How Sanct Roule brocht Sanct Androis arme in Scotland; and how the Kirk of Sanct Androis was dotat, be Hergest, King of Pichtis; and of the loving thairof.

Chap. XV. p. 231.

How Eugenius wes maid King of Scottis. How Hergest, King of Pichtis, wes confiderat with Romanis for distruction of Scottis. How Maximus, Capitane of Britane, invadit the Scottis with gret cruelteis and slaughter.

Chap. XVI. p. 233.

How Maximus returnit in Galloway, to revenge the injuris done be Scottis aganis Pichtis. How Eugenius come, with L.M men, to resist the Romanis, Pichtis, and Britonis. How he was slane, his brothir tane, and his army discomfist.

Chap. XVII. p. 236.

How the Scottis, be gret cruelte of Pichtis, war exilit out of Albion. How the Abbay of Comekil was foundit.

Chap. XVIII. p. 240.



Of sindry mervellis sene in Albion. How the Scottis that fled in Ireland and the Ilis, returnit in Scotland with gret power; and how thay war discomfist and slane. Chap. XIX. p. 243.

---

THE TABLE OF THE SEVINT BUKE.

How Maximus conquest, be his liberalite, the crown of Britane. How he slew Gratiane, Emprioure; and was slane be Theodosius. Chap. I. p. 247.

How Octavius wes maid king of Britonis. How Mercius and Victorine war send in Albion, to dant the Britonis. How the Pichtis war thirlit to gret servitude; and how thair king slew himself. Chap. II. p. 249.

Of Etheodius, brothir to Eugenius afore reherisit. Of his governance in Denmark; and of his succession. How Rome was tane be Gothis; and how sindry spulyeis thair of fell to Fergus the Secund. Chap. III. p. 252.

Of sindry clerkis and sanctis flurising in the world. Of the first message send be Pichtis to Scottis. Chap. IV. p. 255.

How Gratiane, King of Britonis, and Mercius, Romane capitane, war slane, and Constantine put in Mercius place; and of his deith. Of the secund message send be Pichtis to Fergus; and how he come in Albion, and was aggreit with Pichtis, and recoverit his realme. Chap. V. p. 256.

How the Romanis, fechtand aganis the Scottis and Pichtis, war severit be ane schoure of hail. Of sindry vassalage done be the vailyeant Grahame, at the wal of Abircorne. Of his linnage and allia with King Fergus. Chap. VI. p. 259.

Of sindry consultationis maid be the Scottis, for thair defence aganis the Romanis and Britonis. How Victorine conquest the croun of Britane; and how he was punist thairfore, to the deith. Chap. VII. p. 261.

How Placidus, Romane capitane, was discomfist, with his army, be Scottis and Pichtis. How King Fergus recoverit al his landis,

- be condition of peace, fra Romanis. Of his civil and religious industry, for the weill of his pepill. Chap. VIII. p. 262.
- Of the deith of Placidus. Of the message send be Castius, capitane of Britane, to Fergus; and of Fergus answer. How the Romanis war discomfist, and Castius slane. Chap. IX. p. 264.
- How Maximiane, capitane of Britane, come, with huge army, aganis the Scottis and Pichtis. Of Fergus orison to his army; and how baith the kingis of Scottis and Pichtis war slane, and thair army discomfist be Romanis. Chap. X. p. 266.
- How the Romanis wrocht gret injuris on Scottis and Pichtis. How Maximiane wes alliat with Dioneth, Prince of Walis, and tuke the crown of Britane, contrar the auctorite of Romanis. Chap. XI. p. 269.
- Of King Eugenius the Secound. Of grete vassalage done be Maximiane in Britane and France. How Ursula and hir fallowis war martyrit. Chap. XII. p. 271.
- How the confiderat kingis come with gret armyis aganis the Britonis. Of Eugenius orison. Of the gret heirschippis maid on Britonis. How Gallio Revennas was send in suport of Britonis; and of his vassalage. Chap. XIII. p. 273.
- How the Scottis and Pichtis kest down the wall of Abircorne, and wrocht gret cruelteis on the Britonis. Of the message send be Britonis to Etius; and of his answer. Chap. XIV. p. 276.
- How Conanus, Prince of Walis, exhortit the Britonis to tak peace with Scottis and Pichtis; and was slane. How the Britonis, efter his slauchter, faucht amang thameself. Chap. XV. p. 278.
- Of gret vassalage done be the nobill Grahame at the wallis of Abircorne and Adriane; and how the Scottis conquest all landis betwix Tyne and Humber. Of the epistill send be Britonis to Etius; and of his answer. Chap. XVI. p. 280.
- How the Britonis war vincust, and maid tributar to Scottis and Pichtis. And of the conditionis of peace gevin to the said Britonis. Chap. XVII. p. 283.
- Of mony nobil clerkis and sanctis in sindry partis of the world. Of sindry prodigies and mervellis sene in Albion. And of Finmakcoule. Chap. XVIII. p. 286.

## VOL. II.

## THE TABLE OF THE AUCHT BUKE.

How mony Romane provinces fel in pray to sindry pepill; and how sindry realmes began thairthrow. Chap. I. p. 5.

How Conanus exhortit the Britonis to recover thair liberte. Of the message send be Scottis and Pichtis to Britonis; and how the noblis and commonis of Britane invadit othir be battall.

Chap. II. p. 7.

Of sindry afflictionis and plagis quhilkis fell on the Britonis, for thair iniquite and corruppit life. Of the deith of King Eugenius.

Chap. III. p. 10.

Of King Dongard; and of the second orison maid be Conanus to the Britonis. And how thay send ambassatouris to Androenus, King of Bertanye, for support aganis Scottis and Pichtis.

Chap. IV. p. 11.

Of the deith of Conanus; and of the orison maid be Guitelline to the King of Bertanye. How Constantine, his son, was send with ane army in Britane, and maid king thairof. Chap. V. p. 14.

How Dongard, King of Scottis, come with gret power aganis Constantine, King of Britonis. Of his orison to his army. How he was slane, and the Britonis discomfist. Chap. VI. p. 17.

How Constantine the First, and thrid brothir to Eugenius, was maid King of Scottis. Of his unhappy life and tyranny; and how Constantine, King of Britonis, was slane be gile of Pichtis.

Chap. VII. p. 20.

Of King Congallus; and of his administratioun. How the monk Constantius was maid king of Britonis. How Vortigern, be slauchter of Constantius, tuke the crown of Britane.

Chap. VIII. p. 22.

How Ambrose and Uter, the sonnys of King Constantine, fled in Bertanye. How Gwitel, Prince of Walis, was slane be the Scottis, and his army discomfist.

Chap. IX. p. 25.

How Vortigerne send ambassatouris in Almany, to fe wageouris in his support. How Hengest and Orsus come in Britane with x thousand Saxonis; and of thair cruelteis and vassalage done aganis Pichtis. Chap. X. p. 27.

Of the secound message send be Pichtis to the Scottis. How Scottis and Pichtis faucht aganis the Saxonis and Britonis, and war discomfist. Chap. XI. p. 29.

How Hengist was richely rewardit for his victorius dedis. How xv thousand Britonis war slane, be weris of Scottis and Pichtis. How Hengistis wife and douchter arrivit in Britane, with new army of Saxonis. Chap. XII. p. 31.

How Hengist and Vortimer come with gret armyis to invaid the confiderat pepil. Of sindry quent slichtis devisit be Scottis, to constrane thair ennimes to battall. Of sindry chancis of victory thairefter following. Chap. XIII. p. 33.

How Hengist was maid Protectour of Britane; and how he brocht his son Occa, with x.m Saxonis, to resist the armyis of Ambrose and Uter. How Vortigern come to ane banket, with Hengist; and maryit Roxena, his douchter. Chap. XIV. p. 36.

How Vodine, Bischop of London, with mony preistis, war slane be tyranny of Saxonis. How Hengist maid himself King of Kent. How Vortigerne was deprivit, and Vortimer, his sonne, maid King of Britane. Chap. XV. p. 39.

How Scottis and Pichtis war confiderat with King Vortimer aganis the Saxonis, and discomfist Occa in Northumbirland. How Hengist and Occa war vincust in Kent, and doung out of Britane. How King Vortimer was slane be poisoun. Chap. XVI. p. 42.

How the Britonis, efter deith of King Vortimer, fell in gret disputioun quhay suld be king. And how Vortigern was restorit to the crown of Britane. Chap. XVII. p. 45.

How Hengist and Occa returnit with new power of Saxonis in Britane, and slew mony nobillis thairof; and tuke Vortigerne presonere. How Vortigern was banist in Walis, and Hengist maid King of Britane. Chap. XVIII. p. 46.

How Vortigerne demandit the prophete Marline, of the end of his

life; and of Marlinis answer. How Ambrose and Uter come in Walis, and brint Vortigern, with his sonne and riches.

Chap. XIX. p. 50.

Of sindry illusionis and dissaitis of evill spretis. Chap. XX. p. 52.

How Ambrose was confiderat with Scottis and Pichtis. And how he slew Hengist, and dang the Saxonis out of Britane. How his two sisteris war maryit on the confiderat kingis. And of sindry haly men.

Chap. XXI. p. 54.

### THE TABLE OF THE NINT BUKE.

Of King Conrannus; and how he maid lawis to punis extorsionis. How Occa and Passentius arrivit with new power of Saxonis in England; and how thay war vincust be Ambrose.

Chap. I. p. 59.

Of gret cruelteis done be Occa to Britonis. How Scottis and Pichtis war frustrat of thair voyage. Of gret mervellis sene in Albion.

Of the interpretation of thaim be Merline. Chap. II. p. 62.

How Uter wes maid King of Britonis; and how he was discomfist be Saxonis, and chasit in Walis. How Saxonis and Britonis war aggreit.

Chap. III. p. 64.

How Uter slew the Prince of Cornewal, and gat Arthure on his wife. How Loth, King of Pichtis, clamit the crown of Britan; and how Britonis war purgit of thair herisyis. How Terdix and Kenrik come to Occa with new power of Saxonis; and how the Saxonis war discomfist be mirakill.

Chap. IV. p. 66.

How Occa and Nathaleodus, invading othir be battal, war baith slane, with xv.M Britonis. How young Occa was maid King of England; and of his ordinance aganis the Scottis and Pichtis. And how thay war vincust, and King Uter slane be poisoun.

Chap. V. p. 69.

Of the Romane Boece; and of his werkis and martyrdome. Of the institutionis of the ordour of Sanct Benedict; and how superflew



- rentis makis evill, religious men. How Loth, King of Pichtis, clamit the crown of Britane. Chap. VI. p. 72.
- How the Saxonis war sindry times vineust, and maid tributaris to King Arthure. How Occa arrivid with new power in Northumberland, and chasit Arthure in Walis. How the surfet cheir of Yule was evil institute. How Pichtis and Britonis war aggreit. Chap. VII. p. 74.
- How the Scottis and Pichtis war confiderat with King Arthure, aganis the Saxonis. How the Saxonis war vincust be the Albanis, and dOUNg out of Albion. Chap. VIII. p. 76.
- How the Scottis and Pichtis come with xx thousand men, in support of King Arthure, aganis Saxonis; and how the Saxonis war discomfist. Chap. IX. p. 78.
- How Tonset, Chancellor of Scotland, was slane, for his wrangus administration of justice. Of King Conrannus deith. Of Justiniane, Empriour, and of his prudent constitutionis, fame, and chevelry; and of sindry captiviteis of Rome. Chap. X. p. 80.
- Of King Eugenius the thrid, and his lawis. Of Conrannus wife. How scho fled, with hir sonnis, in Ingland. Of King Arthuris fame, chevelry, and round table. How the Britonis, contrar thair promes, maid Constantine Prince of Britane. Chap. XI. p. 82.
- Of the message send be Pichtis to Britonis, and of thair answer. How King Arthure was slane, with mony of al the nobillis of Britane, be Scottis and Pichtis. How Guanora, his wife, was brocht in Angus; of hir sepulture; and of the calamite that fell to Albanis be this battal. Chap. XII. p. 84.
- How Constantine, King of Britonis, slew the sonnis of Modrede. Of uncouth mervellis sene in Albioun. How Eugenius gaif sindry landis, with armis, to nobill men of his realme. How Constantine, King of Britonis, was maid monk, in Ireland; and of Eugenius deith. Chap. XIII. p. 87.
- Of King Conwallus, and his lawis and deith. Of the cuming of Sanct Colme in Scotland; and of Sanct Mungo. Chap. XIV. p. 89.

Of King Kinnatill, and how he resignit the crown to Aidane. Of the orisoun maid be Sanct Colme. How Scottis and Pichtis faucht amang thaimself, and war aggreit be Sanct Colme.

Chap. XV. p. 91.

How the Saxonis devidit Ingland, in sevin sindry kingdomis. How Pichtis and Saxonis war confiderat togidder, and discomfist the Scottis and Britonis. Of the orison maid be King Aidane, to his army. How the said Aidane was vincust be Saxonis, and his sonne slane.

Chap. XVI. p. 94.

How Saxonis and Pichtis war discomfist in Northumberland, be Scottis and Britonis. Of the deith of Sanct Colme, and Sanct Aidane. Of the vengeance that come on the Saxonis, for ding-ing of Sanct Austine. And of sindry haly men.

Chap. XVII. p. 96.

Of King Kenneth. Of Eugenius the feird. How the King of Britonis was dounge out of this realme, be Saxonis, and recoverit the samin. How Ethelfreid, King of Northumberland, was slane. Of sindry haly men.

Chap. XVIII. p. 99.

Of the vicius tyrane, King Ferquhart, and how he slew himself; and of the haly man, Fiacre.

Chap. XIX. p. 101.

Of King Donevald; and of the deith of Edwine, King of Northumberland. How Eufred and Osrik, Kingis of Northumberland, war punist for thair tyranny done to Cristin pepill. And how King Oswald convertit the Saxonis to the faith of Crist.

Chap. XX. p. 103.

Of the unhappy prophete, Machomete, and his fals lawis. Of sindry haly men. Of King Ferquhart, and his extorsionis done aganis the pepill; and of his miserable end.

Chap. XXI. p. 107.

Of King Maldwine, and how he was slane be his wife, and his wife brint. Of gret mortalite, be rage of pest, in sindry partis of the world; and how the Scottis war preservit fra the samin.

Chap. XXII. p. 110.

Of Eugenius the Fift; and of the message send to Edfred, King of Northumberland; and of the peace takin thairefter. How King Edfred was slane be Eugenius, with xx thousand Saxonis; and of the haly man, Sanct Cuthbert.

Chap. XXIII. p. 111.

Of gret trubill done be Sarayenis to Cristin pepill. Of King Eugenius the Sext, and his artis. Of uncouth mervellis sene in Albioun. Chap. XXIV. p. 113.

Of the vicius tyrane, Amberkeleth; and of his deith. Of King Eugenius the Sevint. How the Scottis and Pichtis war recounsalit togidder, be affinite; and of the slauchter of Eugenius wife. Of sevin haly virginis, dotat be the King of Pichtis, in Abir-nethy. Chap. XXV. p. 115.

Of King Mordak, and his werkis; and of his deith. Of foure sindry pepill in Albioun. Of the gret mirakillis of Sanct Niniane; and of Sanct Bede. Chap. XXVI. p. 117.

Of King Ethfine; and how he maid foure regentis to govern his realm. Of gret cruelteis done be Donald of the Ilis; and of the deith of King Ethfine. Chap. XXVII. p. 119.

Of King Eugenius the VIII, and how he was slane for his tyranny; and his cvill counsallouris hingit on jebatis. Chap. XXVIII. p. 120.

Of the vicius King Fergus the Thrid; and how he was slane be his wife. Of hir orisoun maid to the counsall; and how scho slew himself. Chap. XXIX. p. 121.

Of King Solvathius; and how he dantit sindry gret limmaris of his realm. Of his deith, and of mony haly men. Chap. XXX. p. 123.

---

### THE TABLE OF THE TENT BUKE.

Of King Achaius; and how he aggreit his nobillis of all contentionis. Of his message send to the princis of Ireland; and of thair answer. How mony Ireland-men perist in the seis. How the Scottis and Ireland-men war aggreit. Chap. I. p. 126.

How King Charlis send his ambassatouris to be confiderat with Scottis and Pichtis. Of thair orisoun maid to King Achaius; and of the orison maid aganis thaim be Culmane. Chap. II. p. 128.

- Of the answer maid to this last orison be Albiane. How France and Scotland wer perpetuallie confiderat. How Pichtis refusit to be confiderat with France; and of the articlis contenand the band betwix Scotland and France. Chap. III. p. 132.
- How Paip Leo the Thrid, and the Florentinis, wer restorit to thair honour and liberte, be King Charlis. Of sindry abbayis foundit be Scottis Guilliam. How the universite of Paris began be Scottis. Of the loving of the samin. Chap. IV. p. 136.
- How the Scottis and Pichtis wer confiderat be mariage, and slew Athelstane, King of Ingland, and put his army to flicht. Of King Hungus lawis, and liberte to kirkmen. Of the deith of King Charlis, and King Achaius; and of sindry noble clerkis. Chap. V. p. 139.
- Of King Conwallus, and of his deith. Chap. VI. p. 143.
- Of King Dongallus, and how he punist certane conspiraturis. How Alpine, Prince of Scotland, clamit the croun of Pichtis, as nerest heritoure thairto. Of the Pichtis answer. How the Scottis concludit to move weir on the Pichtis, for denyng of the croun. Chap. VII. p. 143.
- Of King Alpine; and how he slew Feredech, King of Pichtis. How Brudus and Kenneth, Kingis of Pichtis, wer baith slane; and Brudus the feirs, maid King. How King Alpine wes slane, and the Scottis discomfist. Chap. VIII. p. 146.
- How Kenneth the Secound wes maid King of Scottis. Of the deith of Brudus, King of Pichtis; and how Donskene wes maid King. How the heid of King Alpine wes brocht in Scotland. How the Pichtis wer discomfist. Chap. IX. p. 150.
- Of the message send be Donskene to Kenneth, and of his answer. Of the orison maid be Donskene to Kenneth, and of his answer. How the Pichtis wer discomfist, and King Donskene slane. Chap. X. p. 154.
- How the swerd and cote armour of King Donskene wer send to Colmkill. Of the orisoun maid be King Kenneth to his nobillis. How the Pichtis wer slane, and banist out of Scotland; and how the Dunbaris tuke thair beginning. Chap. XI. p. 159.
- Of uncouth mervellis sene in Albioun. How the chiar of merbill

wes brocht out of Argyle to Scone. Of the lawis maid be Kenneth, for the commoun weil of Scottis; and of his deith.

Chap. XII. p. 162.

Of the vicious King Donald. How Osbret and Ella, with gret noumer of Inglismen, wes discomfist. How xx.M Scottis wer slane; and King Donald tane be Inglismen and Britonis. Of the message send be Scottis to Osbret; and of his answer.

Chap. XIII. p. 166.

Of the orison maid be Calenus. How Scottis tuke peace with Inglismen and Britonis. How King Donald wes put in preson for his vicis, and slew himself. Of sindry mervellis sene in Albioun.

Chap. XIV. p. 170.

Of King Constantine the Secund; and of his lawis. Of the hevyr regrait maid be Evanus of the Ilis to his folkis; and how the said Evanus wes punist for his rebellioun. Chap. XV. p. 173.

How Gadanus, King of Danis, send his two brethir, Hungar and Hubba, with gret armyis, to invade the Scottis; and how the said Hubba was vincust, and his army put to flicht.

Chap. XVI. p. 175.

How King Constantine was slane, and his army discomfist be the Danis.

Chap. XVII. p. 177.

Of King Ethus, and his actis. How Osbret, King of Ingland, with mony othir pepill, was slane be cruelte of Danis. Of sindry mervellis sene in Albioun; and of the deith of Ethus.

Chap. XVIII. p. 179.

Of King Gregoure and his lawis. How he recoverit sindry landis of his realme; and discomfist Herdeut, with all the army of Danis. How Rasine, gret capitane of Danis, was slane be Inglismen.

Chap. XIX. p. 181.

How Gregoure recoverit sindry landis of his realme, and slew Constantine, King of Britonis. How Scottis, Britonis, and Inglismen war confiderat aganis the Danis. Chap. XX. p. 184.

How King Gregoure come in Ireland, to revenge certane injuris done in Galloway; and how he dantit the samin with sindry victoryis, and was governoure thair of mony yeris. Of his loving and deith.

Chap. XXI. p. 188.



Of King Donald the Sext. How the realme of Normanis and duche-  
ry of Flanderis tuke beginning. Of the gret chevelrie of Danis  
in sindry partis of the warld; and of his deith.

Chap. XXII. p. 193.

### THE TABLE OF THE LEVINT BUKE.

Of King Constantine the Thrid. How Danis and Inglismen war  
confiderat be mariage; and how the peace was dissolvit. How  
the Scottis war discomfist be the Danis. And of the deith of  
King Constantine.

Chap. I. p. 197.

Of King Malcolme the First. How Cumbir and Westmureland  
was annexit to the Prince of Scotland. Of the slauchter of King  
Malcolme, and punitioun tane for the samin. Of the deith of King  
Athelstane.

Chap. II. p. 201.

Of King Indulphe. How Avalassus, King of Danis, was discomfist  
be King Edmond, be support of Scottis. How sindry Danis war  
discomfist in Buchquhan, and King Indulphe slane.

Chap. III. p. 203.

Of Kinge Duffus; and how he was trublit with gret infirmite, be  
wichecraft. How he punist certane conspiratouris, and was slane.

Chap. IV. p. 205.

How Culine, Prince of Scotland, punist the slauchter of King Duf-  
fus. Of sindry mervellis sene in Albion.

Chap. V. p. 209.

Of King Culine, and his vicius life. Of the trubill that fell in the  
realme be his evill ministratioun.

Chap. VI. p. 211.

Of King Kenneth the Thrid, and his governance. Of his orison  
maid to the nobillis; and how he constranit thaim to bring sindry  
thevis to his justice.

Chap. VII. p. 213.

How the Danis, invading the Scottis with gret cruelteis, war dis-  
comfist be King Kenneth. And how the Hayis tuk thair first  
beginning and armis.

Chap. VIII. p. 216.

How King Kenneth slew the Prince of Scotland, that his sonne micht

succede to the crown. Of the message send be Sanct Edward to King Kenneth; and of Kennethis orisoun maid to his nobillis.

Chap. IX. p. 221.

How the auld lawis war abrogat be Kenneth, concerning the election of kingis; and new lawis, contrar to thaim, institute. Of the visiou that come to him in his bed; and of his deith.

Chap. X. p. 225.

Of King Constantine the Feird; and of sindry mervellis sene in Albioun. How Constantine and Malcolme contendit for the crown. How Inglismen and Danis war aggreit be Malcolme, Lord of Cumbir. How Constantine and Kenneth, recountering othir be set battall, wer baith slane.

Chap. XI. p. 228.

Of King Grime; and of gret trubill that fell betwix him and Malcolme, Prince of Cumbir, for contentioun of the crown. And how thay war finaly aggreit.

Chap. XII. p. 230.

How gret nowmer of Danis war slane be slicht of Inglismen. Of the orisoun maid to King Grime be the nobillis; and how he was slane be Malcolme, Prince of Cumbir.

Chap. XIII. p. 234.

Of King Malcolme the Secound. How Sueno, King of Norroway, with double victory, chasit King Eldreid of England, and opprest Inglismen with gret cruelteis.

Chap. XIV. p. 237.

How Olavus and Onetus come in Scotland, with gret army of Danis. And how King Malcolme was discomfist.

Chap. XV. p. 240.

How the Castell of Narne was tane, and the soudjouris thair of treasonabilly slane, be Danis; and how the Danis war discomfist at Murthlak.

Chap. XVI. p. 242.

How Camus, Prince of Norroway, cumand with ane flote of Danis in Angus, was slane, and his army discomfist, be King Malcolme, at Barre. And how the surname of Keithis tuke thair beginning.

Chap. XVII. p. 245.

How v hundreth Danis war slane be the Thane of Buchquhane.

How Canute come with new army of Danis in Scotland, and was discomfist. How Scottis and Danis war finaly aggreit on all debaitis.

Chap. XVIII. p. 247.

How King Malcolme devidit his realme in baronyis. How the nobillis gaif to him the wardis, releiffis, and mariage of thair airis.

quhen thay vaikit. How the sait of Abirdene first began. Of the deith of King Malcolme; and of sindry mervellis sene in Albioun. Chap. XIX. p. 249.

### THE TABLE OF THE TWELF BUKE.

Of King Duncane. How the surname of Stewartis tuke thair first beginning; and how Makbeth punist sindry enormiteis done in King Duncanis time. Chap. I. p. 252.

How Edmond Irneside and Canute devidit betwix thaim the realme of Ingland. How Sueno, King of Norroway, come in Scotland with ane army, and vincust King Duncane. How the foresaid Sueno was, eftir, vincust be ane uncouth slicht.

Chap. II. p. 255.

Of the weirdis gevin to Makbeth and Banquho. How Makbeth was maid Thane of Cawder; and how he slew King Duncane to mak himself king.

Chap. III. p. 259.

How Makbeth usurpit the croun, and chasit the sonnys of King Duncane in Cumbir. How he punist sindry limmaris, and maid lawis for the commoun weill.

Chap. IV. p. 261.

How Banquho was slane be Makbeth, and his sonne Fleance slane in Walis. How Walter, the sonne of Fleance, come in Scotland. And of the genelogy of Stewartis.

Chap. V. p. 264.

How Makbeth slew his lordis, for proffet of thair landis and guddis. How he biggit the Castell of Dunsinnane, and slew Makduffis wife and his barnis. Of the orison maid to Malcolme Canmore be Makduf.

Chap. VI. p. 268.

How Malcolme Canmore schew himself unabill to be king, for his sindry vicis. And how he come in Scotland, and was maid king thair of. And of Makbethis deith.

Chap. VII. p. 271.

Of the deith of Edmond, Canute, Herald, and Hardy Canute, Kingis of Ingland. How the crown of Ingland was recoverit fra Danis; and Godowine veryit for the innocent slauchter of Alarude.

Chap. VIII. p. 274.

succede to the crown. Of the message send be Sanct Edward to King Kenneth; and of Kennethis orisoun maid to his nobillis.

Chap. IX. p. 221.

How the auld lawis war abrogat be Kenneth, concerning the election of kingis; and new lawis, contrar to thaim, institute. Of the visiou that come to him in his bed; and of his deith.

Chap. X. p. 225.

Of King Constantine the Feird; and of sindry mervellis sene in Albioun. How Constantine and Malcolme contendit for the crown. How Inglismen and Danis war aggreit be Malcolme, Lord of Cumbir. How Constantine and Kenneth, recounering othir be set battall, wer baith slane.

Chap. XI. p. 228.

Of King Grime; and of gret trubill that fell betwix him and Malcolme, Prince of Cumbir, for contentioun of the crown. And how thay war finaly aggreit.

Chap. XII. p. 230.

How gret nowmer of Danis war slane be slicht of Inglismen. Of the orisoun maid to King Grime be the nobillis; and how he was slane be Malcolme, Prince of Cumbir.

Chap. XIII. p. 234.

Of King Malcolme the Secound. How Sueno, King of Norroway, with double victory, chasit King Eldreid of England, and opprest Inglismen with gret cruelteis.

Chap. XIV. p. 237.

How Olavus and Onetus come in Scotland, with gret army of Danis. And how King Malcolme was discomfist.

Chap. XV. p. 240.

How the Castell of Narne was tane, and the soudjouris thairof treasonabilly slane, be Danis; and how the Danis war discomfist at Murthlak.

Chap. XVI. p. 242.

How Camus, Prince of Norroway, cumand with ane flote of Danis in Angus, was slane, and his army discomfist, be King Malcolme, at Barre. And how the surname of Keithis tuke thair beginning.

Chap. XVII. p. 245.

How v hundreth Danis war slane be the Thane of Buchquhane. How Canute come with new army of Danis in Scotland, and was discomfist. How Scottis and Danis war finaly aggreit on all debaitis.

Chap. XVIII. p. 247.

How King Malcolme deidit his realme in baronyis. How the nobillis gaif to him the wardis, releiffis, and mariage of thair airis,

quhen thay vaikit. How the sait of Abirdene first began. Of the deith of King Malcolme; and of sindry mervellis sene in Albioun. Chap. XIX. p. 249.

---

### THE TABLE OF THE TWELF BUKE.

- Of King Duncane. How the surname of Stewartis tuke thair first beginning; and how Makbeth punist sindry enormiteis done in King Duncanis time. Chap. I. p. 252.
- How Edmond Irneside and Canute devidit betwix thaim the realme of Ingland. How Sueno, King of Norroway, come in Scotland with ane army, and vincust King Duncane. How the foresaid Sueno was, eftir, vincust be ane uncouth slicht. Chap. II. p. 255.
- Of the weirdis gevin to Makbeth and Banquho. How Makbeth was maid Thane of Cawder; and how he slew King Duncane to mak himself king. Chap. III. p. 259.
- How Makbeth usurpit the croun, and chasit the sonnys of King Duncane in Cumbir. How he punist sindry limmaris, and maid lawis for the commoun weill. Chap. IV. p. 261.
- How Banquho was slane be Makbeth, and his sonne Fleance slane in Walis. How Walter, the sonne of Fleance, come in Scotland. And of the genelogy of Stewartis. Chap. V. p. 264.
- How Makbeth slew his lordis, for proffet of thair landis and guddis. How he biggit the Castell of Dunsinnane, and slew Makduffis wife and his barnis. Of the orison maid to Malcolme Canmore be Makduf. Chap. VI. p. 268.
- How Malcolme Canmore schew himself unabill to be king, for his sindry viciis. And how he come in Scotland, and was maid king thairof. And of Makbethis deith. Chap. VII. p. 271.
- Of the deith of Edmond, Canute, Herald, and Hardy Canute, Kingis of Ingland. How the crown of Ingland was recoverit fra Danis; and Godowine weryit for the innocent slauchter of Alarude. Chap. VIII. p. 274.



How King William recoverit his landis. How Richard, King of Ingland, and Phillip, King of France, went with gret armyis in Jowry. Of thair vassalage and trubill. How Erle David returnit out of the Haly Land, and foundit Lunderis.

Chap. VII. p. 323.

How King Richard returnit in Ingland. How King William punist gret limmaris in his realme. Of the nativite of Prince Alexander. Of the coronation of King Johne. How the Pape send ane swerd to King William.

Chap. VIII. p. 326.

How King William and King Johne war confiderat togidder be mariage. Of King Williamis haly life, and liberalite to the kirk. How the town of Perth tuke beginning.

Chap. IX. p. 328.

How King Johne subdewit Ireland and Walis. How King William punist sindry conspiratouris. How Ingland and Ireland war maid tributaris to the Pape. Of King Williamis deith; and how sindry ordouris of freris began.

Chap. X. p. 330.

Of King Alexander the Secound, and his actis. How King Johne of Ingland invadit the kirk with gret exactionis. How the Pape and kirkmen war corruppit, be his money, to assist to his opinioun. How King Alexander renewit the band of France; and of the deith of King Johne.

Chap. XI. p. 333.

Of the Generall Counsall haldin at Rome be Paip Innocent; and how the Kingis of Scotland and Ingland invadit aithir realmes with gret heirschippis and slauchter; and how thay war aggreit.

Chap. XII. p. 336.

How King Hary and King Alexander war alliat be mariage. Of the translation of Sanct Thomas of Cantorbury. Of sindry legatis send in Scotland be the Pape, to conques money.

Chap. XIII. p. 338.

How King Alexander punist sindry conspiratouris in his realme. Of the first cuming of Blak and Gray Freris in Scotland.

Chap. XIV. p. 340.

How King Alexander punist sindry conspiratouris, and aggreit King Hary of Ingland and his nobillis. Of his new mariage; and of the nativite of his sonne Alexander. How mony noblis of Scotland war slane in Jowry.

Chap. XV. p. 342.

- How the reliques of Sanct Margaret war translatit. How King Alexander was haldin in captivite with the Cumingis. Of his mariage with King Hary the Thrid; and of the bigging of Sanct Mungois Kirk. Chap. XVI. p. 344.
- Of gret derth in Albioun. How Acho, King of Norroway, invadit Scotland with gret cruelteis. Of the orisoun maid to him be ambassatouris of King Alexander. Chap. XVII. p. 347.
- How King Alexander come with ane army aganis King Acho. Of the orisonis maid be the two kingis to thair armyis; and how King Acho was discomfist at Largis. Chap. XVIII. p. 349.
- Of the nativite of Alexander the Feird. Of the message send be Magaus, King of Norroway, to King Alexander the Thrid; and of his answer. And how the said Alexander recoverit the Ilis of Scotland fra the Danis. Chap. XIX. p. 353.
- Of the answer maid to the Papis legat be King Alexander. Of the nativite of Robert Bruce, the vailyeant conqueroure. Of the deith of King Alexanderis wife, and hir barnis. Chap. XX. p. 354.
- Of sindry actis done be King Alexander; and of his deith. Of Thomas Rymoure. Of sindry mervellis sene in Albioun; and of mony nobill clerkis. Chap. XXI. p. 357.

## THE TABLE OF THE FOURTENE BUKE.

- How Scotland was gidit be vi Governouris. How the mariage betwix the Madin of Norroway and King Edward, failieit. How Bruce and Ballioll contendit for the crowne. How the decisioun thairof was committit to King Edward; and how he maid the Ballioll king. Chap. I. p. 360.
- How the Ballioll come in gret trubill, for the making of homage to King Edward. Of his allia with King Phillip of France. How King Edward wan Berwik be treasoun, and slew al Scottis in the samin. Chap. II. p. 364.
- How King Ballioll was discomfist at Dunbar, and tint all the strenthis

- of Scotland. How he gaif ouir the crown to King Edward, and fled in France. Chap. III. p. 366.
- How Kinge Edward come with ane army aganis France. How the Erle of Buchquhane maid gret heirschippis in Ingland. Of William Wallace, and his vassalage aganis Inglismen. Chap. IV. p. 368.
- Of King Edwardis message send to Wallace. Of Wallace answer; and of his gret prudence in chevelry. How the Scottis war discomfist at the Falkirk; and how the King of France purchest peace to Scottis. Chap. V. p. 370.
- How Inglismen war discomfist at Rosling. How King Edward conquest gret rowmes in Scotland; and how the Forbessis tuk thair first beginning. Chap. VI. p. 374.
- Of sindry gret cruelteis done be King Edward aganis Scottis. How the Bruce and Cumin war confiderat; and how the Cumin was slane. Chap. VII. p. 377.
- How Wallace was betraisit be Schir Johne Menteith. Of King Robert Bruce coronatioun; and of his gret misery. How he conquest Scotland; and how the Douglas tuk thair beginning. Chap. VIII. p. 380.
- Of the deith of the tyrane, King Edward Langschankis; and how Edward Carnaver, his son, was maid King of Ingland. How King Robert gat sindry victoryis on his ennimes; and of gret derth in Scotland. Chap. IX. p. 384.
- Of the condition of trewis tane betwix Edward Bruce and the capitane of Striveling. How King Edward come, with *iii.c* thousand men, to reskew Striveling. Of the victory fallin to Erle Thomas Randale. Chap. X. p. 386.
- How the two kingis exhortit thair armyis to battall. How Inglismen war discomfist at Banochburn, and King Edward chasit be the Douglas to Dunbar. Of gret riches that fell to Scottis be this victory. How the town of Handwarp and Flemingis tuke thair beginning. Chap. XI. p. 390.
- How the crown of Scotland was tailieit to King Robert and his airis. How Edward, his brothir, was maid King of Ireland, and slane be Inglismen. How King Robert sufferit gret distres in Ireland. Chap. XII. p. 395.

How King Edward was discomfist be Schir James Douglas. Of gret vassalage done be William Sinclar, Bischop of Dunkeld, aganis Inglismen; and how Berwik was recoverit.

Chap. XIII. p. 397.

Of the Blak Parliament. How King Edward complanit to the Paip for injuris of Scottis. Of the orison maid be the Papis legat to King Robert; and of his answer.

Chap. XIV. p. 398.

How King Edward, efter gret cruelteis done be his army in Scotland, was discomfist be King Robert at Byland. How the Hamiltonis tuke thair beginning; and of King Edwardis deith.

Chap. XV. p. 401.

How Johne Ballioll transferrit all richt that he had to the crown of Scotland, in King Robert. How the crown was new tailieit to David Bruce. How Schir James Douglas and Erle Thomas Randale did gret vassalage in Scotland.

Chap. XVI. p. 403.

Of the deith and loving of King Robert Bruce; and of his testament and legacy. How Schir James Douglas was chosin to pas with his hart in the Haly Land.

Chap. XVII. p. 406.

## THE TABLE OF THE FIFTENE BUKE.

How Schir James of Dowglas past, with King Robertis hart, to the haly graif. Of the coronation of King David Bruce; and how the Erle, Thomas Randale, was maid governour; and of his deith.

Chap. I. p. 409.

How the Erlis of Marche and Mar was maid governouris of Scotland. How Edward Ballioll come in Scotland, to conquess the crown; and of the battal of Dupline.

Chap. II. p. 414.

How Edward Balliol was crownit at Scone. How King David fled in France. How Perth was recoverit, and the Ballioll vincust be the Douglas; and how King Edward segit Berwik.

Chap. III. p. 417.

Of the orison maid be Alexander Seytonis wife; and how his son was slane be tyranny of King Edward.

Chap. IV. p. 420.

How the Scottis war discomfist at Halidon hill; and Berwik ran-  
derit to Inglismen, with mony othir strenthis and munitionis of  
Scotland. Chap. V. p. 422.

Of the contention betwix Alexander Mowbray, and Hary Bew-  
mont; and how Inglismen perist at the sege of Lochlevin.  
Chap. VI. p. 425.

How Robert Stewart and Johne Randall recoverit sindry strenthis  
of Scotland. How David Cumin was brocht to gret trubill for  
his rebellion aganis Scottis; and how he wes tane in favour.  
Chap. VII. p. 427.

How King Edward come in Scotland with gret armyis, baith be see  
and land. How the Duke of Gilder was discomfist, and how Erle  
David Cumin was slane. Chap. VIII. p. 429.

How Andro Murray was maid Governoure of Scotland. How  
King Edward returnit with new army in Scotland; and how  
Inglismen war discomfist at Panmore. Chap. IX. p. 431.

How William Talbot, and Richard Montague war vincust be  
Scottis. Of the deith of Andro Murray. Of sindry vassalagis  
done be William Douglas; and of gret derth in Albion.  
Chap. X. p. 433.

How the Ballioll fled in England. Of gret vassalage done be Ro-  
bert Stewart, and William Dowglas. How King David returnit  
in Scotland; and how William Douglas was banist.  
Chap. XI. p. 435.

How King David rewardit the airis of thaim that war slane at Dup-  
line, and Halidon hill; and how he invadit England, sindry  
times, with gret injuris. Chap. XII. p. 438.

How King David, at the request of France, invadit England with  
gret displeseris; and how he was takin at Durame. How Ing-  
lismen conquest gret boundis in Scotland.  
Chap. XIII. p. 440.

How William Dowglas recoverit sindry landis out of Inglismennis  
handis, and invadit England with gret displeseris; and how King  
Edward wrocht gret trubill in Scotland.  
Chap. XIV. p. 444.



Of the battall of Poiteris. How King David was redemit ; and how he punist his baronis for thair fleing fra him at Durame.

Chap. XV. p. 446.

Of gret trubill that fell in Scotland, be King Davidis secound marriage. Of his deith. Of sindry gret clerkis and mervellis sene in Albioun.

Chap. XVI. p. 449.

### THE TABLE OF THE SEXTENE BUKE.

How Robert Stewart was maid King of Scottis. Of his sonnys and douchteris ; and how the realm was tailieit to thaim.

Chap. I. p. 451.

How the Erle of Marche brint Roxburgh ; and how Inglismen war sindry times discomfist be Scottis.

Chap. II. p. 453.

Of gret pest in Scotland. How Inglismen was discomfist at Sulway. Of the message send be Charlis of France ; and how the surname of Lyonis tuke thair beginning.

Chap. III. p. 455.

Of gret cruelteis done be Inglismen aganis Scottis. How the King of France send gret support to Scottis.

Chap. IV. p. 457.

How King Richard invadit Scotland, with gret cruelteis. Of gret vassalage done be William Douglas.

Chap. V. p. 459.

How Robert Stewart and William Douglas did gret vassalage in Ireland. How James, Erle of Douglas, vincust Hary Perse, in singulare battall ; and how he segit the New Castell.

Chap. VI. p. 461.

How Inglismen war discomfist at Otterburn, the Erle of Douglas slane, and the Perse brocht presoner in Scotland. How the Hepburnis tuke thair beginning.

Chap. VII. p. 464.

How Robert, Erle of Fiffe, was maid Governour of Scotland. How Alexander, bastard sonne to King Robert, was punist for his tyranny ; and of King Robertis deith.

Chap. VIII. p. 467.

Of King Robert the thrid. Of the deith of William Douglas, lord of Niddisdale. How the clannis of Clankayis and Glenquhatanis faucht at Perth.

Chap. IX. p. 468.

- How King Robert maid his son Duke of Rothesay, and his brothir Duke of Albany. Of gret vassalage done be the Erle of Crawford. Chap. X. p. 470.
- How Schir Robert Morlo was vincust be Hew Traill. How Hary, Duk of Longcastel, conquest the croun of England, and deprivit King Richard. Chap. XI. p. 472.
- How the mariage betwix the Duk of Rothesay and the Erle of Marchis douchter, was dissolvit. Of the trubill that come thairthrow. Chap. XII. p. 474.
- How King Hary come in Scotland with gret army. Of the deith of the Duke of Rothesay; and how the Scottis war discomfist at Nesbet, be the Erle of Marche. Chap. XIII. p. 475.
- How the Scottis war discomfist at Homildown. How Hary Haitspur, and Thomas Perse, his brothir, wes slane at Schrewisbery, and the Erle of Douglas tane. Chap. XIV. p. 477.
- How James, secound son to King Robert, wes tane be Inglismen. Of the tennour of the letteris send with him. Chap. XV. p. 480.
- Of the gret lamentation maid be King Robert the thrid, for the taking of his sonne; and of his deith. Chap. XVI. p. 483.
- How the Universite of Sanct Androis tuk beginning. How gret virtew and police was brocht in Scotland, be King James the First. How gret skaith fallis in this realme, be promotion of vitius prelati. Chap. XVII. p. 485.
- How the Erlis of Buchquhane and Wigtoun went, with gret armyis, in support of France; and of the deith of Duk Robert. Chap. XVIII. p. 488.
- How the Duke of Clarence was slane, with mony othir lordis of England, at Bawge. Of the deith of King Hary and King Charlis. Chap. XIX. p. 490.
- How ambassatouris war send in England, for redemption of James the First. How the Franchemen and Scottis war discomfist at Vernoll; and of gret vassalage done be the madin of France. Chap. XX. p. 493.

THE TABLE OF THE SEVINTENE BUKE.

How James the First was redemit. Of his coronation and actis.

Chap. I. p. 496.

How Duke Murdo, and his two sonnys, war justifyit be King James.

How the Erle of Cathnes was slane at Inverlochy, and the Erle of Mar vincust.

Chap. II. p. 499.

Of gret justice done be King James the First, in al partis of Scotland. Of the nativite of James the Secund. Of sindry actis done be the said nobill prince, James the First.

Chap. III. p. 501.

How the Bischop of Sanct Androis, be lang precheing, dissuadit the riatus custome of bankettis.

Chap. IV. p. 503.

Of the sege of Roxburgh. How the King brocht mony craftismen in this realme. How Paule Craw was brint, and the charturaris of Perth foundit.

Chap. V. p. 505.

How the Erle of Marche was forfaitit. Of sindry vassalage done be the Erle of Mar; and of his gret industry and wisdom.

Chap. VI. p. 507.

How Denmark and Scotland war aggreit of all debaitis. How King James douchter, Margaret, was maryit on the Dalphine of France; and how the Perse was discomfist be the Douglas, at Piperdene.

Chap. VII. p. 508.

Of the slauchter of King James the First; and of the punitioun that was maid thairfore; and of sindry mervellis sene in Albioun.

Chap. VIII. p. 510

HEIR BEGINNIS THE NAMES OF ALL SCOTTIS  
KINGIS, SEN THAIR REALME BEGAN; SCHAW-  
AND BREVELY IN QUHAT BUKE, CHAPITOURE,  
AND LEIF, IN THE STORY FOLLOWING, THAIR  
LIVIS AND MARCIALL DEDIS SAL BE ESALY  
FOUNDIN.

---

VOL. I.



ERGUS, the First King of Scottis; in the First Buke,  
Chap. VI. p. 15.

Ferithais, the secund king; in the Secund Buke, Chap.  
II. p. 34.

Maynus, the thrid king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. III. p. 37.

Dorvidilla, the feird king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. IV. p. 38.

Nathak, the v king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. V. p. 40.

Rewtar, the vi king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. VI. p. 41.

Rewtha, the vii king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. X. p. 47.

Therius, the viii king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. XI. p. 49.

Josyn, the ix king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. XII. p. 51.

Fynmane, the x king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. XIII. p. 53.

Durstus, the xi king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. XIV. p. 55.

Ewin the First, and xii king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. XV.  
p. 58.

Gillus, the xiii king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. XVI. p. 61.  
Ewin the Secund, and xiv king; in the Secund Buke, Chap. XVII.  
p. 64.

Edeir, the xv king; in the Thrid Buke, Chap. I. p. 71.

Ewin the Thrid, and xvi king; in the Thrid Buke, Chap. V. p. 82.

Metellane, the xvii king; in the Thrid Buke, Chap. VI. p. 84.

Caratak, the xviii king; in the Thrid Buke, Chap. VII. p. 86.

Corbreid, the xix king; in the Feird Buke, Chap. I. p. 113.

Dardannus, the xx king; in the iv Buke, Chap. VII. p. 128.

Galdus, the xxi king; in the iv Buke, Chap. VIII. p. 131.

Lugtak, the xxii king; in the v Buke, Chap. I. p. 164.

Mogallus, the xxiii king; in the v Buke, Chap. II. p. 166.

Conarus, the xxiv king; in the v Buke, Chap. VI. p. 175.

Ethodius the First, and xxv king; in the v Buke, Chap. VIII.  
p. 179.

Satraell, the xxvi king; in the v Buke, Chap. XII. p. 187.

Donald the First, and xxvii king; in the v Buke, Chap. XIII.  
p. 188.

Ethodius the Secund, and xxviii king; in the v Buke, Chap. XVII.  
p. 196.

Athirco, the xxix king; in the vi Buke, Chap. I. p. 198.

Nathalak, the xxx king; in the vi Buke, Chap. II. p. 200.

Findok, the xxxi king; in the vi Buke, Chap. III. p. 204.

Donald the Secound, and xxxii king; in the vi Buke, Chap. IV.  
p. 206.

Donald the Thrid, and xxxiii king; in the vi Buke, Chap. V.  
p. 207.

Craithlint, the xxxiv king; in the vi Buke, Chap. VI. p. 209.

Fincormak, the xxxv king; in the vi Buke, Chap. X. p. 220.

Romak, the xxxvi king; in the vi Buke, Chap. XII. p. 224.

Angusiane, the xxxvii king; in the vi Buke, Chap. XIII. p. 227.

Fethelmak, the xxxviii king; in the vi Buke, Chap. XIV. p. 230.

Eugenius the First, and xxxix king; in the vi Buke, Chap. XVI.  
p. 233.

Fergus the Secund, and xl king; in the vii Buke, Chap. V. p. 256.

Eugenius the Secund, and xli king; in the vii Buke, Chap. XII.  
p. 271.



## VOL. II.

- DONGARD, the XLII king ; in the VIII Buke, Chap. IV. p. 11.  
 Constantine the First, and XLIII king ; in the VIII Buke, Chap. VII.  
 p. 20.  
 Congallus, the XLIV king ; in the VIII Buke, Chap. VIII. p. 22.  
 Conrannus, the XLV king ; in the IX Buke, Chap. I. p. 59.  
 Eugenius the Thrid, and XLVI king ; in the IX Buke, Chap. XI.  
 p. 82.  
 Conwallus, the XLVII king ; in the IX Buke, Chap. XIV. p. 89.  
 Kinnatill, the XLVIII king ; in the IX Buke, Chap. XV. p. 91.  
 Adane, the XLIX king ; in the IX Buke, Chap. XV. p. 91.  
 Kenneth the First, and L king ; in the IX Buke, Chap. XVIII. p. 99.  
 Eugenius the Fourt, and LI king ; in the IX Buke, Chap. XVIII.  
 p. 99.  
 Ferquhard the First, and LII king ; in the IX Buke, Chap. XIX.  
 p. 101.  
 Donevald, the LIII king ; in the IX Buke, Chap. XX. p. 103.  
 Ferquhard the Secund, and LIV king ; in the IX Buke, Chap. XXI.  
 p. 107.  
 Maldwine, the LV king ; in the IX Buke, Chap. XXII. p. 110.  
 Eugenius the Fift, and LVI king ; in the IX Buke, Chap. XXIII.  
 p. 111.  
 Eugenius the Sext, and LVII king ; in the IX Buke, Chap. XXIV.  
 p. 113.  
 Amberkeleth, the LVIII king ; in the IX Buke, Chap. XXV. p. 115.  
 Eugenius the Sevint, and LIX king ; in the IX Buke, Chap. XXV.  
 p. 115.  
 Mordak, the LX king ; in the IX Buke, Chap. XXVI. p. 117.  
 Ethfine, the LXI king ; in the IX Buke, Chap. XXVII. p. 119.  
 Eugenius the Aucht, and LXII king ; in the IX Buke, Chap.  
 XXVIII. p. 120.

Fergus the Secound, and LXIII king ; in the ix Buke, Chap. XXIX.  
p. 121.

Solvathius, the LXIV king ; in the ix Buke, Chap. XXX. p. 123.

Achaisus, the LXV king ; in the x Buke, Chap. I. p. 126.

Conwallus, the LXVI king ; in the x Buke, Chap. VI. p. 143.

Dongallus, the LXVII king ; in the x Buke, Chap. VII. p. 143.

Alpine, the LXVIII king ; in the x Buke, Chap. VIII. p. 146.

Kenneth the Secound, and LXIX king ; in the x Buke, Chap. IX.  
p. 150.

Donald the Feird, and LXX king ; in the x Buke, Chap. XIII. p.  
166.

Constantine the Secound, and LXXI king ; in the x Buke, Chap.  
XV. p. 173.

Ethus, the LXXII king ; in the x Buke, Chap. XVIII. p. 179.

Gregoure, the LXXIII king ; in the x Buke, Chap. XIX. p. 181.

Donald the Fift, and LXXIV king ; in the x Buke, Chap. XXII.  
p. 193.

Constantine the Thrid, and LXXV king ; in the xi Buke, Chap. I.  
p. 197.

Malcolme the First, and LXXVI king ; in the xi Buke, Chap. II.  
p. 201.

Indulphe, the LXXVII king ; in the xi Buke, Chap. III. p. 203.

Duffus, the LXXVIII king ; in the xi Buke, Chap. IV. p. 205.

Culine, the LXXIX king ; in the xi Buke, Chap. VI. p. 211.

Kenneth the Thrid, and LXXX king ; in the xi Buke, Chap. VII.  
p. 213.

Constantine the Feird, and LXXXI king ; in the xi Buke, Chap. XI.  
p. 228.

Grime, the LXXXII king, in the xi Buke, Chap. XII. p. 230.

Malcolme the Secound, and LXXXIII king ; in the xi Buke, Chap.  
XIV. p. 237.

Duncane the First, and LXXXIV king ; in the xii Buke, Chap. I.  
p. 252.

Makbeth, the LXXXV king ; in the xii Buke, Chap. IV. p. 261.

Malcolme the Thrid, and LXXXVI king ; in the xii Buke, Chap. VII.  
p. 271.

Donald the Sext, and LXXXVII king ; in the XII Buke, Chap. XIII. p. 288.

Edgar, the LXXXIX king ; in the XII Buke, Chap. XIII. p. 288.

Alexander the First, and xc king ; in the XII Buke, Chap. XV. p. 293.

David the First, and xci king ; in the XII Buke, Chap. XVI. p. 296.

Malcolme the Fourt, and xcii king ; in the XIII Buke, Chap. I. p. 307.

William, the xciii king ; in the XIII Buke, Chap. IV. p. 314.

Alexander the Secound, and xciv king ; in the XIII Buke, Chap. XI. p. 333.

Alexander the Thrid, and xcv king ; in the XIII Buke, Chap. XVI. p. 344.

Johne Ballioll, the xcvi king ; in the XIV Buke, Chap. I. p. 360.

Robert the First, and xcvii king ; in the XIV Buke, Chap. VIII. p. 380.

David the Secound, and xcviij king ; in the XV Buke, Chap. I. (p. 409,) to the end thairof.

Robert the Secound, and xcix king ; in the XVI Buke, Chap. I. p. 451.

Robert the Thrid, and c king ; in the XVI Buke, Chap. IX. p. 468.

James the First, and ci king ; in the XVII Buke, Chap. I. to the end thairof, p. 496.

James the Secound, son to James the First, was the cii King of Scottis. He had gret trubill, certane yeris in the beginning of his regne, be conspiratioun of his principall baronis, aganis him : bot, at last, he dantit thaim all. And efter that he had rong xxiv yeris, and brocht all his subdittis to gret tranquillite and peace, he was slane at Roxburgh, be sklice of ane gun, that brak be ouirchargeing, the xvii day of August, the yeir of God, MCCCC LX. And for certane reasonable causis moving us, we have left the history unwritin, baith of James the Secound, Thrid, and Feird, quhill time mair ganand occur.

James the Thrid, son to James the Secound, wes the ciii king: richt different fra the chance and fortoun of his fader, in governance of his realme: for he began with gret tranquillite, with peace and justice; bot, at last, be conspiracy of the maist part of his baronis, aganis him, he was slane, the xi day of Juny, the yeir of God, MCCCCLXXXVIII.

James the Fourt, son to James the Thrid, was the civ king: and had his realme mony yeris in gret tranquillite, be equall ministratioun of justice, throw al partis of his realme: all theft, reif, and slauchter, dantit be his soverane justice. Quhil, at last, fortoun began to invy his gret felicite, and causit him to move weir aganis England, for the action allanerly of France, that he nicht, be his battal, draw the King of England out of France, quhilk was invading it, for the time, with maist awfull and dangerous weris; and come to the bordouris with ane hundreth thousand armit men. And efter that he had won the castell of Norame, with mony othir strenthis of the bordouris of England, he abaid xx dayis, but ony battall, quhill the two part of his army war skalit fra him. At last, ruscheand our feirsly on his eunimes, but ordour, was slane at Floddon, with mony of all his nobillis, the ix day of September, the xxv yeir of his regne, the yeir of God, MDCXIII.

James the Fift is the cv King of Scottis, regnand now, with gret felicite and honour, abone us; the maist noble and vailyeand prince that evir rang afore his time: quhom God conserve, and grant him grace to persevere in justice, with lang empire, and gud successioun of his body! Amen.

✚ ¶ **Their endis the Namis of the Kingis.**

THE  
Proheme of the History.

---

THE TRANSLATOURE SAYIS TO HIS BUKE.



How Marciall Buke, pas to the nobill Prince,  
King James the Fift, my soverane maist preclare.  
And gif sum time thow gettis audience,  
In humill wise, unto his grace declare  
My walkrife nichtis, and my lauboure sare :  
Quhilk ithandly hes for his pleseir tak ;  
Quhill goldin Titan, with his birnand chare,  
Hes past all signis in the Zodiak ;

Quhill besy Ceres, with hir pleuch and harrois,  
Hes fild hir graingis full of every corne ;  
And stormy Chiron, with his bow and arrois,  
Hes all the cloudis of the hevinnis schorne ;  
And schill Triton, with his windy horne,  
Ouirquhemlit all the flowand ocean ;  
And Phebus turnit under Capricorne  
The samin greis quhare I first began.



Sen thow art drawin sa compendius,  
 Fra flowand Latine into vulgar'prose ;  
 Schaw now quhat princis bene maist vicius,  
 And quhay hes bene of chevelry the rose :  
 Quhay did thair kīngrik in maist honour jois,  
 And with thair blud our liberteis hes coft ;  
 Regarding nocht to de amang thair fois,  
 Sa that thay nicht in memory be brocht.

Schaw, be quhat dangeir and difficill wayis  
 Our antecessouris, at thair uter nichtis,  
 Hes brocht this realme with honour to our dayis ;  
 Ay fechtand, for thair liberteis and richtis,  
 With Romanis, Danis, Inglismen, and Pichtis :  
 As curtas reders may throw thy proces ken.  
 Thairfore, thow ganis for na cative wichtis ;  
 Allanerly, bot unto nobill men,

And to sic personis as covettis for to heir  
 The vailyeand dedis of our progenitouris ;  
 And how this cuntre, baith in peace and weir,  
 Bene governit unto thir present houris :  
 How forey cheiftanis, in mony bludy stouris,  
 (As now is blawin be my vulgar pen,)  
 Maist vailyeandly wan landis and honouris ;  
 And, for thair virtew, callit nobill men.

For nobilnes sum time the loving is,  
 That cumis be meritis of our eldaris gone.  
 As Aristotill writis in his Rethorikis,  
 Amang nobillis, quhay castin thaim repone,  
 Mon dres thair life and dedis one be one ;  
 To mak thaim worthy to have memore,  
 For honour to thair prince or nation,  
 To be in glore to thair posterite.

## THE PROHEME OF THE HISTORY.

Ane othir kind thair is of nobilnes,  
 That cumis be infusion naturall;  
 And makis ane man sa full of gentilnes,  
 Sa curtes, plesand, and sa liberall,  
 That every man dois him ane nobill call.  
 The lion is sa nobill, as men tellis,  
 He cannot rage aganis the bestis small,  
 Bot on thaim quhilkis his majeste rebellis.

The awfull churle is of ane othir strind.  
 Thought he be borne to vilest servitude,  
 Thair may na gentrice sink into his mind,  
 To help his freind or nichtbour with his gud.  
 The bludy wolf is of the samin stude:  
 He feris gret beistis, and ragis on the small;  
 And leiffis in slauchter, tyranny, and blud,  
 But ony mercy, quhare he may ouirthrall.

This man is born ane nobil, thow will say,  
 And gevin to sleuth and lust immoderat;  
 All that his eldaris wan, he puttis away;  
 And fra thair virtew is degenerat:  
 The more his eldaris fame is elevat,  
 The more thair life to honour to approche,  
 Thair fame and loving ay interminat;  
 The more is ay unto his vice reproche.

Amang the oist of Grekis, as we hard,  
 Two kniehtis war, Achilles and Tersete;  
 That ane maist vailyeand, this othir maist coward.  
 Better is to be, sayis Juvinall the Poete,  
 Tersetis son, havand Achilles sprete,  
 With manly force his purpos to fulfill;  
 Than to be lord of every land and strete,  
 And syne maist cowart, cumin of Achill.

Man, callit ay maist nobill creature,  
Becaus his life maist reason dois assay,  
Ay sekand honour with his besy cure,  
And is na noble quhen honour is away.  
Thairfore, he is maist nobill man, thou say,  
Of all estatis, under reverence,  
That vailyeantly doith close the latter day,  
Of native cuntre, deand in defence.

The glore of armis and of forey dedis,  
Quhen thay ar worthy to be memoriall,  
Na les be wit than manheid ay procedis.  
As Plinius wrait in Story Naturall,  
Ane herd of hertis is more strong at all,  
Havand ane lion aganis the houndis foure,  
Than herd of lionis arrayit in battall,  
Havand ane hert to be thair governoure.

Quhen fers Achilles was be Paris slane,  
Amang the Grekis began ane subtell plede ;  
Quhay was maist nobill and prudent capitane,  
Into his place and armour to succede ;  
Quhay couth thaim best in every dangeir lede,  
And saif thair honour as he did afore :  
The vailyeant Ajax wan not for his manhede,  
Quhen wise Ulysses bure away the glore.

Manhede but prudence is ane fury blind,  
And bringis ane man to schame and indegence.  
Prudence but manhede cumis oft behind,  
Howbeit it have na les intelligence  
Of thingis to cum than gone, be sapience.  
Thairfore, quhen wit and manhede doith concurre,  
Hie honour risis with magnificence :  
For glore to noblis is ane groundin spurre.

Sen thow contenis mo vailyeand men and wise,  
 Than evir was red in ony buke, but dout ;  
 Gif ony churle or velane the dispise,  
 Bid hence him, harlot : he is not of this rout ;  
 For heir ar kingis and mony nobillis stout,  
 And nane of thaim pertenant to his clan.  
 Thou art so full of nobilnes per tout,  
 I wald nane red the, bot ane nobill man.

Thus to all nobillis sen thow art dedicat,  
 Schaw breifly how, be my gret deligence,  
 Ilk story be the self is seperat,  
 To mak thaim bowsome to thine audience.  
 Schrink nocht, thairfore, bot bide at thy sentence,  
 Sen thow art armit with invincible trewth.  
 Of gentill reders, take benivolence,  
 And cure of otheris na invy nor rewth.

Pas now to licht, with all thy sentence hie ;  
 Groundit, but feid or assentatioun,  
 In naturall and morall philosophie ;  
 With mony grave and prignant orisoun,  
 Maid to the reders eruditioun,  
 Be the renowmit Hector Boetius ;  
 Supportit oft with Scoticronicon,  
 To make thy mater more sententius.

Bring nobill dedis, of mony yeris gone,  
 Als fresche and recent to our memorie,  
 As thay war bot into our dayis done ;  
 That nobill men may have baith laud and glorie,  
 For thair excellent brut of victorie.  
 And yit, becaus my time hes bene so schort,  
 I think, quhen I have oportunitie,  
 To ring thair bell into ane othir sort.

Leir kingis to hait all peple vitius,  
And na sic personis in thair hous ressave;  
And suffir na servandis avaritiis,  
Ouir scharp exactionis on thair subditis craif;  
That not be done without thair honour saif:  
Sekand na conques be unlefeful wanis.  
Schaw mony reasonis, how na king nicht haif  
His baronis hartis and thair geir atanis.

Schaw how the kingis life and governance,  
The murroure of leving to his peple bene;  
For as he luffis, be his ordinance,  
The same maneris ar with his peple sene:  
And, thairfore, kingis hes na oppin rene,  
To use all pleseiris as thaim likis best.  
The hiear honour and office thay sustene,  
Thair vice is ay the hiear manifest.

Schaw now quhat kind of soundis musicall  
Is maist semand to vailycand cheveleris:  
As thondran blast of trumpat bellicall,  
The spretis of men to hardy curage steris;  
So singing, fiddling, and piping, not efferis  
For men of honour nor of hie estate,  
Becaus it spoutis swete venome in thair eris,  
And makis thair mindis al effeminate.

Be mony reasonis of gret experience,  
Schaw how na thing into this erd may be  
So gud, so precius, as ane virtuous prince:  
Quhilk is so nedefull to this realme, that we,  
But him, hes nocht bot deith and poverté.  
Schaw how na gard, nor armour, may defend  
Unhappy life and cursit tyranne,  
Gif thay continew, but mischevus end.



## THE PROHEME OF THE HISTORY.

Persuade all kingis, gif thay have ony sicht  
 To lang empire or honour singulare,  
 To conques favour and luf of every wicht,  
 And every wraungis in thair realme repare :  
 For quhen thair subditis are oppressit sare,  
 And findis na justice in thair actionis ;  
 Than risis nois and rumour populare,  
 And drawis the noblis in sindry factionis.

Schaw quhat punition, be reason of justice,  
 Efferis to thay unhappy creaturis  
 That nurisis kingis in corruptit vice.  
 And schaw quhat truble, quhat vengeance, and injuris  
 Continewaly into this realme enduris,  
 Quhen men obscure and avaritiis  
 Hes of the king the giding in thair curis,  
 And makis the nobillis to him odius.

Schaw how gret baronis, for thair evill obeisance,  
 Aganis thair prince, makand rebellion ;  
 Dejeckit bene fra thair hie governance,  
 And brocht to finall exterminion.  
 Schaw how na hous of gret dominion,  
 Na men of riches nor excellent nicht,  
 May lang continew in this region ;  
 Becaus the pepill may not suffer hicht.

Schaw how of kirkis the superflew rent  
 Is ennime to gud religion,  
 And makis preistis more sleuthfull than fervent  
 In pietuus werkis and devotion ;  
 And not allanerly, perdition  
 Of commoun weill, be bullis sumptuus,  
 Bot to evill prelatis gret occasion  
 To rage in lust and life maist vicius.

Schaw how young knichtis suld be men of weir,  
With hardy sprete at every jeoperdie,  
Like as thair eldaris bene sa mony yeir,  
Ay to defend thair realme and liberte ;  
That thay not, be thair sleuth and cowartre,  
The fame and honour of thair eldaris tine.  
Apprise ilk stait into thair awin degre,  
Ay as thay leif in morall discipline.

Schaw furth ilk king, quhill thow come to the prince  
That regnis now in gret felicite :  
Quhais anciant blud, be hie preeminence,  
Decorit is in maist excellent gre,  
Without compare, of hie nobilite ;  
With giftis mo of nature to him gevin,  
Gif nane abusit in his youtheid be,  
Than evir was gevin to noble under hevin.

Thocht thow pas furth, as bird implume, to licht,  
His gratius eris to my werke implore :  
Quhare he may se, as in ane murroure bricht,  
So notable storyis baith of vice and glore,  
Quhilk nevir was sene into his tounge afore ;  
Quhairthrow he may, be prudent governing,  
Als weill his honour as his realme decore,  
And be ane virtuous and ane noble king.

¶ *Finis.*

Heirefter followis the History and Croniklis of  
Scotland. Compilit and newly correckit, be  
the Reuerend and Noble Clerke, Maister  
Hector Boece, Channon of Aberdene.  
Translatit, laitly, be Maister Johne Bellenden,  
Archedene of Murray, Channon of Ros.  
At the command of the Richt Hic,  
Richt Excellent and Noble Prince,  
James, the v of that name, King of Scottis. And  
Imprentit in Edinburgh, be Thomas David-  
son, dwelling forneus the Frere Wynd.

# The First Buke.

## HEIR BEGINNIS THE FIRST BUKE OF THE CRONIKLIS OF SCOTLAND.

### Chap. First.

*How Gathelus, our first progenitour, left the land of Grece, and come in Egypt, and maryit Scota, dochter to King Pharo; and of his cuming to Spanye.*



FTER the maner of othir pepil, the Scottis, desirand to schaw thair beginning richt anciant, schawis thame, be this present Historie, descendit of the Grekis and Egyptianis. For, as auld cronickis beris, thair wes ane Greik, namit Gathelus, sonne of Cecrops, King of Athenes, otherwayis sonne of Argus, King of Argives. Gathelus, be his insolence, maid mony heirschippis in Macedone and Achaia, quhilkis war certane landis of Grece; and, becaus he couth not suffer the correctioun of freindis, he left his native cuntre of Grece, and come in Egypt, with ane cumpany of siclik young men, fugitivis, as he wes, fra thair cuntre. In this time rang in Egypt Pharo, the scourge of the pepil of Israel: quhais son, follow-and his faderis iniquite, wes drownit eftir, with all his army, in

the Reid Seis, be punitioun of God. Gathelus wes the more plesandly resavit in Egypt, that he apperit, be his cumpany, to support King Pharo aganis the Moris and pepill of Ind; quhilkis, be unprovisit and haisty incursionis, wastit all the landis and townis of Egypt to Memphis, the principall ciete of his realme. Thus had Pharo sene ane miserabill rewine of all his realme, war nocht he changit the governance of the empire of Egypt be industry of Moyses, to quhome, be command of God, the army of Pharo wes committit. Pharo, be supple of Gathelus, wan ane maist dangerus battall agane the Moris, and brocht thame to sa hie rewine, that he tuk thair principall ciete callit Meroy. Gathelus, eftir this happy victory, returnit in Egypt; and, becaus he wes ane lusty persone, strang of body, with greit spreit, he conquest baith the favour of the king and his familiaris. This plesand victory generit mair invy than glore to Moyses; for the Egyptianis hatit all the blud of Israell: and, thairfore, Moyses, knawing the hatrent of Egyptianis persewing him ilk day to the deith, fled out of Egypt in Inde, to saif his life. Gathelus, for his victorius and vailyeand dedis; wes maid generall-lieutenant to all King Pharois army; and, becaus he wes ane lusty person, semely, and of the blud riall of Grece, with prudent ingine, he gat King Pharois dochter, namit Scota, in mariage, with part of thay landis in heritage quhilk laitlie war tane be force of battall fra the pepill of Israel. For thir causis the Grekis began to rejos, seand thair capitane in sic familiarite with the prince; traisting thairthrow sumtime to have ane sicker dwelling-place in Egypt. Schort yeris eftir Pharo deceissit: eftir quhome succedit to the croun of Egypt his sonne, Bochoris Pharo, quhilk opprest the pepill of Israell with mair servitude and tyranny than did his fader. Apperit thus na esperance of liberte to the said pepill, quhill Moyses returnit furth of Ind in Egypt, to schaw the command of God to this Bochoris Pharo, for delivering of the said pepill out of servitude. Eftir this, Egypt wes punist with uncouth plagis, becaus thay held the prophecy of Moyses in derisioun. Thus war the Egyptianis sa astonist, that thay inquirit thair Goddis of remeid; be quhome wes answerit, the present plagis, quhilkis rang amang thame for that time, war na thing in respect of the terrible and grevous plagis quhilkis war appeirand to cum haistely on thame. Gathelus, astonist be this re-



spons, and seand the pepill presently tormentit with sorrowful plagis, tuk ferme purpos to leif Egypt, and erar to assailye the chance of fortoun for sum uthir dwelling, than to abide the manifest vengeance of Goddis; and, thairfore, maid provisioun of all thingis necessar to saling: and come out of the mouth of Nile, with his wife, his frendis, and servandis, Grekis and Egyptianis, for feir of the said plagis, the yeir fra the beginning of the warld, MMM.DC.XLIII. Eftir mekill wilsum travell be the seis Mediterane, he arrivit in the land of Numide; quhare he wes stoppit be the inhabitantis to land. Eftir this he pullit up salis, and, be lang and paneful travell, he arrivit in ane part of Spanye, callit than Lusican, quhilk wes eftir, be his arriving thair, callit Portingall, that is to say, the Port of Gathele. Quhay may surely affirme ane mater of sa greit antiquite? Gathelus, sowpit be lang travell, and havand na thing to refresche his cumpany, landit his folkis, to seik vittallis and uthir necessaris, to cumfort thaim eftir thair wery labour. In the meine time, the inhabitantis of that regioun gaderit aganis him with arrayit battal; nochttheles thay war discumfist, and put to flicht. Throw this victory, Gathelus and his folkis grew in esperance of gud fortoun; traisting, eftir sa lang and wilsum travel, to put end to thair labouris, and have ane stabill and permanent abiding in the said regioun. Eftir this victory, the inhabitantis maid ane band of peace with Gathelus, and assignit to him certane landis, quhair he suld have his dwelling in times cuming. Schort time eftir, he biggit ane toun upon the revair of Munde, quhilk wes callit that time Brathare, bot now it is callit Bersale. Nochttheles, the inhabitantis dredand that thir new pepill of oncouth blud suld increas haistely in riches and strenth beside thame, wes penitent of the contract be thame maid; and, thairfor, be assistance of thair nichbouris, arrayit thame in battall aganis Gathelus: and first send certane armit men to interrump thair bigginis; sine maid thame self reddy to cum in the staill. Gathelus, weill advertist that this battel movit aganis him nicht suffer na delay, arrayit his folkis to meit his ennimes; exhorting thame to do vailyeantly for thair livis and honour, and to have sicker esperance of victory, sen the battell wes to be led be thame, quhilkis war victorius, aganis thair vincust ennimes, quhilkis had na exercition nor knowlaige of chevalry. The inhabitantis seand thir

strangearis cum in batell with mighty curage and spreit, in ane on-couth cuntray, dred, gif thay war vincust in the said battell, thay suld be brocht to perpetuall servitude, and thairfor desirit Gathelus to ane commoning. In the quhilk thay gaif to him, be new appointment, certane landis in the north part of Spanye, callit now Galicia; for thay had in prophecy, ane strange pepill suld cum sumtime to dwell in thay boundis: and commandit him to pas with his pepill in the said partis, quhilkis suld be brukit be him but ony impedimentis in times cuming; and promittit, gif ony pepill hapnit to invade him, to assist to his support.

### Chap. Second.

*How Gathelus beildit the Ciete of Brigance, and namit all his Pepill Scottis. How he send his two Sonnis in Ireland. And of his deceis.*



HE band roborat in maner forsaide, Gathelus maid sacrifice, as the use wes in thay dayis, to his Goddis; sine past to the north partis of Spanye, and thair, with amite confiderit with the inhabitantis thair of, beildit ane toun callit Compostella; quhair he, resident in princely dignite, maid lawis, to caus his subdittis to lif togidder in justice. Eftir this, he callit all his pepill Scottis, for affectioun that he had to his wife callit Scota; on quhome he gat two sonnis, Hiber and Hemecus. The Spanyearis, na thing rejosng of the brudy spreding of Scottis, dred the samin sumtime to rise to thair displesour: thus tuke thay ferme purpos to bring the Scottis to uter distruction. Gathelus, knawing weil thair ordinance, brocht furth his pepil arrayit in battel. Than followit ane richt dangerus and doutsum battel; bot at last the victory succedit to Scottis. Nane of thir parteis war glaid of the chance that fell be this battel; for the maist forcy and vailyeant capitanis war slane on athir side. Thus war thay constranit on ilk side to seik peace; quhilk wes finalie tretit under thir conditionis: Baith thir

pepill in times cuming sal ceis thair weris, and every ane of thame sall life on thair awin lawis, and rejos the samin landis, but impeditis, quhilk thay possedit afore this last battel, but ony further persecutioun. Throw quhilk it hapnit, ane certane of thair pepill, be proces of time, to be send efter in Ireland. Sicker peace thus standing amang the two pepill, Gathelus, sittand in his chiar of merbill, within his ciete of Brigance, governit his pepill in justice. This chiar of merbill had sic weird, that it maid every land, quhair it wes found, native to Scottis; as thir versis schawis:

The Scottis sall bruke that realme as native ground,  
Geif weirdis failt nocht, quhair evir this chiar is found.

Throw quhilk hapnit, that the said chiar of merbill wes eftir brocht out of Spanye in Ireland; and out of Ireland in thay partis of Albion, quhilkis wer callit eftir Scotland. In this chiar all kingis of Scotland war ay crownit, quhil the time of King Robert Bruce: in quhais time, beside mony othir cruelteis done be King Edward Langschankis, the said chiar of merbill wes taikin be Inglismen, and brocht out of Scone to London, and put in to Westmonistar, quhare it remanis to our dayis

Gathelus, seand his pepil incres in Brigance with mair multitude than micht be sufficiently nurist, thocht mair expedient to bring his pepil to sum othir part, quhair thay micht be esely sustenit, than to violat his band of faith; and, thairfore, be counsal of prudent men, he send exploratouris, to spy gif ony landis war within the oceane see, to quhilkis he micht bring ane part of his pepill. For the fame was, fornens Spanye, to the north, wes ane Ile, inhabit with rude pepill, havand na lawis nor maneris. Sic thingis knawing to Gathelus, he brocht all the schippis he micht get to the nixt port, in quhilkis he put baith his sonnis, Hiber and Hemecus, with marinaris, weirmen, and othir thingis necessare thairto; and commandit Hiber, as admirall, to pas to the said Ile, quhilk is now callit Irland. Thir two sonnis of Gathelus pullit up salis, and, with fortunat windis, arrivit, the fift day efter, in the said Ile. And, efter that thay had landit thair folkis, thay affixit thair tentis on the nixt strenthis. The rude pepil of this Ile, astonist be cuming of thir weirmen, fled, with thair bestial and guddis, to thair cavernis. Hiber, eftir his cuming, send

certane armit men to se quhat pepill inhabit this Ile. The weirmen quhilkis war send for this effect, hapnit to cum upon the said pepill, fleand, as said is, with thair guddis; and, be aventure, ane part of thaim slew, and otheris brocht as prisoneris to thair admirall. Hiber, knowing be sindry signis the land plentuous, commandit, gif the pepil wald be plesandly subdewit, that na forthir invasion be maid on thaim. The pepil seand him mercifull, randrit thair self and thair guddis; and he ressavit thaim with sic benivolence, that he sufferit thame to increas with his pepil under ane name and lawis; and left his broder to governe thaim be his autorite and justice.

Sic thingis done, he maid sacrifice in the honour of his Goddis, to send felicite to his pepill: sine returnit in Spanye, levand behind him ane strang garison, with wiffis and barnis, to inhabit this land, and to keip the same under obeysance of his broder Hemecus. Hiber, at his returning in Spanye, fand his fader Gathelus deceissit. Eftir quhais deith he wes maid king; and began to eik the boundis of his empire; and wan sindry townis fra the Spanyeartis: havand with him at all timis ane strang gard of men; be quhais pissance and chevalry he dantit the pepill on sic maner, that he wes haldin in gret estimatioun and reverence amang the said pepill. Thus war thay constrainit to seik his peace.

After this last band of peace, the Scottis grew in Spanye, quhilk wes namit than Hiberia, fra Hiber, with sic amite, that baith the pepill grew under ane name and blude, with sic tender and freindly benevolence, that, but ony memoree of auld injuris, ilk man set him to defend his nichbour as his brothir or fader, baith in weir and peace. Of this Hiber descendit, be lang progressioun, ane gret posterite, efter him linealy succeding; amang quhom wer mony nobill and famous princis, as Metellius, Hermoneus, Ptolomeus, Hibertus, and Symon Brek.



## Chap. Third.

*How Hemecus governit Irland; and, how Symon Brek wes maid  
King eftir his deith.*



UHILL sic thingis war done in Spanye, Hemecus, quhill wes left, as said is, be his brother Hiber in Ireland, governit the same in gret felicitye, and namit the samin Hibernia, fra Hiber, quhill is callit in our langage, Ireland. This Ile wes inhabit in thay dayis be two pepill: the Scottis; and the auld inhabitantis of it, quhillis war gottin, as sum auctouris sayis, be giandis. Hemecus governit baith thir pepill in gret justice, havand na les respect to the seissoun, as the time occurrit, than to the maneris of the pepill undir his obeysance; knowing weil, na thing micht bring the pepill sonar under ane freindschip and band than sic doings: and yit he micht never bring thaim to that effect. Schort time eftir, Hemecus deceissit. Eftir quhais deth rais ane odious debait, quha suld be governour; every nation contending to have the lord of thair awin blude. Quhill at the last thay creat two governouris: betwix quhom rais continuall battall and slauchtir on athir side, throw ambitiou and birnand desire to be governour of the said Ile. Efter lang battallis, thir two pepill, brokin with sindry displesouris, war constrainit to tak peace: howbeit the same schort time indurit; ilk ane of thaim persewing othir with battal. And yit thay dwelt mony yeris togidder be interchange of weir and peace. Quhill at last the Scottis, brokin ilk day with mair injuris, send thair ambassatouris to Metellius, quhill wes that time regnand above the Scottis in Spanye; desiring, be thair lamentabill regrait, to have support aganis the auld inhabitantis of Ireland; and schawand thame ane wild pepill, impacient to suffir oncouth empire above thame; throw quhill the Scottis micht have na tranquilitye, without the said pepill wer mair haistelie dantit. The message of Scottis was the mair acceptabill to Metellius, that it concernit the commounweil baith of the Scottis of Spanye and Ireland, discending, be lang



progression of a linage and blud. King Metellius nocht refusit thair desiris; traisting the samin to succed na les to the honour and glore of himself, than to the proffet of his freindis: and, thairfore, send his thre sonnys, Hermoneus, Ptolomeus, and Hibert, with ane army of vailyeant men in Ireland; quhair thay, with richt dangerus battal, vincust the auld inhabitantis of the said Ile. Sic thingis done in Ireland, Hermoneus, the eldest brodir, returnit in Spayne; levand behind him his two brethir, Ptolomeus and Hibert, quhilkis governit the pepill of that land mony yeris eftir in gret tranquillite and justice, and maid lawis effering to the rite of thay dayis, and instrukit the preistis to mak sens and sacrifice to the Goddis, on the same maner as the Egyptianis usit. Thus incressit the pepill mony yeris eftir in gret felicite and riches. Bot, as the nature of men is, ouir greit prosperite engeneris evil maneris, and causis men to wirk frequent displesouris on thaimself, quhen thay find na ennimes to invaid thaim at hame; thir pepil, eftir lang peace, war devidit in two opinionis, contending for the governance and administratioun of this realme. Thir two partis had all uterlie distroit othir, war not thay war reconseld togidder be ane nobill man namit Thanaus, principal man undir the king; quhilk wes send afore as ambassatour to the said Ile, rejosng of the felicite succeding to his frendis, to caus thaim, be his prudent consultation, to increse togidder under a mind. This Thanaus, be his honest behavingis, was haldin amang thaim of gret prudence, havand bot newtrall affection to baith the partyis; and persuadit thaim, at thair conventioun, to remove all contentionis rising amang thaim, and to cheis ane, quhom thay thocht maist expedient, to be thair king, and be obeysant to him in all thair governance; for na thing nicht be in erd sa gud as ane gud king. Throw this persuasioun, the pepill tuk sic fervent desire to have ane king, that, all injuris beand reparit, thay commandit Thanaus to cheis him king quhom he thocht maist expedient. Than said Thanaus, " I " knaw your mindis sa devidit in sindry factionis, that na man that " is participant thairwith may be esaly your king. And, sen your " mindis is to have ane newtral person to regne above you, thair is " now in Spayne ane nobill man, of gret severite and justice, namit " Symon Brek, weill accustonit with your lawis, and linealy cuming " of Metellius, your ancient progenitour; quhais sonnys sumtime

“nocht only supportit you quhan maist danger occurrit, bot gover-  
 “nit you mony yeris efter, in gret tranquillite and justice; quhais  
 “posterite yit remanis amang you in maist honouris. I think this  
 “Symon maist abill to be your king.” The partyis, herand the name  
 of Symon Brek, war glad to have him king, becaus that name wes  
 haldin richt fortunat in thay dayis. And, but ony lang tary, thay  
 send thair ambassatouris in Spanye, to caus this Symon to cum in  
 Ireland, to ressave the crown thair of. Symon knowing, be degest  
 avisement, the entent of thir ambassatouris, providit ane flote of  
 schippis; and, finally, be prosper windis, arrivit in Ireland, quhair  
 he wes solemply ressavit, and crownit in the chier of merbill, quhilk  
 wes brocht out of Spanye as maist riche jowell in thay dayis.

Symon wes the first king that rang above the Scottis in Ireland,  
 fra the beginning of the warld, MMM.D.IV yeris; fra the flude of  
 Noy, MM.CC.VIII; fra the beginning of Rome, LX yeris; fra the em-  
 pire of Brutus in Albion, CCCC.LXXII yeris; before the incarnatioun  
 of God, DC.XCV yeris. This Symon governit Ireland in gret pros-  
 perite, be counsel namely of Thanaus; to quhome he gaif sindry  
 landis, liand in the south partis of Ireland, beside the rivere of Bir-  
 sus, quhilkis landis ar now callit Dowdale; quhair the said Thanaus  
 dwelt efter, with the pepill that he brocht with him out of Brigance,  
 the famous ciete of Spanye. Thir pepill war callit Brigandis; of  
 quhome efter, be proces of time, descendit mony nobill and vailyeant  
 men, quhilkis come efter with Fergus, the first King of Scottis, in  
 Albioun: be quhome all thay landis of Scotland, quhilkis ar now  
 callit Galloway, wes callit Brigance; quhais inhabitantis war fundin  
 ay full of manheid, and strangest ennimes to Romanis and Britonis,  
 as we sall efter heir.

This Symon governit Ireland in gud felicite, and deceissit, the  
 fourty yeir of his regne.

### Chap. Fourth.

*Of the gret Posterite of Scottis regnand in Ireland efter Symon Brek. Of the first cuming of Scottis and Pichtis in Albion ; and how the Pichtis war alliat with the Scottis.*



YMON deceissit, as said is, his sonne Fænduf wes maid king. Efter him, succedit Ethione. Efter Ethione, succedit Glaucus. Efter Glaucus, succedit Nathasyll. Efter Nathasyll, succedit Rothesay. This Rothesay wes the first king that send ony Scottis in the Ilis of Albion. The first Ile that he inhabit, he callit it Rothesay, fra his name. The remanent Ilis wer callit Hebreδες, fra Hiber, the eldest sonne of Gathelus. This Rothesay herand the deth of his fader, Nathasyll, returnit in Ireland ; quhair he, be generall vocis of the pepill, wes maid king.

The yeir that Scottis wer brocht out of Ireland in Albion, was fra the empire of Symon Brek in Ireland, cc.xvi yeris ; fra the beginning of the world, mmm.dc.xvii yeris. The Scottis cuming out of Ireland in this maner, spred in sindry Ilis of Albion, liand to the gret north thairof, and devidit thaim in sindry tribis. The first Ile that thay tuk possessioun of, as the Croniklis schawis, wes namit Ardgaell, fra Gathelus ; quhilk now, be corruptioun of langaige, is callit Ardgyle. The Scottis, devidit be this maner in sindry tribis, chesit certane capitaneis to every tribe, to governe thaim baith in time of weir and peace ; havand the name of thair capitane in sic reverence, that quha sa evir tuke the samin in vane war na les punist than thay had manesworne thair Goddis : attour that thay maid invocation thairto, quhen maist trubill occurrit ; as sum divinite war in the samin, to preserve thaim fra all danger. This consuetude perseverit, mony yeris efter, in the Ilis.

Nocht lang efter, a banist pepill, namit Pichtis, come furth of Denmark, to serche ane dwelling place ; and, efter that thay war inhibit to land baith in France, Britane, and Ireland, thay landit in Albion. Sum authouris sayis, thay come first in Orknay ; and, sone

efter, in Cathnes, Ros, Murray, Mernis, Angus, Fiffe, and Louthiane : and expellit all the pepill, that inhabit that region afore thair cuming. Thir pepill war callit Pichtis, outthir for thair semely personis, or ellis for the variant colour of thair clething ; or ellis thay war namit Pichtis, fra the Pichtis namit Agathirsanis, thair anciant faderis. In probation heirof, Orknay wes callit the auld realme of Pichtis. Siclike, the seeis betwix Cathnes and Orknay war namit Pentland Firth ; and all the landis, quhilkis ar now callit Louthiane, war callit than Pentland. Sum authouris sayis, thir Pichtis wer the residew of Hunnis, banist be Flemingis ; and come first in Britane to seik ane dwelling, quhair thay, be sorrowfull battall, lost Humber, thair king, be Lotrine and Camber, sonnys of Brutus, quhilk began the empire of Britane. This opinion is plesant, war nocht the dait of yeris is discordant to the history ; for Brutus, and his sonnys, war mony yeris afore thair cuming in Albion. Of thir Pichtis writis mony auld and recent authouris, to quhom applaudis Cornelius Tacitus, in the Life of the Romane Agricola ; quhare he namis the Scottis cuming of Spanyearthis, and the Pichtis, of Almanis. Of quhatsumever nation thay ben descendit, treuth is, efter thair cuming in Albion, thay war ane civil pepil, richt ingenious and crafty baith in weir and peace. Sone efter thair cuming in Albion, quhilk wes fra the beginning of the warld, MMM.DCCC.LXVII yeris, thay creat ane king to governe thaim in justice, and began to maik policy in bigging of munitionis, townis, and castellis. And, becaus thay knew al pepil but successioun abill to perische, thay send thair ambassatouris to the Scottis, desiring to have thair dochteris in marriage : and schew, thocht thay war of oncouth blude, thay suld nocht be vilependit, sen thay, with na les prudence than manheid, hes ouris set incredibill dangeris baith be see and land ; and now laitly conquest, throw benevolence of the Goddis, richt plentuous landis, with sic peace and tranquillite, that nane othir pepill may clame thaim be reason : confiding surely, gif the Goddis support thaim, be thair awin industry, to be equall to ony thair nichtbouris baith in peace and weir. Forthir, gif the Scottis condiscendit to thair honorabill desiris, it nicht fall, the two pepill increas togidder sa strang under ane blude, that thay nicht the better resist the fury of enimies, quhen evir it hapnit thaim to be invadit.



This legatioun wes unplesand, for the first time, to Scottis, think- and unworthy to have ony societe or mariage with ane uncouth and banist pepill; yit, be degest avisement, thay fand thair commoun weil wes nocht rising to sic pissance, that thay nicht resist the Britonis, quhilkis hatit thaim sen thair first beginning. Heirfor, to augment thair commoun weil, and to maik thaim the more strang aganis the Britonis, thay wer profoundly resolvit to have aliance with the Pichtis, and to gif thair dochteris in mariage, undir thir condicionis: Ilk ane of thaim sall reiose, in time cuming, all thay landis quhilkis thay rejosit afore the mariage. And to concurre togidder with thair hale pissance, als oft as thay war invadit be ennimes. He that maid offence to ony ane of thaim, sall be reput as enemy to thaim baith; and, als oft as the croun of Pichtis come in pley, the king to be chosen of the nerrest of the womannis blude. Thir condicionis plesand in all sidis, the Scottis gaif thair douchteris in mariage to the Pichtis.

### Chap. Fifth.

*How the Britonis, be thair quent slichtis, dissolvit the band of alliance betwix the Scottis and Pichtis. Of the trubill that fell thairthrow.*



HE Britonis tuk na litil suspitioun of this mariage, dredand gif thir two pepill inressit togidder under ane blude, to be sa strang in schort time, that nothir nicht the said Britonis for the time present, nor thair posterite, be sufficient to resist the pissance of thir two pepill; and, thairfor, tuke purpos to distroy thaim baith, and to invade thaim erar with fraudefull slichtis, than ony force of battall. And, to bring thair purpos to effect, thay devisit to rais sic seditioun betwix thir two pepill, that ilk ane of thaim sall invade othir with battall; and fra that ane war cleirly distroyit, this othir, brokin with the same weiris, nicht be the more facil pray to thaim. Yit, to covir thair



slichtis more secretly, thay supersedit thair intention for thre yeris, to avise gif proces of time nicht gif ony better occasioun to move battall. The same time, be affinite afore contrackit, the Pichtis multiplyt with ane brudy successioun : quhairthrow the two pepil grew in equal benevolence ; the Pichtis gevand thair industry to polcey and labour of thair handis, and settand thair ingine to beilde munitiounis and townis for defence and agmentation of thair common weil ; the Scottis exerceing thaim in craft of hunting, halking, and nurising of thair bestiall ; havand na othir riches bot it only that grew be thair store ; and war daily clothit in haberjone of mailye, with bow and arrowis, in ithand exercition ; als reddy, at all times, to defend thair livis, landis, and liberteis, as thair ennimes war to invaid thaim in set battall.

In the menetime the Britonis send thair ambassatouris to the Pichtis : havand gret wounder quhy thay preferrit the Scottis to thaim ; sen thay war ane pepil full of riches and glore ; quhais famous chevalry wes knawin in France, Almany, and othir sindry regionis be seeis and landis ; havand ane riche realme, repleit of all minis of mettall, sa plentuous of every frutis necessar to the use of man, that thay nicht do hie pleseir to thair nichtbouris, als weill in weir as peace. Be contrar, the Scottis war ane ondantit pepill ; havand rude and wild maneris, but ony humanite ; confiding mair in thair fuliche audacite, than ony prowes or vertew ; and dwelling amang strait and barrant montanis, and rejosin in na thing sa mekill as in murdir of men and beistis. Attour thay had be prophecy, that the Pichtis suld be exterminat and uterly distroyit be Scottis, without thay socht the more haisty remeid. For thir causis, desirit thaim to mak ane new band of confideracioun with Britonis, to that fine, the Scottis may be outhir expellit out of Albion, or ellis brocht to uter distruction ; be quhilkis doingis, thay nicht have incredibill commodite, rejosin baith thair realmes but ony feir, in times cuming. And, to gif thaim the more provocatioun to attempt this besines, thay promittit to support thaim with men, money, and vitallis, at thair pleseir.

This message had the more credit, that the Pichtis had afore ane vehement suspitioun, that the brudy spreding of Scottis suld sum time fall to hie dammage of thair posterite : als na thing nicht have

causit thaim mair to move battall aganis the Scottis, than the responsis of thair Goddis, concurrand to thair awin suspition. At last the Pichtis, be lang consultatioun, answerit, thay contrackit affinite with the Scottis mair of necessite than ony hartly frendship; quhais corruppit manneris war richt unplesand to thaim. Nocht-theles, sic oportunitie may cum, be proces of time, that thay might have sufficient occasion to move weir aganis the Scottis, as thay desir: for na thing might be sa acceptabill to thaim as the amite and fallowschip of Britonis; providing alwayis, the said Britonis maid thaim sufficient help, quhen time requirit, aganis the Scottis. Sic besines done, as occurrit for that time, the ambassatouris war despeschit.

Schort time eftir, the Pichtis, seikand occasioun to move battall aganis the Scottis, commandit, be general edict, na Scottis to be found within ony townis or landis of Pichtis, efter ane prefixit day, under pane of deth. The Pichtis, efter that this day wes our past, slew all Scottis that war found within thair townis, munitionis, and rounes, as brekaris of thair lawis. The Scottis, richt unpacient to sustene sa hie injuris, ceissit not quhill thay had slane als mony of the Pichtis as wer afore slane of Scottis. Incontinent, be haisty trubil rising in this maner, wes sa lamentable murdir on athir side, that ilk ane of thame slew othir at thair recounering, regarding nothir affinite, blude, time, nor place.

## Chap. Sixth.

*How the Pichtis and Scottis maid thair ordinance to invade othir be battell. How Ferquhard, King of Irland, send his sonne Fergus, with ane army, in support of Scottis aganis the Pichtis; and, How the said Fergus wes maid King.*



IN this maner the peace dissolvit, the Pichtis denuncit battell to Scottis: efter quhilk followit continual incursionis on athir side. Attour, that every thing suld be done erar be consultatioun than be immoderat hatrent, the Pichtis providit al thingis necessar for battell; in quhat wise, and be quhat capitanis it suld be led; quhiddir thay suld abide the cuming of thair enimes, or invade thame within thair awin rounis.

The same time, the Scottis convenit in Argyle; quhair the capitanes war devidit in sindry opinionis concerning this battell. Sum, accusing the tresonable slichtis of Pichtis, desirit to pas on thame haistely, as wrangus and manesworne pepill, brekaris of thair faith, quhais injure wes sa importabill, it nicht suffir na delay. Otheris thocht expedient, sen the mater wes wechty, to invade thair ennimes with hid slichtis and gud ordour. In the mene time, rais up ane agit man, and said in this maner: “ I knaw weill, my hartly frendis, “ this injure of Pichtis is sa intollerabill and odius, that we suld “ rusche haistely to harnes to revenge the same. Nochttheles, all “ besines bene weill done that procedis be gud avisement. And, sen “ ire avalis nocht but strenth, knaw weill, this battell that ye intende “ to move, sall be na les aganis the Britonis than Pichtis; howbeit “ ye have nocht that craft of chevelry nor pissance to resist thame “ baith. For thir causis, I thinke na besines sa profitable, as to “ send ambassatouris to our aunciant progenitouris of Ireland, to “ have thair support in this maist dangerus cais. Forther, sen plu- “ ralite of capitanis, as oft occurris, rasis seditioun, best is to chese “ ane amang us to have empire above the laif; under quhais coun- “ sel we sall fecht for our livis and liberteis, aganis ane fals and

“manesworne pepil, quhilk hes invadit us but ony occasioun of in-  
“juris.” This last opinioun wes maist apprisit.

The Scottis sone efter send thair ambassatouris in Ireland, com-  
plenand the wickit offence done be Pichtis, and desiring support.  
Ferquhard, quhilk wes that time King of Scottis in Ireland, sore  
movit, for displesure done to his frendis the Scottis in Albion, send  
his sonne Fergus, ane wise and vailyeant prince, to thair support;  
and, to give thame the more esperance of permanent and sonse weird,  
he send with thame the fatale chiar of marbill. Fergus wes the more  
plesandly ressavit be the Scottis, that thair commoun weil wes ap-  
prochand to hie dangear be ane maist perellus battall. Efter his  
cuming, ane counsell wes set in Argyle, in the quhilk Fergus said  
in this wise: “Maist vailyeant pepill, ye se ane cumpany of nobill  
“men, as ye desirit, cuming in this your regioun to resist the fury  
“of ennimes. The faderis are sa reuthfull to thair childrin, that  
“nane offence may be done to thair said childrin, bot the same re-  
“turnis to thair dishonour and schame. We ar dettit to you as fa-  
“deris to thair childrin; schaw you thairfor oure childrin, as we  
“sall schaw us your faderis. Lat ane injure be commoun to us  
“baith, sen we ar conjunit togidder in blud and amite; that glore  
“and honour may redound to us, and proffite unto you. Yit ane  
“thing bene necessar to avise; quhiddir the empire of ane or of  
“mony be mair profitabill for your commoun weill? And quhilk  
“of thame ye think maist profitabill sall be plesand to us, sen we,  
“be favoure and benevolence of Goddis, ar happely arrivit in your  
“regioun, and cuming only for your singulare weill and support.”

The counsel, efter this orison of Fergus, thoct pluralite of capi-  
tanis unprofitabill; and, thairfore, be degest consultatioun, condiscen-  
dit to be governit be empire of ane king; and this king to have  
empire on thame als weill in peace, as in every trubil appering aganis  
thair ennimes. Attour, to remove all suspitioun of hatrent, becaus  
ilk tribe desirit ane king of thair awin linnage, thay chesit Fergus,  
baith for his nobill blude, and othir his excellent virtuous, to be  
thair king; attour he wes sa provin in manheid and justice, that na  
capitane of the tribis micht be comparit to him. Fergus, chosin king  
in this maner, wes crownit in the fatale chiar of merbil, quhilk he  
brocht with him, be respons of Goddis, to stabill his realme in Al-



bion; and wes the first king that rang above the Scottis in that regioun: fra the beginning of the warld, MMM.DCCC.LXIX yeris; afore the incarnatioun of God, CCC.XXX yeris; fra the beginning of Rome, CCCC.XX yeris; fra the impire of Brutis in Britane, DCCC.XXXVII yeris.

### Chap. Seventh.

*How King Fergus come, with gret ordinance, aganis the Pichtis.  
How the dessait of Britonis wes discoverit baith to Scottis and  
Pichtis. And of the orison maid be Fergus to the King of  
Pichtis.*



HE Scottis rising on this maner, as we have schawin, in Albioun, King Fergus gave his hole mind and attendance to resist the injure of this battall, movit be the Pichtis; and, efter that he had callit all the capitanis afore him, he commandit every ane of thame to be reddy to pas with him, with careage hors, of fourty dayis vitallis: and, becaus he knew na thing mair odius than seditioun amang weirmen, he maid afald concord amang his pepill, and commandit thame to be obeysant to thair capitanis, with sic ordour that none of thame waver fra thair fallois, in aventure thay fall as pray to thair ennimes. Sic thingis done, he maid sacrifice in the honoure of his Goddis, according to the use that wes in thay dayis; praying the Goddis, to take vengeance of the party that gaif first occasioun of battall aganis othir; and to grant him sic felicite in his just defence, that victory may succede to him but hevy dammage of his pepill.

Qubill the Scottis war at thair besines, the Pichtis assemblit ane army, with na litill gareson of Britonis concurrant to thair support. Apperit, on athir side, ane wickit and unnaturall bergane betwix two pepil, freindis and cieteyouris, faderis and sonnys. The Pichtis come first in the Scottis landis: aganis quhome, with na les curage than manheid, went Fergus, with anciant armis displayit in forme of



baner; in quhilk wes ane reid lioun, rampand in ane feild of gold, with thunderand steir, awfully dingand his bak, as is the gise of the gentill lioun, quhen he enforsis him to wraith. Fergus wes the first that bure thir armis in Albion; and, efter him, thay war ay the armes of all kingis discending of his linnaige, to our dayis.

Quhill the Scottis and Pichtis wer arrayit in otheris sicht, the army of Britonis stude arrayit on dreich, nocht far fra thame, devisand be quhat slichtis thay nicht distroy thame baith; with ferme purpos, quhen the Scottis and Pichtis wer jonit togidder, and the tane of thame discomfist, than the party victorius suld finaly be distroyit be thair fresche army: and quhen thir two pepill war distroyit be this slicht, the Britonis nicht rejose baith thair realmes in Albion, but ony feir, in times cuming. This subtel slicht wes discoverit to Fergus be ane banist Briton. Throw quhilk it hapnit, that baith the armyis, movit na les be feir of ennimes than be thair awin propir dammage, supersedit battall certane dayis.

In the meine tme, King Fergus desirit ane commoning with the King of Pichtis, apon hie materis, concerning na les the weill of Pichtis than of Scottis. The King of Pichtis refusit nocht the commoning, and met King Fergus with ane few cumpany of his nobillis; the oistis standing on ilk side, arrayit. Than said Fergus in this maner: " Oftimes riche townis, and pepill contending for the supe-  
 " riorite, hes brocht thaimself to miserabill rewine, and thair enni-  
 " mes to hie commoditeis; quhilk thingis sall nocht fail to cum on  
 " us, gif we happin to fecht this day. The occasion of battell, quhilk  
 " ye movit first aganis us, desiris nocht at this time to be discussit,  
 " lauchfull or injust; howbeit, the Scottis hes sustenit of your pe-  
 " pill importabill injuris but ony redres. Yit, gif it be leful erar to  
 " schaw the verite than ony flurisand wourdis, the desire of king-  
 " doume, and slicht of Britonis, hes movit you to battall. Ye wald  
 " nevir have invadit us, your faderis, war nocht the Britonis, oure  
 " commoun ennimes, hes devisit the same, be quent slichtis, to baith  
 " our mischeiffis. And quhidder thir thingis be trew or fals ye may  
 " best discus; howbeit na reasone may perswaid me to beleif ony  
 " othir, bot this battall sal cum, gif we continew, to the irrecover-  
 " able dammage of us baith. Gif we fecht, quha doubtis bot vic-  
 " tory sall be uncertane? for we ar of equal pissance. Suppose we

“ be vincust, quhilk may nocht succaid but undemus murdir of you,  
 “ than sall ye be ane facill pray to your ennimes; bringand thaim  
 “ to triumphe and honour, and yourself to misire and servitude.  
 “ Quhat thing may be more odius, or more detestabill, than the  
 “ sonnis to invade thair faderis? We ar faderis; ye, our sonnis:  
 “ your sonnis ar our nepotis: and, quhidder we be vincust or vic-  
 “ torious, ye sall defoull yourself with maist terribill offence aganis  
 “ the Goddis. Heirfor, lat us commoun of peace, as nichtbouris and  
 “ freindis alliat togidder; and consider quhat infinite dammage this  
 “ battall sall do to us, and quhat commodite to our commoun enni-  
 “ mes. And gif ony injure be done be Scottis to your pepill, it sall  
 “ be redressit be me; to that fine, that we, quhilkis ar of ane proxi-  
 “ mite and blude, may evade the quent slichtis devisit be Britonis  
 “ to baith our dammage, and invade our ennimes with the samin  
 “ tressoun that thay devisit for us; that reason and justice may seme  
 “ mair pissant amang us, than hatrent or invy: for, I beleif, na  
 “ othir way is sa souir to stabill our pepill in this Ile of Albion.”

### Chap. Eighth.

*Of sindry consultationis maid be Pichtis; and how thay war re-  
counseld with the Scottis.*



HE King of Pichtis answerit to thir wordis of Fergus,  
 that he nicht nocht, be his private autorite, dissolve  
 thingis done be publik counsell of his nobillis. This  
 battall, that he movit, wes decernit be publik, and nocht  
 be private counsell: nochtheles, he wald gladly avise with his no-  
 billis, quhidder thay wald haif weir or peace; and sal convene to  
 the same place, with thair mind.

Als sone as baith the kingis returnit to thair tentis, the King of  
 Pichtis rehersit the wourdis of Fergus afore his counsell, and schew  
 how the same day behuvit thaim nocht only to have fochtin aganis  
 the Scottis, bot aganis the tressoun of Britonis; and, to verify his  
 entent, he brocht certane Britonis in testimoniall thair of: attour the

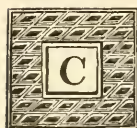
inopportune sollicitation of Britonis, desiring battal aganis Scottis, maid the slicht more credibill to Pichtis. The Pichtis, avising unprudently in this mater, war devidit in two opinionis. Sum allegit, the amite of Scottis wes to be refusit; for thay have persewit the Pichtis with sa mony slauchteris reiffis, the same may nocht be dewly redressit. Heirfor, all thair alliance, all thair condicionis and peace, aucht to be contemnit; for sic thingis may nocht indure, quhare reif, injure, and hatrent, ar more estemit, than faith, reason, and justice. Otheris said, the amite of Scottis wes baith honest and necessare; becaus thay did mony pleseiris afor to Pichtis, and movit na battall quhil thay war first injurit. And, sen the Britonis war common ennimes baith to Scottis and Pichtis, force is to thaim to be reconseld, or ellis to be schamefully douning out of Albion. Attour the affinite and blude rising betwix thaim suld put end to thair weris; sen na thing is more detestabill to the Goddis, nor abhominabil to mortal creaturis, than thay pepil to move battall aganis othir, quhilkis ar alliat under ane commixtioun of blude. Thairfor aperit na thing sa gud to Pichtis as to have freindschip of Scottis; les than thay purposit, to rendir falset, hatrent, and evil dedis, for faith, luf, and gud thankis. Eftir that mony of the Pichtis war gevin to peace, ane of the Pichtis, ennemy to Scottis, becaus his broder wes slane in this last battall, said on this wise: "How is this  
 " blind contentioun rising amang you, maist vailyeant men? Have  
 " ye nocht sufficient experience of the falset and cruelte of Scottis?  
 " Delite ye ony forther to assailye, gif ony band may be kepit with  
 " unfaithfull pepill, full of fers ingine and cruelte, borne to our uter  
 " mischeif? Beleif ye the respons of our Goddis be vane? Suld  
 " we nuris this pestilencius vennome, to the finall perdicious baith  
 " of us and our realme? This bludy and tressonabill pepill, gif our  
 " Goddis schawis the verite, sall nocht fail to rais amang us ane  
 " flame that sall nevir be sloknit." To this wickit man answerit ane  
 " othir Picht, and said, "Ye suld nocht be movit be the respons of  
 " Goddis: for gif thay be of determit verite, thay may nocht be  
 " eschewit; gif thay be fals, thay suld nocht be dred. Heirfor all  
 " injuris, done be ony slicht and tressoun of athir partyis, suld be re-  
 " movit: and, to saif oure honestie, lat nevir oure aith and band be  
 " brokin in oure defalt; becaus we have sufficient experience in our

“ dayis, quhat notabill vengeance bene takin apon mony nobil and  
 “ vailyeant campionis, quhen thay had nocht thair faith nor Goddis  
 “ in reverence. Lat us returne to the band of Scottis, sen the same  
 “ may nothir be dissolvit but offence of Goddis, nor yit but incre-  
 “ dibill schame; sa that we may persevere in kindnes, but offence  
 “ othir to the immortall Goddis, or our tender freindis: als nature,  
 “ the moder of every thing, constranis us to luffe our faderis, for  
 “ thay luffe our barnis, thair nepotis. It is nocht necessar, thair-  
 “ for, to have ony battal; bot erar to luffe our freindis, that we be  
 “ nocht in derisioun to our ennimēs.” Als sone as thir wordis war  
 said, the wiffis of Pichtis, quhilkis followit the army for luffe of thair  
 husbandis, fell on kneis, with ruthfull teris, praying thair husbandis  
 to violat nocht thaimself with schameful slaughter of thair faderis:  
 “ It is better to us and our barnis,” said thay, “ to de ony maner  
 “ of deith, than to se our faderis and husbandis slayand othir, with  
 “ cruell wondis.” The Pichtis, movit sum part be luffe of thair  
 wiffis and barnis, sum part be reverence of thair Goddis, condiscen-  
 dit to have peace with the Scottis, under thir conditionis: Redres  
 maid on ilk side. The Britonis, quhilkis wer movaris of this battall,  
 sall be haldin ennimes to baith the pepil. All othir chargis to be at  
 the plesoir of the two kingis, quhidder thay list to strength peace  
 under the auld conditionis or new; and, gif thir conditionis war nocht  
 sufficient to roborat the peace, with quhat othir conditionis the two  
 princis thocht maist ganand. Sone eftir, ane day was set to renewe  
 the peace. The Britonis, quhilkis come in support of Pichtis,  
 heirand this concord, returnit hame, dredand the samin to succede,  
 to thair litill proffet. On the day affixit, the Scottis and Pichtis war  
 agreit on al debatis, efter the tenour of the auld band, with thir new  
 conditionis: Ilk ane of thir two pepil sal leif content of thair awin  
 rowmes; supporting othir, als weill in honour as in profit, quhen  
 hie and diffcil chargis occurris, aganis thair ennimes. The injuris  
 done to ony ane of thaim, sal be reput commoun to thaim baith;  
 and, quhen it wes necessar to thaim to fecht aganis thair ennimes,  
 baith the pepill sall convene togidder under ane mind and ordinance.  
 The peace beand roborat in this maner, baith the kingis returnit  
 hame.



## Chap. Ninth.

*How Coyll, King of Britonis, was slane, and his Army discomfist  
be Scottis and Pichtis.*



COYLL, King of Britonis, herand at York, the Scottis and Pichtis confiderat in maner foresaid, was richt sorrowfull; for he dred thir two pepil to increas sum time to his hie displeseir. Astonist heirof, and nocht knowing be quhat ingine he nicht distroy thaim baith, for his slichtis afore come to litill effect; he tuke ferme purpos to have experience, gif the Scottis, quhome he held for ane vagabound and banist pepill, of uncouth blude, strang in murdir of bestis, durst fecht aganis his pepill, full of glore and chevalry. Yit he supersedit this mater for two yeris, to se gif ony proud insolence nicht gener new divisioun amang thaim, quhairthrow he nicht find sum better occasioun to invaid thaim be battall; for he understude na sickir tranquillite nor peace nicht be had amang his pepill, during the fallowschip of Scottis and Pichtis under ane concord and blude. Heirfor, to rais sum occasioun of battal betwix thir two pepil he send ane cumpany of Britonis, in few nowmer, to invade the bordouris of Pichtis with frequent heirschippis: and quhen the same, be reason of trewis, was desirit be Pichtis to be reparit, the Britonis schew thaim nevir accustomed with sic corruppit dedis of thift; and said, the same wes done be Scottis allanerly. At last the ground of this slicht was so serehit and brocht to licht, that the same was provin cleirly on the Britonis; throw quhilk the two confiderat pepill tuke sik hatrent aganis the said Britonis, that, efter incredibill slauchter of thair pepil, thay invadit thair realme, and brocht ane multitude of bestiall out of the samin.

King Coyll, impacient to suffer this outrage, maid him to wirk that thing be force of armes, quhilk he nicht not do afore be slicht of ingine: and assemblit sone efter ane huge nowmer of pepil, with gret ordinance of battall; and entrit at the west bordouris of Scot-



land, and affixit his tentis on the river of Dune; invading the countre with continuall heirschippis, fire, and slauchter. Fergus, weill advertist of thair doingis, commandit the bestiall and guddis to be drevin to the montanis; and, with thaim, commandit the wiffis, barnis, and othir febill creatouris, to pas to the strenthis of the said montanis, to eschew the fury of ennimes. Sic thingis done, he commandit, be general proclamationis, al fensabil men to be reddy, in thair best avise, to resist thair ennimes. Howbeit he desirit na thing mair than to prolong the battal; that, be lang tary and penurite of vittallis, his ennimes nicht be wery and irkit.

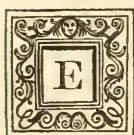
In the mene time, ane Scot tresonabillly fled to King Coyll, and discoverit to him every thing devisit be King Fergus. Incontinent, King Coyll send an Britonis to take the said pray of bestiall fra the montanis; and that he nicht, be untraist suddante, the more cruelte exerce, he maid his army reddy to invade the Scottis on the nixt morrow. Sic thingis schawin to Scottis and Pichtis be thair scurriouris, apperit na litill affray in thair army. Than Fergus tuke consultatioun of his nobillis quhat was best to be done. Mony of thaim, astonist be multitude and curage of Britonis, dissentit to battall. Utheris exhortit him thairto; saying, thay war ane sufficient army, and determit to fecht for defence of thair wiffis, barnis, and liberteis, to the deith, sa that he wald assist to thaim. Attour it wes na les necessar than honorabill to assailye the chance of battall; for victory is gottin erar be manheid and prudence, than ony multitude of pepill. Efter divers opinionis, it was concludit, that Fergus, with his folkis, at the first vigill, sall set on the wache of Britonis; and the King of Pichtis, with his folkis, sal pas ouir the water of Dune, quhare the army of Britonis lay, to cum haistely on thair bakkis, als sone as thay heir the nois ryis be Scottis. Sic thingis done with manheid and prudence, to submit the residew to the chance of fortoun.

The samin nicht, Fergus, as was devisit, slew, be gret jeoperdy, the wache of Britonis; and nocht only braik thair trinschis, bot enterit fersly within thair tentis, afore King Coyll was advertist of his cuming. Incontinent rais ane terribill clamour amang the Britonis, fast raschand to harnes, to resist this haisty effray; quhen suddanly the Pichtis come on thair backis, suspekand na thing les than sic ir-

ruptioun of ennimes. The Britonis, nocht weill walkinit of thair sleip, war invadit on al sidis, and discomfist or thay micht cum to array; amang quhome King Coyll, unwarly kepit be his nobillis, was slane. In memory heirof, the place quhare he was slane was namit efter Coyll; quhilk regioun remanis yit under the same name, or, litill different thairfra, callit now Kyle.

### Chap. Tenth.

*Of King Fergus orison to his Nobillis; and how the Crown of Scotland was tailyet to him and his successouris.*



FTER this victory, the Scottis and Pichtis, with displayit baner, convenit on ane litill mote. The residew of Britonis, quhilkis war eschapid fra this battall, be thair fleeing under nicht, herand thair king slane, and thair army discomfist, send ane herald to desire peace. The Scottis and Pichtis, more insolent efter this victory than afore, rebutit the Britonis, and denyit peace: nochttheles the two kingis, quhilkis knew weill the gret pissance of Britonis, condescendit to thair peticionis. Quhen the pray and spulye of this battall was equally devidit amang the two pepil, efferring to thair manheid and prowes, the two kingis returnit hame.

Sone efter, Fergus convenit his nobillis in Argyle, and said in this wise: “Ye se, maist vailyeant campionis, how ye, be speciall favour  
“of Goddis, hes vincust your ennimes, and brocht your landis, be  
“wisdom and manheid, to sickir peace; and, thocht ye war un-  
“equale baith in nowmer and pissance, yit the Goddis hes bene sa  
“propiciant, that ye have vincust the ennimes quhome ye maist  
“dred in this erd. Ye have put down your noisum ennime, with  
“al his army, and ar richit with thair spulye. Thay that contem-  
“nit you afore, as febill, banist, and unarmit pepill, hes reuthfully  
“desirit your peace, mair necessar than honest to thaim; to be ane  
“notabil exampill in timis cuming, how unsicker is to confide in ony  
“vane pissance of man. We know weill, how riche, how pissant

“ ar the Britonis baith be see and land : and the more riche thay ar,  
 “ the more schame redoundis to thaim, and the more glore to us ;  
 “ sen thay ar vincust be us, quhome thay held maist vile and febill.  
 “ We have usit our victory but ony cruelteis. We have vincust  
 “ our ire, to that fine, that the Goddis, quhilkis hes gevin us sa proud  
 “ victory, sall nocht find, be our perversit insolence, ony occasion to  
 “ bring us sum othir time in derisioun of ennimes ; sen we nocht  
 “ exercit our hatrent on thir discomfist Britonis, fleing oure fury be  
 “ dirknes of nicht, bot sufferit thaim to depart with our mercy and  
 “ peace. Thus may we evidently se, that our wiffis, barnis, liber-  
 “ teis, and landis, quhilkis our ennimes intendit to have bereft us,  
 “ ar saiffit allanerly be favour of Goddis. Restis now to avise, be  
 “ prudent consultation, how we may eschew all dangier appering  
 “ in times cuming. Quhilkis thingis sall succede the better, gif we  
 “ have the Goddis in reverence ; kepend our band to Pichtis and  
 “ Britonis as we promittit ; continewing the realme in the samin go-  
 “ vernance as ye devisit at our first cuming : providing allwayis,  
 “ that we remove seditioun, scurrilite, and avaricius leving, with  
 “ sic thingis as may induce hatrent amang you. Forthir, to maik  
 “ ilk persone leif on his awin, it war best to part all the landis of  
 “ this regioun be generall consent ; swa that every ane of us, con-  
 “ tent of his awin, may have na occasioun to injure his nichtbour ;  
 “ for sic thingis sall caus us to increas in glore and honour to oure  
 “ freindis, and dredour to our fayis. And wald God I nicht se you,  
 “ my deir pepill, rising in sic vertew afore my deid, that I nicht,  
 “ with sickir esperance, schaw to your eldaris the weil appering to  
 “ thair posterite.”

Quhen Fergus had endit this orisoun, the pepill schew thaim red-  
 dy to fulfill his desire ; and nevir to be governit, in times cuming, bot  
 be the empire of ane king ; and nane to regne above thaim bot King  
 Fergus blude : and, failyeing thairof, prayit the Goddis to send na  
 les vengeance on thaim, and thair posterite, than fel sum time on  
 thaim in Egypt and Spanye, for transgressioun of the command of  
 Goddis. King Fergus gat charter and evidence of the crown of  
 Scotland to him and his successouris in this sort ; quhilkis charteris  
 war gravin in merbill, with imagis of beistis in forme of letteris, as

was usit in thay dayis; sine gaif the samin to maist religious preistis, to be observit in thair tempillis.

### Chap. Eleventh.

*How King Fergus partit the Landis of Scotland amang the Nobillis of his Realme. And of the Maneris of Brigandis.*



SHORT time efter, quhen the Scottis had refreschit thaim with hunting and othir exercitionis, King Fergus conuenit his nobillis, and said in this maner: “ Now is the  
“ time, maist prudent faderis, sen our realme is stablit  
“ in gud peace, to part the landis of this realme, quilk ye reiose now  
“ but ordour, amang you, and otheris that come with me out of Ire-  
“ land in this regioun. To do this more plesandly, ar to be chosin  
“ VII newtrall men amang us; quhilkis sall deuide this realme with  
“ sic reasone and prudence, that quhare the landis ar maist plentu-  
“ ous, sal be gevin the les; and quhare the samin ar barrant, to be  
“ gevin the more.”

The pepil, weil applesit of this counsell, chesit sevin prudent men; quhilkis considerit the boundis of Scotland, and deuidit the samin, with marchis equally refering thairto. Thir prudent men returnit, the fourt moneth efter, to Argyle, quhare King Fergus was resident for the time: in quhais presence all the landis of Scotland war casin in cavill amang the nobillis thairto. Be the first cavill, fell to Cornath, capitane, and his tribe, the landis of Cathnes, liand fornens Orkney, betwix Dummisbe and the watter of Thane. Secundly, to Capitane Lutork, fell the landis betwix the watter of Thane and Nes, callit now Ros. This Lutork come with ane band of vailyeant men out of Ireland with King Fergus in Albion. This land of Ros lyis, in breid, fra Cromarte to the mouth of the watter of Lochte. In this countre was the famous castel of Urquhart; of quhilk the rewinous wallis remanis yit, in gret admiratioun of pepill. Thridly, to Capitane Warroch, fell the landis liand betwix Spay and Nes, fra the Almane to the Ireland seis. The pepil of this land war callit



Wares, be name of thair capitane; bot, sone efter, thay war sa sedicious, that thay war dounge out of that countre, and the Murrayis brocht in thair roumis; be quhom the landis war callit Murray land. Be the nixt cavil, fell to Capitane Thalys, the landis of Boyne, Ainye, Bogewall, Gariot, Formartine, and Bowquhan. Thir landis war callit than undir ane name, Thalia, be name of thair capitane. Be the nixt cavil, fell to Capitane Martach, all the landis of Marre, Badeyenoch, and Lochquhaber. Be the vi cavil, fell to Capitane Nouance, the landis of Lorne and Kyntier, with the hillis and montanis thair of, liand fra Marre to the Ireland seis. Be the vii cavill, fell to Atholus, the landis of Athole; for he was descendit of the Scottis of Spanye, and come out of Spanye in Ireland, and out of Ireland he come with Fergus in Scotland; ane vailyeant man, and weill provin in fatis of armis. Be the viii cavill, fel to Creones and Epidithis, two capitanis of tribis, the landis of Strabraun and Braidawane, liand west fra Dunkeld. Be the nint cavill, fell to Capitane Argathelus, the landis of Argyle. His folkis war namit Argathelis, fra Gathelus, thair first progenitour; bot now thay ar callit, Men of Argyle. Be the x cavill, fel to Capitane Lolgonas, the landis of Linnox and Clidisdail. Be the xi cavill, fell to Capitane Silurch, the landis of Siluria; quhilk regioun is now devidit in Kyle, Carrik, and Cuninghame, quhais pepill war richt engenius and fers. Be the xii cavill, fell to the Brigandis, the landis of Brigance, now callit Galloway.

Thir Brigandis war ane vailyeant pepill; and war devisit thairfor to dwell neir the Britonis, to resist thair incursionis, gif ony occurrit. Ane certane of thir Brigandis wes banist efter for thair seditionis fechtung; quhilkis confiderat thaim with ane cumpany of Pichtis, outrageous and wickit limmeris as thay war, and inhabit thay landis quhilkis ar now callit Annandale, and put the Britonis out of the same: quhais posterite grew sa full of fury, that thay invadit thair nichtbouris with all maner of cruelteis. The women past with thair husbandis to battall, and faucht mair cruelly than did the men; havand na mercy quhare thay war victorius. Thay eschamit to be takin in battall; and rejosit to de fechtand. Quhen thay saw thair freindis vexit with lang and irrecoverabill malideis, that thay sall nocht de in thair bed, thay slew thaim be the



swerd. This land of Annandale hes ane strait entres, and circulit on every side outhir with seis, mosis, or sinkand sandis; throw quhais difficill enteres hapnit, that the inhabitantis thair of dwelt in cavernis, levand on thair incursionis and thift; regarding nouthir the empire of Scottis, Pichtis, nor Britonis; and had continual wachis, als weil be nicht as day. Als sone as thay war advertist of ony invasouris, thay drew thaim pertly to thair wappinnis; on sic maner, that quha abstenit, or cowardly absentit thaim, quhen sic chargis occurrit, was efter slane be thair wiffis at thair returning. Thay that sufferit thaimself to be taikin as prisoneris, war haldin ay sklavis to thair wiffis, quhill thay, be sum honest wassalege, recoverit thair honour. Thair wiffis war commoun; the barne wes haldin his son, to quhome he was maist like in vissage.

Al othir boundis of Scotland war than in the Pichtis handis; as the Meirnis, Angus, Steremond, Gowry, Stratherne, Perth, Fiffe, Striveling, Callender, Calderwod, Louthiane, Mers, Tevedale, with othir the remanent dailis, and the Scheref dome of Berwik.

### Chap. Twelfth.

*How King Fergus maid concord betwix the Princis of Ireland; and how he perist, returnand be the Ireland Seis.*



WHEN Fergus had devidit the landis of Scotland in this maner, and brocht the same to sicker peace, he tuke ferme purpos to nuris his pepill in gud maneris: and, to do all thingis the better, he began at justice; but quhilk na pepill may leif togidder. He maid sic lawis to punis theft and slauchter, that all the bestiall and gudis of Scotland war saiffit in the feildis but ony trubill. Efter this, he beildit the castel of Berigone in Lochquhaber. This castell standis in the west part of Scotland, fornent the Ilis; quhare he exercit his lawis to that fine, that his pepil nicht be drawin thair the more esaly, for exercitioun of justice. He past the remanent of his dayis in tranquillite and peace with his nichtbouris, the Britonis and Pichtis; gevand his in-

gine, to caus his pepill incres togidder under ane benevolence and concord. Quhill, at last, he was chosin ane juge-arbitrall, to discus certane hie debates falling amang his freindis of Ireland.

Sone efter, the said Fergus, accompanyit with ane certane of his nobillis, past in Ireland, and pacifyit thaim of all debattis. This wes the last act he did; for, efter the agreance, this nobill prince, returning hame throw the Ireland seis, be ane wickit tempest was drevin apon ane crag; quhare he perist, with all his nobillis, the xxv yere of his regne. In quhais memory, the crag, quhare he perist, is namit yit Crag Fergus.

In his time rang Esdaill, King of Britonis: and Cruthneus Cameloun, King of Pichtis; quhilk biggit efter, apone the watter of Carron, the ciete of Camelon, the principall chimmes of Pichtis; quhare sum time wes ane gud havin, to ressave schippis contrar the winter stormes, thocht it be alterit now, be negligence of pepill, and turnit in ane medo. This ciete of Camelon resistit, mony yeris efter, to the Britonis and Romanis; quhill, at last, Kinneth, King of Scottis, quhilk put the Pichtis out of Albion, brocht it to uter subversioun. This Cruthneus biggit the town and castell of Edinburgh, namit sum time the Madin Castell; for al the nobil wemen of Pichtis war nurist within this castell, in crafty labouris of thair handis, quhil thay war reddy to mary.

And sa endis heir the First Buke of thir Croniklis: in the quhilk we have sene, how the Scottis first began; and how Fergus was the first king that brocht justice and lawis amang thaim. Now we will schaw the residew of the kingis succeding efter him, in the same ordour as thay rang.

# The Secund Buke.

---

## HEIR BEGINNIS THE SECUND BUKE OF THIR CRONIKLIS OF SCOTLAND.

---

### Chap. First.

*How the Scottis, efter King Fergus deith, contendit for the Crown ;  
and how it was inhibit, that young Childrin sall be Kingis.*



FERGUS on this maner perist, ane day was set be the counsel to cheis the king. Quhen the day was cumin, the nobillis war devidit in sindry opinionis ; for Fergus had two sonnys, of young and tender age. Sum men thocht, it wes ane odious thing, baith to God and man, to defraude the ayris of King Fergus, thay beand pupillis, of thair faderis heritage ; putting his hous to sic uter dishonour and skaith ; he doing, in his time, sa mony nobill actis, for thair commoun weill. Otheris said, young barnis war unabill for ony publik administration. For ane king suld be ane prudent man ; havand wisdom and manheid, baith to resist the fury of his enimes, and to punis trespassouris be his auctorite and justice ; othir wayis, na pepill nicht leif togidder : for the fame of ane nobill prince is ane gret firmance to his realme. To this answerit Sem-

bathis, capitane of Argyle, in maner following: “ Nane is amang  
 “ you, gud freindis, that is nocht movit, be mony reasonis, to defend  
 “ the barnis of Fergus; sen he, be incredibill luffe, brocht to us, in  
 “ our extreme neid, ane strang army, be quhilk he nocht allanerly  
 “ deliverit us of maist dangerus battal, bot maid of our ennimes  
 “ freindis, and of this land ane realme, and decorit us with honest  
 “ lawis. Hes he nocht dantit the pissant Britonis, ane pepill full  
 “ of riches and chevalry; and put thaim baith out of the boundis  
 “ of Scottis and Pichtis; gevand to us sic institutionis, that we may  
 “ leif, as otheris nichtbouris, but feir of ennimes, gif we have na dis-  
 “ centioun amang ourself? Quha sall think us worthy to have kind-  
 “ nes, gif we defraude thir barnis of his just heritage? What dis-  
 “ pleseir sal we do to our ennimes, gif we do sic importabil schame  
 “ to our prince? Lat Fergus goist knaw us gud men, luffaris of  
 “ vertew, and not unmindful of gud dedis; with the same mind, as  
 “ he left us, to his posterite. Ressave, now, his eldist sonne to the  
 “ crown, gif ye have ony respect to your faith; gif ye had ony fa-  
 “ vour to him during his lif: otherwayis, ye sall be odius to the im-  
 “ mortall Goddis and men.” The pepill war sum part movit be thir  
 wourdis. Than Frauchtaus, chiftane of Brigandis, said in this ma-  
 ner: “ I se you, belovit freindis, contending heir, quhithir it be  
 “ more expedient to have Fergus young sonne, unabil to regne for  
 “ his minorite, or ane othir prudent man, to be king. I think Sem-  
 “ bathis mind suld be lovit, gif na thing bot kindnes suld be consi-  
 “ derit in electioun of ane prince. Nane is that misknawis amang  
 “ you, how odius and detestabill it is to defraude King Fergus  
 “ sonnis of thair kindly heritage. Na sic cruelteis, as I beleif, is in  
 “ our mindis. Occurris nocht at this time to decerne gif Fergus son-  
 “ nis suld immediatly succed, bot only to se how the crown may be  
 “ kepit hale to thair perfite aige. Quhat vengeance, skaith, and  
 “ dammage, sall fall on us, and our commoun weill, gif we, accor-  
 “ ding to Sembathis mind, suffer ane barne to be our king? First  
 “ sall rise amang us ane birnand occasion of hatrent; for thair is  
 “ mony amang us equall to othir in power and rentis. Attoure the  
 “ empire and governance of this realme, during this young kingis  
 “ minorite, sall be gevin to ane of us: and he that governis the  
 “ realme during the kingis minorite sall be king for the time, and



“ honorit amang us, with auctorite, reverence, and every other hon-  
“ noris that efferis to princely estait. Quhay is he that will nocht  
“ besely contend for that honour? Suppone ane of us obtene this  
“ office, this man sall be king for the time, and sal riche his awin  
“ hous. And als oft as ony thing occurris to be done for the com-  
“ mon weill; as, ambassatouris of gret realmes to be rewardit, or  
“ armyis to be send apon our fayis; this man, that regnis during  
“ the kingis minorite, sall convert him only to our gudis. We sall  
“ be constranit to gif him our substance. We man nuris ane ava-  
“ ritius cumpany of limmers about him, nothir for the weill of the  
“ king, nor his realme. It is ane thing to have na admiratioun.  
“ Ane man is plesant sa lang as he is privat, howbeit he alter his  
“ maneris quhen he is clothit with publik auctorite; for gud for-  
“ toun and gud maneris ar seildin grantit at anis to levand creatouris.  
“ Finally, quhen this young king is cumin to age of xiv yeris, and  
“ takis on him the governance of the realme, he wil be accompanyit  
“ with suspicious pepill; and maik him to repair al wrangis done to  
“ his leigis within his tender aige, and do al sic besines as is requirit  
“ for the commoun weill; howbeit he can do na thing that time, for  
“ laik of wisdom. Than, quhen he hes maist neid of wise counsa-  
“ louris, he sal suffir nane to be with him bot thay only that will  
“ assist to his vice. Than sal thay corrupit rutouris, his minions,  
“ be salut as kingis, and haldin in reverence amang us, nochtwith-  
“ standing thair insaciabill avarice, but schame. Quhay sall have  
“ the curage or spreit to punis thaim for feir of this insolent prince?  
“ Forthir, to behald ane young prince regnand above ony realme,  
“ is siclike as quhay wald se the commoun weill sweyand down.  
“ Than sall we have theiffis and oppressouris, takand our gudis  
“ baith in burgh and land without punitioun; than, for laik of jus-  
“ tice, sall be ithand slauchteris, the realme devidit, the pepill but  
“ bridil and governance, and may nocht leif in faith and justice.  
“ Thairfore said the wise Salomon, ‘ Vengeance and sorrow sall the  
“ pepill have, that hes ane younge king.’ For thir reasonis, I think  
“ the barnis of Fergus suld be gevin to wise preceptouris, to lerne  
“ lawis, gud havingis, and maneris; that thay may be abill efter to  
“ governe the realme: and, as now, the governance of the realme  
“ to be gevin to Ferithais, thair eme, or to ony othir abill man



“ quhome ye think expedient, be quhais auctorite the crown sall  
“ remane redde to be gevin to thaim at thair parfit age: and, als  
“ sone as the king deis, thir barnis to succede immediatly to the  
“ crown, gif thay be abill thairfore; and, during the kingis lif, thay  
“ sall be honorit as immediat successouris to the crown efter the  
“ kingis deth. Be this way, ye may saif the barnis of Fergus un-  
“ defraudit of thair kindly heritage. Gif we desire to eschew the  
“ sprout of sedicioun, with innomerabill inconvenientis efter follow-  
“ ing; gif we desire baith to defend ourself, and bring our commoun-  
“ weil to proffet; this electioun of princis suld be observit; for it is  
“ conforme to the mind of Fergus, quhilk, during his liffe, wald  
“ nevir have socht ony singulare proffet, in dammage of our com-  
“ mounweill.”

Quhen Ferithais had endit this orisoun, the counsall assentit haill to his opinionis, and, be plane consent of Parliament, maid actis. Quhen it hapnit thair king to deceis, levand behind him young children gottin of his body, the nerrest of the kingis blude, and ablest to do justice, sall reiose the crown for his time. Efter his deith, the kingis son sal succede to the crown, but pley, gif he war abill thairto. It was defendit be that samin act, that na barnis be kingis. This consuetude was kept mony yeris efter: throw quhilk rais mekill troubill in this realme; for oftimis the fader brother, regnand in the minorite of his nevo, kest his extreme besines to distroy him; siclik the nevo to his fader brother, for ambitioun of the crown: throw quhilk occurrit continual slauchteris of kingis and nobillis, to the gret trubill of the realme, and dammage of the commounweill.

## Chap. Second.

*Of King Ferithais; and of his deith.*



E thir actis afore rehersit, Ferithais, brother to King Fergus, was chosin king. This prince, efter his election, maid ane orisoun to his nobillis. The effect thair-of was, That he wald nocht ressave the crown for riches, ambition, or dignite, bot only to support his nevois, quhill ane of thaim war abill to succed; and, becaus he was left tutour-testamenter be thair fader, he wald leif na thing undone that micht advance the commounweill, othir in weir or peace, with na les affection to his nevois, than thay war his awin sonnys. Sine he exhortit the nobillis, to make sic support and favour to his said nevois, that nocht he, bot thay, suld appere to governe the publik weill; havand in perpetuall remembrance, the honorabill actis done be thair nobil fader, King Fergus. He desirit als, grave and wise preceptouris to be chosin to his said nevois; that thay micht increas als weill in vertew and science, as in yeris, but ony dammage of ennimes. And, finaly, declarit, he wald accept na publik gouvernance on him, quhil thir thingis war first providit.

Sic thingis done, Ferithais was crownit in the fatall chier of merbill, and ressavit the kingis armis; in quhilkis was ane scherand sword, with septoure, crown, and tressour, in maner of ane weirly trinsche, for defence of his realme in liberte, and punition of transgressouris be justice. Fra thens, thir war ay the nobill armis of Scotland, but ony variance, quhill the time of King Achaus, quhilk maid the first band of confideratioun, betwix us and France, with Charllis the Magne, King of France, and Romane Emperour: be quhilk confideratioun was eikit to the tressour, foure goldin lillyis, with four goldin crocis, set in equale ordour about the tressour; to signify, the Scottis hes ay inviolatly kept the Cristin faith, but ony spot of heresy, sen thay first tuke the same.

Sone efter, ane convention was maid betwix the two kingis of Scottis and Pichtis; in the quhilk war sindry utilites devisit for the

weill of the two realmis. New peace was ratifyit; and punitioun maid on limmaris and movaris of sedition and trubill betwix the two realmes; and redres maid, on all sidis, for observatioun of the peace in times cuning. Sic thingis done, the two kingis returnit hame.

Sone efter, Ferlegus, eldest sonne to King Fergus, be motioun of his familiaris, and otheris corruppit men, that nicht nocht suffer justice, began to hate his eme, Ferithais, with purpos to distroy him. At last, seand his wickit purpos cum to litill effect, he gaderit ane cumpany of evill disposit men, and desirit the crown to be gevin to him, as just heritour thair of. Ferithais dredand, gif he war repugnant to thir desiris, to be cruelly invadit, answerit, he suld exoner him glaidly of the crown at the nixt conventioun, on the same maner as it was gevin to him: for he was nevir of purpos to beir auctorite langar than ony of his brother sonnys war abill to succede; and desirit na thing sa mekill, as to se ane of thaim reiose the empire, that he might schaw, efter his deid, to Fergus, the sicker weill appering to his posterite. And, forther, he desirit his said nevo, to pas with him to the conventioun; in the quhilk he suld baith exoner him of al auctorite, and do every thing sa far as pertenit to the weill of King Fergus hous.

This plesand answer so mesit the mind of Ferlegus, that all hatrent for that time beand amovit, thay convenit baith togidder afore the nobillis in counsall, quhair King Ferithais said in this maner: “ I traist it be nocht unknowin to you, wise faderis, quhen it was “ disput amang you, be quhat wise this realme nicht be governit in “ the minorite of Fergus sonnys, ye gaif me the crown, thocht I was “ unworthy, nocht only to governe it be justice, bot that the same “ suld remane hale, quhill the sonnys of Fergus war abill to regne. “ Quhat travell, quhat incredibill danger, have I sustenit, baith for “ your commoun weill and felice of this realme, now rising in honouris! And, sen na thing is mair patent to you than sic besines, “ I will omit the residew thair of, that ye may have na occasioun to “ deme me arrogant, or desirus of fenyet glore. I war richt inhumane, sen I have na airis of my body, gif I wald defraude my “ brother sonnys of thair kindly heritage, or transfer the samin in “ ony uncouth blude. Ferlegus, my cousin, and just heritour to the “ crown, clames the samin fra me of gud reason; for he is young,

“lusty, of hie engine, of strang and lusty body to sustene gret  
 “chargis, and sall be every day more abill to governe this realme:  
 “be contrar, I am feblit be lang aige, and desiris to be relevit of  
 “hevy curis. I beseik you, thairfore, that the publik administra-  
 “tioun, quhilk I ressavit be your auctorite, be gevin to my cousin,  
 “sen he is abill, and I unganand thairfore. Na thing may be sa  
 “plesand for me, as to have ane privat liffe in times cumming but  
 “ony publict chargis. Ressave the auctorite, with mair gladnes than  
 “ever it was gevin to me.”

The counsall, knowing weill quhat irremediabil displesouris war  
 appering to thair realme, gif this young and insolent prince Ferle-  
 gus war maid king, continewit Ferithais in his empire, and requirit  
 him to sustene the governance of the realme, as he did afore, but  
 ony feir of his aige; sen realmes ar governit mair be wisdome of  
 aigit personis, than ony corporall strenthe. The nobillis wald nocht  
 abrogat the lawis maid afore aganis the empire of young childrin;  
 and tuke gret indignation, that Ferlegus desirit sic thingis as war re-  
 pugnand to thair commounweill. And thought thay ressavit him in  
 thair counsal with reverence and honouris, yit thay severit him fra the  
 pepill; repreving him quhy he yeid fra the counsall of the wise no-  
 billis, his keparis, and desiring the crown without thair advise; to  
 make it knawin, that he suld obey the counsal of his wise lordis.  
 Ferlegus, brokin on this wise fra his purpos, maid him, with hevy  
 cheir, to depart fra the counsall. The nobillis, dredand sindry dis-  
 pleseris to follow be his departing, brocht him agane be force, and  
 kest all his corruppit counsullouris in preisoun: amang quhom ane  
 was, that schew to the king in quhat maner his deith was devisit;  
 traisting, be revelatioun thair of, to get his lif saiffit. The pepill,  
 heirand this tressoun, war sa commovit, that thay had slane Ferle-  
 gus, war nocht the king pecifyit thair ire in time. And, thocht the  
 king was advertist of this tressoun devisit in his slauchter, yit, to  
 schaw him mair reuthfull than rigorus prince, he kest his mind to  
 meis the fury of the pepill, and to keip his nevo fra displeseir. Fer-  
 legus was gevin in new keiping of the nobillis; bot his servitouris  
 war punist to the deith.

Ferithais, als sone as this conventioun was skalit, raid throw his  
 realme for equall administratioun of justice; quhill at last he was



slane, within the nicht, be his nevo Ferlegus, thre monethis efter the first conspiracy, the xv yeir of his regne.

### Chap. Third.

*How Ferlegus was banist for the slauchter of King Ferithais ; and of King Maynus.*



ERITHAIS slane, as we have now schawin, Ferlegus, the murderar, and all other that war guilty of the said crime, fled amang the Pichtis ; and finding thair na securite of his liffe, he fled in Britane, quhare he consumed the residew of his dayis in gret misery.

The nobillis, efter the slauchter of Ferithais, convenit to the castell of Dounstafage, in Argyle, for election of the king. Quhilk day, the counsall, movit of kindnes to King Fergus, chesit Maynus, his youngest sonne, the xxiv yeir of his aige, to be king.

Maynus was ane nobil prince, richt different fra his bruthir, hav- and all vicious men in gret hatrent. He exercit justice equally in his realme ; and gaif commission to his liegis to convene, and dres all debatis amang thaim self. The difficill materis, quhen thay occurrit, was discussit be himself, anis in the yeir ; quhen he past throw his realme, halding his justice airis, for redressing of wrangis, and punitioun of trespassouris.

The same time, Crynus, King of Pichtis, send ambassatouris to King Maynus, rejosng of his felicite, and desiring the band of peace, maid afore betwix Scottis and Pichtis, to be renewit. King Maynus, weill instruckit be his nobillis quhat was to be done, ressavit thir ambassatouris, and condescendit to thair petition. The peace ratefyit in this maner, the Scottis began to burgeoun in sicker peace.

King Maynus knawng weill, na pepill may incres but justice, peace, and religioun ; and seand realmes, and every thing in erd, sa subdewit to the power of Goddis, that na devise nor ingine of man may avale bot gif the Goddis stand propiciant thairto, quhais benivolence bene sicker gard and protection to all pepill ; thairfore, to



move his liegis to religioun, he eikit certane new cerimonis, to be maid in the honour of Goddis within thair tempillis. And, first, he ordanit ane huge stane to be rasis, on the south side of the said tempillis, on quhilk thair sacrifice was maid. In memory heirof, remanis yit in our dayis mony huge stanis, drawin togidder in forme of circulis, namit be the pepill, the anciant tempillis of Goddis. It is na litill admiratioun, be quhat ingine and strenth sa huge stanes bene brocht togidder.

The sacrifice usit in thay dayis, was ane portioun of cornis, cattellis, or ony othir frutis that grew apon the ground, quhilk was gevin to kirkmen for thair sustentatioun; and offerit to the Goddis, quhen the samin was superflew, or mair than was sufficient sustentatioun to the preistis. King Maynus foundat als ane sacrifice, to be maid monethly, in the honoure of Diane, Goddis of woddis and huntaris; and, thairfore, the pepill maid thair adoratioun to the new mone. Quhilk superstitioun was lang usit amang oure anciant faderis, with mony othir vane ceremonyis, efter the rite of Egyptianis.

Quhen Maynus had governit his pepill in gud justice, and institute thaim with thir and othir superstitionis plesand to the religioun of thay dayis, he resignit the crown to his sonne Dorvidilla, and deceissit, the xxix yeir of his regne: King Elgane regnand above the Britonis, and King Thaar above the Pichtis.

### Chap. Fourth.

*Of King Dorvidilla; and of his constitutionis, maneris, and deith.*



MYNUS deceissit as we have writting, his son Dorvidilla wes maid king. Efter his coronatioun, he renewit peace with his nichtbouris the Pichtis and Britonis; and schew him nurisar of tranquillite, detesting na thing mair than sic besines as gaif occasioun to battal; and delitit in every thing that nicht draw his pepil in peace. He tuke gret delite of hunting, rachis, and houndis; and maid lawis, that grew-quhelsis suld nocht

line thair moderis, for he fand, by experience, houndis gottin in that maner unprofitabil for hunting. He ordanit als, that ilk nobill suld nuris twa rachis and ane hound to his hunting; and, quhen the houndis war manyeit be adventure of chais, to be sustenit on the commoun gud. He ordanit, the slayer of ane wolf to have ane ox to his reward. Oure eldaris persewit this beist with gret hatrent, for the gret murdir of beistis done be the samin.

The Scottis havand na occasioun of civill nor of uncouth weris, set thair ingine to precell all othir pepill in the craft of hunting, and maid divers lawis concerning the same. In the first, commandit, that quhais dog first bait the deir, suld have the hide thairof; quhais dog bait nixt, suld have the heid and the hornis: the body curit to be at the pleseir of the maister of huntis; the residew to be for the houndis. Gif ony contention rais amang the huntaris, to cheis ane juge, with all thair consentis, in the tempill of Diane, to aggre thaim. Thir lawis war maid be generall consent of the pepill, to nuris thaim in commoun pleseir, drawing fra thaim all occasioun of injuris and hatrent. Quhilkis lawis war kepit mony yeris efter.

Thir constitutionis, and utheris devisit afore be Kinge Fergus, war collectit togidder in tabillis, and gevin in keping to the wisest and maist profound Clark for the time, to shaw baith to the juge, and to the persone quhilkis war to be accusit, the punition conforme to thair demeritis; that the pepill micht understand, the juge past nocht fra his boundis of justice in punitioun of crimes: attour, the counsal wald condampne na faltouris in thay dayis, quhill the lawis war first schawin, according to the falt. Throw quhilk it come in use, that all criminabill personis, seand thaim, be just sentence, condampnit to the deid, tuke the samin in pacience: gif ony punition was maid on thaim above the lawis, thay murmurit, as opprest be the jugis. This maner of justice remanis yit amang the Ilis of Scotland, and may na way be abrogat; for thair bene certane interpretouris of the lawis, but quhom thay can gif na richtuis jugement.

Quhen Dorvidilla had rounge xxviii yeiris, he deceissit at Berigone; and left behind him ane young child, namit Rewthar, quhilk micht nocht succede, for the lawis maid afore aganis young children.

## Chap. Fifth.

*Of the tyrane King Nathak ; and of his slaughter.*



**E**FTER the deith of Dorvidilla, his brothir Nathak, ane fair and lusty persone, and abill, as apperit, to publik administration, was maid king. This prince rang skarsly two yeris, quhen he opprest his pepill with sic servitude, that he was haldin for ane mischevous tyrane. He sufferit na lawis to be exercit ; he spulyeit the commounis of thair riches and gudis ; and persewit his nobillis with slaughteris and banissing. Thir doingis maid him odious to his liegis, and maid his empire richt unsicker ; and, thocht he oft times was counsallit be his freindis to abstene fra sic enormiteis, he desistit nocht, bot grew ay the more in vice that he inressit in yeris, lyke ane bludy monstoure, but schame and mercy. Yit his cruell and unhappy dedis war nocht lang unpunish : for Dowall, capitane of Brigandis, quhome he thocht afore to have slane for his our greit pissance, be assistance of mony uthir nobillis, conspirt aganis him. And, to bring his purpos the sonar to effect, he maid Rewthar, the sonne of King Dorvidilla, to be thair governoure ; to that intentioun, that gif thir hie attemptatis succedit nocht with sic felicity as he desirit, the charge thair of suld allanerly redound to Rewthar.

Dowall, to find occasion that he micht bring his purpos to effect, broucht this young Rewthar, with ane company of armit men, in the samin place quhare King Nathak remanit ; and, quhen he sawe the mater dressit, as he devisit, to have occasioun of debait, he gaif displesand wourdis to King Nathak, saying, he was ane fals tyrane but schame, and nocht only spoilyeit Rewthar of the crown, bot rang with maist cruell and odious tyranny above the pepill ; and, with hid slichtis and tressoun, hes slane ane gret part of all the nobillis. Nathak answerit agane, in his wod fury, that he was king be ordour of justice ; and suld, thairfore, regne in times cuming contrar the mind of Dowall and all otheres of his opinioun, in sic ma-

ner; that the said Dowall sall never find him mair favorabill nor gratus than he was afore; and declarit, within few dayis, he sall punis him, and al utheris of his opinioun, in the scharpest sort that might be devisit, for thair attemptatis.

Dowall, movit with thir dispitfull wordis, ruschit forthwart with his complicis, and slew King Nathak, with all the nobillis that war of his mind, the second yeir of his regne.

### Chap. Sixty.

*How Rewthar, ane young Child, was maid King, contrar the lawis.*

*How Ferquhard, Capitane of Lorne, was chasit be Dowall in the Ilis; and of his Orison maid to the Pepill thair of.*



ATHAK, the tyrane, slane, as said is, Dowall made ane conventioun; and, be assistance of sindry nobillis to his opinion, he crownit Rewthar in the chair of merbil. Mony of the nobillis war nocht content of thir doingis; havand gret indignatioun, that baith thair king was slane, and the lawis concerning the electioun of thair prince abrogat, be his privat auctorite; and ane younge childe maid kinge, aganis thair honourabill actis laitly maid for thair commoun weill. Thir nobillis, that war of this mind, maid ane privat conventioun togidder; and amang thaim was Ferquhard, capitane of Kintyre and Lorne, maich to King Nathak; ane man of subtile ingine, and havand gret ambition to the crown.

This Ferquhard, beleving the time ganand to conquess the crown, with dissimilit mind, as he wald debait the actione of the commoun weill, complanit baith the slauchter of Nathak be the cruell Dowall, and ane barne maid king, to the dammage of the pepill and commoun weill; and exhortit, thairfore, the counsall to provide ane haisty remeid to resist the tyranny of Dowall, quhilk intendit to usurp the crown in name of Rewther; and, gif the samin war nocht done, sic sedicioun and civill weiris sall rise haistely amang the chiftanis of thair realme, that the samin suld find ane haisty subversioun.



Skarsly war thir wordis said, quhen Dowall enterit, with ane band of men, and slew sindry nobillis in the counsall; bot Ferquhard, evill woundit, eschapit with ane certane of his frendis, and fled in the Ilis; quhare he convenit all the clannis and pepill thair of to ane counsall, and said in this maner: “ Had we observit the lawis concerning the election of our kingis, maist vailyeant pepill, it had  
 “ nocht bene necessar to me this day to make this orisoun; for we  
 “ nicht have leiffit in gud tranquillite and peace under the empire  
 “ of Nathak, our wise and vailyeant prince, now laitly slane be  
 “ Dowall, the cruell tyrane. Attour, to aggrege this importabil  
 “ cruelte in mair dammaige of our commoun weill, he hes nocht on-  
 “ ly slane our king, bot intrusit ane young child in his place, in  
 “ plane derogatioun of oure lawis; intending thairthrow, to bring  
 “ baith us and oure commoun weill to uter mischeif. I find na  
 “ thing, maist forey campionis, that may seme us les, than to lurk  
 “ heir schamfully as effminat pepill, eschewing the wraith of oure  
 “ ennimes, and regarding nouthir our honour nor proffet; sen thair  
 “ is na other way sa plesand to strenth our ennimes, and to febill  
 “ oure self. This maist cruel tyrane hes nocht only slane the no-  
 “ billis of this realme, bot slane the preistis and religious men; and,  
 “ that na esperance suld remane in us to withstand his cruelte, he  
 “ hes tressonably put down all the vailyeant men that favorit us in  
 “ Albion. He haldis all the aigit men, that nicht have proffit us  
 “ be thair wise counsall, in sic captivite, that thay ar na better than  
 “ deid. And, that he may oppres us with more pissance, he hes  
 “ maryit Rewther, ane young child, quhome he namis king, on the  
 “ douchter of Gethus, King of Pichtis. This unmercifull tyrane  
 “ hes devisit, as we are surely advertist, als sone as he hes vincust us,  
 “ to cut oure eiris, and put out oure eyne, that we may then remane  
 “ on live, to our schame and perpetuall derisioun. Yit, wil ye con-  
 “ cur with manheid and wisdom to my opinioun, traist fermely, ye  
 “ sall nocht only eschew sic cruelteis, be favour of Goddis, bot pu-  
 “ nis him conforme to his demerites; and beleif fermely, that all  
 “ thingis sall succede to us with hie felicite, gif we, with na les cu-  
 “ rage than wisdom, defend oure richt, oure liberte, and oure  
 “ faith: for we se oft times vailyeant and gret princis dejeckit fra  
 “ thair honoure and imperiall digniteis, quhen thay applaudit to



“ tressoun and falsset. Heirfore, gif we be men, and worthy to be  
 “ callit the posterite of oure nobill progenitouris, quhilkis never re-  
 “ fusit to assailye maist dangerus battallis in thair just defence, lat  
 “ us defend our richt, our lawis, wiffis, and childrin, aganis this  
 “ maist odius tyrane; and erar assailye extreme chance of battall,  
 “ than to leif in perpetuall schame. But dout, the Goddis sall be  
 “ propiciant to us for oure just persut; be contrar, thay sall be re-  
 “ pignant to our ennimes for thair tyranny. Lat us othir de with  
 “ honoure, or ellis have victory with triumphant glore, and revenge  
 “ the murdir of the king and his nobillis, recently maid be this ty-  
 “ rane.”

### Chap. Seventh.

*How Ferquhard and Dowall, recounting uthir be plane Battall,  
 war baith slane, with all the Nobillite of Scottis and Pichtis; the  
 King of Pichtis slane, and the King of Scottis tane.*



HE capitanis of the tribis, and pepill thair of, movit in  
 gret hatrent be thir wordis, turnit all feir of deith in  
 maist rageand fury; and baithit thair handis with mannis  
 blude, as the rite was in thay dayis; and maid thair  
 aithis, to revenge the slauchter of Nathak, and his nobillis, in the  
 sharpest maner that micht be devisit. And, but more tary, thay  
 gaderit ane army out of Ireland, Argyle, Lorne, Canter, and othir  
 partis adjacent; sine landit, with mony galyouns and lang faddis,  
 in Albioun. Ferquhard, returning in this wise, drew mony of the  
 pepill, quhare he come, to his opinioun; and tuke thair aithis, outhir  
 to revenge the slauchter of King Nathak, or ellis to de all at anis.

Dowall, knawing his cumming, met him, with an army, at Beri-  
 gone; quhare it was cruelly fouchtin on all sidis: bot, at last, Dowall  
 was discomfist, and sevin thousand men of his army slane; and yit  
 more slauchter had bene maid, war nocht the nicht severit thaim.  
 On the morrow, Dowall, with furius hatrent, colleckit the residew  
 of his army to new array, havand with him Gethus, King of Pichtis,

and Rewthar, King of Scottis, with mony of all the nobillis of baith thair realmes. On the army adversar, was Ferquhard, with the inhabitantis of Cathnes, Argyle, Murray, and mony otheris of the Ilis. Thir two armyis met finally togidder in mair fury than afore, and faucht neir to the uter exterminion of thaim baith.

In this unhappy battall was slane Gethus, King of Pichtis, with incredibill nowmer baith of nobillis and commounis; and baith the chiftanis Dowall and Ferquhard slane, with all the nobilite of Scottis. This lamentabill and unhappy battall was focht in sic perseverant hatrent, that allanerly remanit VIII hundred men unslane on baith the sidis. The residew of Ferquhardis army, to quhome this unplesand victory succedit, seing the feild left efter sa huge murdir, followit on the chais, with ithand slauchter, quhill thay come to the castell of Callender. Thair, was King Rewther tane.

Throw this unhappy battall was maid sa terribill slauchter, that, mony yeris efter, nouthir Scottis nor Pichtis was left on liffe, sufficient to inhabit this realme, nor yit to withstand thair ennimes.

### Chap. Eighth.

*How the Scottis and Pichtis war doung out of Albion be the Britonis.*



HE Britonis, quhilkis war ay our ennimes, heirand this lamentabil destructioun of Scottis and Pichtis, cuming on thaim be unprudence of civill weris, traistit the time sufficient to make thaim rejose the hale empire of Albion; and, thairfore, rasit thair army in maist weirly ordinance, and invadit sindry landis of Pichtis baith with swerd and fire. The Pichtis, brokin with the weiris afore reheirsit, and disparit of support, gaderit all thair bestiall and gudis, with thair wiffis, children, and freindis, and come, be mony wilsome and diffcil gaitis, to Orkney; and, efter thair cuming, chesit Gethus, brother to King Gethus afore deceissit, to be thair king, and dwelt sindry yeris efter in the said regioun in gud peace and freindschip with the pepill thair-of: thairfore, Orkney was ay namit the aulde realme of Pichtis.

The Britonis, herand the Pichtis departit in this wise, come in Penthland, Mers, and Tevidaill, and plenist all the strenthis thair of with thair gudis and pepill; and, nocht lang efter, thay come in the Scottis landis. The Scottis, richt affrayit of thair cuming, and seing na other remeid, drew thaim to thair harnes and wappinnis, and met thaim in arrayit battall at Calder Wod. Nochttheles, the Scottis war discomfist, and two thowsand of thaim slane; the residew fled heir and thair in sindry partis. The fame of this unhappy battall maid the pepill na les disparit, than all the nobill blude of Fergus had bene endit that day in Albion.

The Britonis, proud and insolent be thir feliceits, herand, be thair exploratouris, that ane certane of Scottis, quhilkis eschapit fra this last battal, war fled to Berigone, for defence of King Rewther; (for he was in the said castell, with ane few nowmer of nobillis;) and the residew of Scottis, with thair wiffis and barnis, fled in the Ilis; gaderit ane army, be the ordinance of Denus, thair king, and lade ane sege to the said castell. Nochttheless, the Scottis defendit it lang time; quhil at last thay war drevin to sic penurite, becaus thair vittallis failyeit, that thay kest cavillis, quha suld be first devorit, to sustene the liffis of thaim that war within the hous. And, becaus thay saw the maist vailyeant campionis fall to be devorit in this miserabill wise, thay devisit, the samin nicht, to ische on thair ennimes, and erar to revenge sum displesour on thaim, than miserably to de in that sort. And, that the king nicht ische more esely with his noblis, thay devisit, that Colane, chiftane of Lorne, sal ische with ane hundreth men to the nixt montane. And as it was devisit, so followit; for Colane isching furth on this wise, and fechtand to the uter exterminioun of his fayis, was finally slane, with all his folkis: and in the mene time, quhen he was maist earnestly fechtand, King Rewther ischit at ane quiet posthern with his nobillis, and come hastily to the see, quhair schippis war reddy abidinge his cuming. Rewther, eschaping on this maner, arrivit in the Ilis; and, finding thair na securite of his liffe, he past in Ireland. The wiffis of the tribe of Lorne, seing all thair husbandis slane afore thair ene, slew thaimself, that thay suld nocht remane in servitude of thair ennimes.

The Britonis knowing finally, how Rewther and his nobillis war eschapit, war sa commovit, that thay slew the residew of Scottis in

all partis quhair thay war apprehendit; sine garnist al the strenthis of Scottis with thair garisonis. The residew of the Scottis, savit be thair fleing, and seing thaimself nocht of pissance to resist the Britonis, fled to the montanis; and debaitit thair miserabill liffis, be straitnes of the ground, with scars and hard fude; levand, in the somer, on milknes, rutis of herbis, and beryis; and, in the winter, of wild flesche of the montanis: and sumtime thay draif gret prayis of bestial, be dirknes of nicht, fra the Britonis, to sustene thair liffis.

Thus stude the Scottis and Pichtis, that abaid in Albion, nere twelf yeris, under servitude of Britonis.

### Chap. Ninth.

*How the Scottis and Pichtis recoverit thair Landis, and discomfist Sysyll, King of Britonis; and of the residew of King Rewtheris liffe.*



UHILL sic thingis war done in Albion, King Rewther had on his wif, in Ireland, ane sonne, namit Thereus. And, not lang efter, be request of Gethus, King of Pichtis, he returnit in Albion, and landit at Lochbroun, in Ros. Als sone as the Scottis war returnit on this wise in Albion, thay slew, be auld rite, the first man thay met, and bathit thair mouth and swordis in his blud; sine prayit the Goddis to grant thaim sic felicite, that thay may condingly revenge the slauchter of thair progenitouris. Belive, thay maid thaim to pas forthwart toward the south: and, in the mene time, thay war advertist, that Gethus, King of Pichtis, was cumin within xxx milis to thaim, with ane gret army, that was send to thaim be thair freindis out of Albion, to help thaim to recover thair landis. The thrid day efter, baith the armyis met togidder with gret triumphe; and passing forthwart to the south, thay met all the Scottis and Pichtis, quhilkis war haldin the yeir afore under servitude.

Sysyl, King of Britonis, herand thir tithingis, gatherit haistely ane army to reconter his ennimes. Incontinent, the confiderat pe-



pill, but ony sicht to conques ony strenthis or gudis, entrit with aulful army in Britane, and invadit the samin with gret injure and cruelteis. King Sysyll, to revenge thir cruelteis invadit the Scottis and Pichtis with haiste battall. Nochttheles, his army was finally disconfist.

The hie and soverane manheid of King Rewther was principal occasion of this gloriuis victory; and in memory thair of, the cuntre quhare the battall was fochtin is callit yit to oure dayis, Rethirdaill, that is to say, the Vale of Rewthir. This battall was sa cruelly fochtin, that baith the armyis war constrainit to taik peace under thir conditionis: The Britonis sall render al the strenthis, landis, and townis, pertening to the Scottis and Pichtis; and sal nocht invaid thaim, in times cuming.

The Scottis, Pichtis, and Britonis, levit mony yeris efter in gud tranquillite and peace. The yeir that King Rewther recoverit his realme, was, fra the beginning of the warld, M M M M . D C C C C . X C V yeris; afore the incarnatioun, C C . I V yeris; fra the beginning of Rome, D . X L V I yeris. King Rewther levit, the residew of his dayis, but ony uncouth weris or seditioun of his leigis; and deceissit, the X X V I yeir of his regne.

### Chap. Tenth.

*Of King Rewtha, and his lawis and governance. How Ptolome, King of Egypt, send his Oratouris, to se the situatioun of Scotland.*



EWATHER deceissit, as we have schawin, his sonne The-reus wes of so tender age, that he nicht nocht succieid to the crown, be reason of the lawis afore rehersit; and, thairfore, his cusing Rewtha was maid king, for thay war brethir barnis. This Rewtha was the first king among the Scottis that fand ingine to put nobill men, for thair vailyeant dedis, in memory, and maid riche sepulturis for the bodyis of thaim that war slane be Britonis in defence of this realme. He commandit als



mony hie stanis to be set about the sepulture of every nobil man, as was slane be him of Britonis. In memory heirof, sindry of thaim remanis yit in the hie landis; that the pepill may knaw, sic men war vailyeant in thair dayis: throw quhilk it come in use, that the sepulturis of nobill men was haldin in gret reverence amang the pepill. On thir sepulturis was ingravin imageris of dragonis, wolfis, and othir beistis; for na inventioun of letteris was in thay dayis, to put the deidis of nobil men in memore.

The commoun pepill was gevin, that time, to store of beistis, and teling of thair landis, but ony othir industry. Thus failyet al ingenious craftis in this cuntre; and, thairfore, King Rewtha brocht all maner of craftismen out of othir contres, and sparpellit thaim in sindry schiris of his realme, with feis and dewteis; sum part to be takin on the commoun purs, and sum part as thay nicht win be thair laubouris. The heid of every ox that was slane, was gevin to the smith of that schire; the crag, to the forester of the wod; the tounge, to the man of law; half ane cost, to the sercheouris of thevis; als mekill, to the wricht; two ribbis of the cost, to the medcinar; als mekill, to the surrurgiane: and, beside this, war gevin to thaim certane mesouris of aitis and beir, becaus na change of money was in thay dayis. Throw parting of the ox in this wyis, rais up the annuell rentis in this land.

Efter that King Rewtha had plenist his realme on this maner with craftismen, he was informit, that gret dammage fell oftimis to his pepill, be ignorance of evil medcinaris; and, thairfore, he inhibit, under paine of deid, that ony man exerce the art of medicinary, without thay war found richt expert, with lang experience thairrof. Afore this time, na medcinaris was usit in this cuntre; for al personis, that war trublit with infirmiteis, war brocht to the marcat, or to ony other commoun place, quhare the pepill nicht se thaim, to gif thaim counsall to use sic remedyis, as thay usit quhen thay convalescit of thair maledis. It was ane thing richt odious in thay dayis, to visee nocht the pacient with comfort and consolation.

About this time come certane oratouris fra King Ptolome of Egypt, to explore the maneris and situacioun of every pepill and regioun. Thir oratouris war plesandlie ressavit be the king; for thay war descendit of the Egyptianis, his forbearis. The king gart

convoy thaim bath throw the realme of Scottis and Pichtis, accord-  
ing to thair desiris. Thir oratouris wrait in thair bukis the situa-  
tioun of hillis, firthis, ilis, townis, lochis, and castellis, within this  
region; with the lenth of dayis and nichtis, baith in winter and  
simer; as thay war commandit be King Ptolome: quhilk gaif his  
ingine to discrive the situatioun of the erd, in every regioun and  
Ilis quhare ony men usit to have passage; with discriptioun of the  
montanis, firthis, and cieteis of the samin, be divers instrumentis of  
astronomy: be quhais deligence and laubour remanis now ane richt  
crafty and profitabile werk, namit, The Cosmographie of Ptolome,  
richt expert in mathematik. This ingenius werk was completit in  
the time of Adriane, the Empriour.

Quhen thir oratouris had sene and degeistlie considerit this re-  
gioun, thay persavit the samin ritis, the same maner of writtingis,  
the same tounge, and the same habit and cerimonyis, as was usit  
amang the Egyptianis; and, for that caus, thir oratouris war the  
more plesandlie depischit of this realme.

King Rewther governit his realm cxiv yeris efter, in gret justice,  
but ony uncouth or civill weris: quhill at last he began to suspek  
his lang felicite; and, thairfore, to prevene all calamite, gif ony war  
approcheand be mischance of fortoun, he resignit the crown to The-  
reus, son to King Rewther, the xvii yeir of his regne.

### Chap. Eleventh.

*Of King Thereus, and how he was exilit for his tyranny. How Co-  
nane, Chiftane of Brigandis, was maid Governour during his pro-  
scription.*



HEREUS ressavng the crown on this maner, apperit, the  
first sex monethis of his regne, to be ane virtewis prince.  
Bot sone eftir, he becam ane vicious tyrane; involvit so  
with lust, that he had na regard to ressone, honesty,  
nor justice; and was namit amang the pepill, the scornar of religioun.

The pepill, be imitation of this insolent prince, increseit every day more and more in corruppit maneris; throw quhilk followit ithand slauchter of nobill men, with reif and heirschippis in all partis. Strongest thevis, and gretest oppressouris, war haldin in maist veneratioun and honouris. The commonis war sa disparit for the irrecoverable skaithis done to thaim, that thay traistit nocht possibil ony tyrane more vicious micht regne above thaim. The capitanis of the tribis, movit be thir insufferable offencis, thocht unworthy that ony noble men suld be misgidit be sic ane corruppit monstour; and, thairfore, maid ane quiet conventioun amang thaimself; in the quhilk thay concludit, baith to degraidd him of his crown and kingdome. Thereus, heirand this conspiratioun of his nobillis againis him, was sa astonist, that he fled in Britane. At last, quhen he had socht lang time support of the Britonis to restore him to his realme, frustrat thairof, he consumit the residew of his dayis in misere at York, the xii yeir of his regne.

Quhen Thereus was exilit on this maner, the nobillis of Scotland, that thair common weill sal incurre na dammage for laking of ane king, chesit Conane, capitane of Brigandis, to be governour. This Conane, efter that he was maid governour, tuke gret laubouris to meis al dissentionis that war rissin afore amang the nobillis be sleuth of Thereus. He punist theiffis, revers, and othir criminabill personis, with sic severite and justice, that the bestiall and gudis lay thairfurth but ony trubil. Quhill at last King Thereus deceissit in Britane, be quhais deith his auctorite was expirit.

## Chap. Twelfth.

*Of King Josyne; and of the experience and preaching of two Philosophouris.*



As sone as the nobillis war advertist of the deith of Thereus, thay maid ane convention at Berigon; in the quhilk, Josyne, bruther to Thereus, was maid king. This Josyne renewit the peace with his nichtbouris, the Pichtis and Britonis, and held surrurgianis and medicinaris in gret reverence; for he wes nurist, the time of his youtheid, with sic personis in Ireland. He was ane gud medicinar, and had gud experience of herbis. Our forbearis usit na othir medcin, in curing thair woundis or infirmiteis, bot herbis; and, in thay dayis, thair was nocht sa mony divers kindis of maladyis as now ar sene. Few infirmiteis war sene that time, bot gravellis, caterris, and siclike maladyis, cuming throw distemperance of cauld and donk humouris. The pepill leiffit with sa skars and naturall fude, that thay had nocht only lang dayis, bot war preservit fra all maner of maledyis. Nochtheles, fra the abstinence of our forebearis was set aside, than uncouth and delicious coursis began to multiply sa amang us, that, with uncouth and strange metis, come uncouth and strange infirmiteis. And, becaus the unyementis and drogareis that our forbearis usit nicht nocht cure the new maledyis, the pepill war constrainit, throw importabil dolour increasing be the samin, to seke remeid be new ingine and craft. And, sen our time is now sa venomit with uncouth and superflew metis and drinkis, we thocht sum thing necessar to rehers the temperance of our forebearis in thair leving, with sic maledyis and remedyis as war usit in thair dayis; of quhilkis sall be schawin more largely efter, quhen time occurris more expedient.

In the time of King Josyne, war brocht to his presence at Berigone, two venerabill Clerkis, of plesant visage, bot thay war almaist nakit. It is writtin, that thay war preistis of Spayne; and, passing



out of Portingale to Athenes, be unmercifull tempest of sees war schip-brokin at Ros; thair schip, and remanent pepil that was with thaim, perist, and thay only savit: and, becaus thay war philosophouris, and men of gret experience, thay war weill tretit. At last, quhen thay war xiv dayis refreschit efter thair walking and trubill of see, thay war brocht agane to the kingis presence. The king demandit thaim to schaw, quhat thay understude of the nature of the ground of Scotland, and of the maneris and religioun of the pepill thairof. Thir philosophouris answerit, thay nicht nocht say perfite-ly to thir questionis; becaus thay had nocht lang time to have experience thairof, and als war sum part febillit in thair fantasis, for the calamite laitly falling to thaim be storme of sees. Nochtheles, sa far as thay nicht conjecture, thair was more riches and proffet to be gottin within the vanis of the erd of Scotland, than above; for it was more gevin to winning of minis and metallis, than ony production of cornis. Thay knew this, said thir philosophouris, be the influence of the hevin. As to the maneris and religion of the pepill, thay declarit, thair religion was nocht to be commendit; for thay adorit imagis of brutall beistis, in forme of levand Goddis, as the Egyptianis usit: quhilk suld nocht be; for God was that thing only, that contenit landis, sees, and every creature; quhais perfite and ver-ray image can not be paintit nor devisit be ingine of man. It was necessar, thairfore, that the pepill suld leif thair idolatryis; and adore allanerly the levand God, mover of the hevinnis, with sacrifice and prayer in thair tempillis allanerly, but ony imageris; and, finaly, to leif in hope of reward, gif thay leiffit with clene lif and justice: uthirways, not was devisit for thaim bot dolour and torment.

Thir philosophouris preching in this maner, inducit the pepill to leif thair idolatryis; makand thair sacrifice and prayer allanerly to the mover of hevin, the eternall God. Thus war the pepill brocht to that way, that the sacrifice that was wont to be gevin to Isis and Apis, the Goddis of Egypt, was abrogat. Throw quhilk the Scottis war mony yeris efter sa religious, that thay made adoration only to God, the mover of the hevin: yit utheris war sa indurat in thair awn errouris, that thay couth nocht omit thair auld superstitionis; and belevit firmly, that the son, mone, and otheris the sternis and lanternis of the hevin, war verray Goddis: for thay war sa obstinat



and blindit in the auld arrour of Gentilis, that quhen thay saw na thing in erd more bricht nor mervellus than the son, mone, and uther lichtis of the hevin, thay belevit sum divinite thairin, and adorit thaim as Goddis.

This history, sa far as it is now drawin, is colleckit out of Vere-mond, Johne Campbell, and Cornelius Ireland; quhom we have determit to follow, as maist autentik auctouris, to the end of this our quhatsumever werke.

King Josyne was ane virtuous prince, and deceissit at Berigone, the xxiv yeir of his regne.

### Chap. Thirteenth.

*Of King Fynnane and his Lawis; and of the College of Clerkis in the Ile of Man.*



FTER the deith of Josyne, his son Fynnane, ane wise and virtuous prince, was maid king. He was sa gret luffar of justice, that he richely rewardit all the capitanis of the tribis, quhare he fand thaim luffaris of the commonweill. He gaif his hale attendance to win the hertis of his pepill, and maid na exercition nor ministration of justice but advise of his nobillis. He ekit the nowmer of his counsal with ma senatouris than was afore, to mak thaim the more renoumit. He maid ane law, that the king sall do na thing, concerning the publik administration of his realme, but advise of his nobillis. He maid als ane uther law, that the king sall nothir denonce weir, nor treit peace, but advise of the capitanis of tribis. Be thir, and siclike constitutionis, King Fynnane conquest gret favour and benivolence of his pepill. Be this maner of governance, he maid him sa strang amang his liegis, that he was never assailyeit efter with ony uncouth weris, and grew in gret abundance of riches. Finaly, he set his mind to repare the religion of Goddis, for it wes decait in his faders time. First, he commandit the imagis of thair Goddis to be restorit to thair tempillis, that the pepill micht have the samin in adoration as afore: and yit he wald

nocht inhibit the pepill to adore the levand God, mover of hevin; for that wes institute afore be the philosophouris. He sufferit his pepill to adore quhat God thay plesit. He wes the first king that institute Prelatis and Clerkis to be in this realme: and, that thir Clerkis suld remane togidder, he gaif thaim the Ile of Man, liand betwix Ireland and Britane, fornens Brigance, quhare thair principall seit wes ordanit to be.

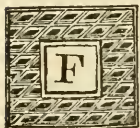
Thir Clerkis convenit, ilk yeir, anis, at the command of the gret maister and bischop thairof; specialie quhen ony hie and wechty materis occurit, concerning the defence of thair religioun or commonweil. Thir preistis war namit Druides; and wes institute in this Ile, be advise of the king and his nobillis, to mak sacrifice in the honour of thair Goddis, and to instruk the sonnis of nobill men in virtew and science, siclik as thay war lernit at Athenes. It wes comandit, that ane of thaim, as bischop and maister, sall have jurisdiction above the laif; before quhom wes borne ane gleib of fire, in signe of his honour and divinite: efter quhais deith, ane othir, maist approcheand to virtew and cunning, wes chosin to succeid in his place. Thir Clerkis, throw thair ithand exercitioun, increseit sone eftir richt expart in morall and naturall philosophie; and wes haldin be the pepill maist just and haly creaturis. Thay maid lawis, to discus the doutis baith of publik and singular actionis; and devisit nocht onlie punitioun for all maner of crimes, bot ordanit condigne rewardis to be gevin for al gud dedis. Thay cursit thaim that contempnit thair auctorite. This punishment wes evir odious amang oure forbearis; for the cursit pepill war, in thay dayis, resecat fra al gud cumpany, and not participant with the reward of honouris or digniteis, bot numerit amang the cumpany of infamit and wickit misdoaris. Thir preistis wer exemit fra all chargis of weir, and othir exactionis. Of thir preistis writtis mony auctouris; affirming, thair ordour and religioun first found in Britane: for thay cal the hail Ile of Albion under ane name, Britane.

Fynnane wes ane virtuous prince, and na les honorit for his civil than religious maneris; be quhilkis he decorit his realme. He maryit his son Durstus on Agasia, douchter to the King of Britonis; and conquest, be the samyn, na litill glore and benevolence amang the Britonis. At last, he past to gif consolation to the King of

Pichtis, quhilk wes liand that time in vehement fever at Camelon, quhare he deceissit, the xxx yeir of his regne. His body wes brocht to Berigone, an beryit amang the remanent sepulturis of his progenitouris.

### Chap. Fourteenth.

*Of King Durstus ; and how he was slane for his cruell tyranny.*



YNNANE deceissit on this wise, his sonne Durstus wes maid king. This Durstus, be insolent youth, wes gevin to drounknes and unbridelit lust ; and so different fra his faderis governance, that he haitit all thaim that his fader luffit. He brak the ordour of law that wes institute afore be his progenitouris, for ministratioun of justice. He usit na counsal in gret materis, bot onlie of thaim that favorit his vicious maneris, and culd find to him new maner of lustis. He was sa mischevous ane tyrane, that al the nobil men, that his fader usit on his secret counsall, war be him othir slane or banist ; or ellis, be feinyeit causis, forfaltit of thair landis and guddis. And, finalie, he wes brocht to sic cruelte, that not onlie he slew thame quhilkis war odius to him, bot als slew al thaim quhare he belevit to get ony riches or guddis be thair deith. He repudiat his nobil quene Agasia, the King of Britonis dochter ; and gart his vicious harlotis deforce hir.

Quhill this unhappy tyrane wes involvit with thir and siclik abhominable dedis, the capitanis of the Ilis, Lorne, Argyle, and Ros, be frequent conventionis amang thaimself, maid ane conspiratioun aganis him. So far haitit thir capitanis the rage of tyranny, that thay wald na langar abid at his opinion ; and to that fine, thay sall nocht appere as brekaris of the faith that suld be kept to thair natural prince, thay schew thaim, be opin proclamation, nocht assemblit to invaid the king, bot onlie to punis his vicious and unhappy counsalouris, be quhome the realme was brocht to sic enormiteis, that, without remeid war haistely providit, the samin suld pas to uter rewine.

Quhill the capitanis foresaid war preparand thair armis on this maner, the commonis, richt desirus to distroy this tyrane, rais haistely on athir hand to assist to thir capitanis. Yit part of the commonis wald nocht concurre with thir capitanis, beleving thaim nocht assemblit for ony common weill, bot only to usurpe the crown.

Durstus, na litil affrayit of thair assemblance, for he knew himself gilty, maid him to flee; and, seand na place sufficient to keip him, he send to the Britonis, desiring his quene Agasia to be send to him, with ane power of armit men, to resist ane certane of his nobillis, aganis him conspirit. At last, seand na support apperand, he began to turne his treasonabill mind to falset and slichtis, and tuke purpos to sla thir conspiratouris be sum hid waching; beleving be that way only to eschew the danger appering. Incontinent, he send ambassatouris to thir capitanis, and fenyeit him sa penitent, that he wald reforme all offencis and injuris done be him in perdition of the commounweill; and promittit, nocht only to governe the realme in times cuming be thair advise, bot to punis his wickit counsalouris, quhilkis war occasioun of all displesouris be him done. It was als ane odious thing, to ane king to fecht aganis his subdittis; specially quhen thay ar nocht set to degraid him of his crown, bot only to reduce him to better estait. And, for the observation thair of, he wald bind him, in the tempill of Diane, under quhat astrictioun thay plesit; and, gif that nicht nocht be sufficient, he suld cum to thaim but ony assurance, and submit him to underly quhat correctioun thay pleasit. And, that his wordis nicht have the more credit, he kest ane certane of his servitouris in prisone, as he war to punis thaim to the deith for thair assistance to his vices. Otheris, of small estimatioun, he arrayit in precious clething, and send thaim to the said capitanis to be punist at thair plesour.

The capitanis gevand haistelie credence to his wordis, send Doron, capitane of the tribe of Lorne, to take his aithis eftir his promis. Thus was Durstus brocht in the temple of Diane, and sworne before the preist thair of with all aithis that couth be devisit, to ressave thir capitanis to maist tender freindschip, remitting the rankour of his mind, with al maner of crime that nicht be imput to thaim; and not onlie to hald thaim as his faithfull and tendir freindis, bot to governe the realme in times cumming be thair avise.



Als sone as thir capitanis, be vane confidence, were cumin to him, he ressavit thame sa plesandlie, that baith his wordis, visage, and contenance, apperit but ony dissimilance. Thus was generall concord and blythnes maid on athir side. King Durstus, rejosing of this concord, callit thir capitanis to ane banquet, within his castell of Berigone. Als sone as thay war entrit, this unmercifull tyrane past to ane towr of the castell; and, incontinent, certane armit men ruschit furth of the chalmeris quhare thay war hid, and slew thir capitanis, and all utheris that enterit in the castell, of thair opinioun. The wiffis and matronis, that followit thair husbandis to this terrible banquet, evil hurt and woundit in debait of thair said husbandis, past out of Berigone with dolorus spraichis, crying vengeans on this cursit tyrane, for violatioun of his faith and promis.

This treson and falsset of Durstus was nocht lang unpunist: for al the remanent freindis of thir capitanis assemblit ane army, baith of men and wemen sufficient to beir wappinnis, sa haistely, that thay laid ane sege about the castel of Berigone, or Durstus was advertist thair of. Ane certane of tham past incontinent to the wallis, and said, thay suld have sone experience, quhiddir he was more crafty in treason or fechtung. Durstus, disparit of help, come out of the castel, in his wod fury, with ane cumpany of evill arrayit peple; and was sone spulyeit baith of his liffe and crown, the nint yeir of his regne. And, howbeit he was ane vicious tyrane, he was buryit in ane kingly sepulture, amang his forbearis.



## Chap. Fifteenth.

*Of gret contention amang the Capitanis. Of the orisoun maid be Charon, Capitane of Argyle; and how Ewin, the first of that name, was maid King.*



URSTUS, slane in this maner, his sonnys fled in Ireland. Sone eftir, ane convention was maid to cheis the king. The nobillis beand all of ane mind, concludit to suffir nane of Durstus blude to regne above thaim, in adventure that sum of thame suld revenge his slaughter; and, thairfore, thay tuke lang consultation, of quhat linage and blud the king suld be chosin. Sum desirit Ragaon, chiftane of the Ilis, for he conspirit first aganis Durstus; yit, becaus he favourit evill dedy men, he was repellit. Utheris desirit Cormanus, capitane of Lorne. Thus war the tribis devidit in sindry vocis.

Efter lang contention, Charon, capitane of Argyle, said in this maner: “Ye may have perfite experience, wise faderis, be the ci-  
 “vill weris of Dowall and Ferquhard, and now more recentlie be  
 “the empire of wickit Durstus, how dangerus and unthankfull is  
 “to all pepill to have ane cruell tyrane regnand above thaim; for  
 “be thay samin weris, this nobil realme, quhilk has bene debatit sa  
 “mony yeris with gret manheid, wisdome, and curage, wes neir  
 “brocht to finall eversione; for be the samin weris, our nobillis war  
 “slane, and our commonis brocht to sa vile servitude, that, gif the  
 “samin had continewit, oure name and linage suld have perist in  
 “Albione. Quhat miserie sustenit our faderis in Berigone, quhen  
 “thay war constrainit, be urgent necessite, to saif thair miserable  
 “livis on the fude of thair bowellis! Quhat danger sustenit our  
 “King Rewther, evading his ennimes be maist perellus ischeing,  
 “quhen his realme was neir lost, and Colane, the vailycant capitane,  
 “slane, onelie for defence of him and his realme! Quhat fury was  
 “in thay nobill women, that slew thaimself at Berigone, that thay  
 “suld nocht leif in servitude of ennimes! Quhat hes brocht our

“ nobillis to sic mesiry, that thay war banist, and socht suple at un-  
 “ couth realmes? Nocht bot sedition intestine amang thaimself.  
 “ The Britonis, for al thair riches and chevalrie, nicht nevir have  
 “ maid sic incursionis and heirschippis on our landis and peple, war  
 “ nocht we maid first ane reddey gait to thaim be our awin dissen-  
 “ tioun. It is, thairfore, to be eschewit, richt vailycant men, that  
 “ this dissentioun, now rising amang you, cum nocht to dammage  
 “ of your commonweil. Ye have deliverit, now laitlie, the realme  
 “ of the tyranny of Durstus; ye have sufficientlie revengit the slauch-  
 “ ter of the nobillis be his deith: now is the time maist ganand to  
 “ help oure materis. Tine nocht, my gud freindis, the victory be  
 “ civill dissentioun, that ye have conquest with gret labour. Ye se  
 “ the pepil glaid of Durstus deith, and desirus to have ane king be  
 “ your election. Quhil thay ar now at your opinioun, mak ane king  
 “ that will tak your part: otherwayis, na thing sal be amang yow,  
 “ bot civill weris, heirschippis, and slauchter baith of nobillis and  
 “ commonis; and, in the meintime, sum of Durstus freindis sall  
 “ nocht onlie usurp the crown, bot sall punis yow for his slauchter.”  
 The nobillis and commonis, seand Charon of sic excellent wisdom, e  
 gif to him power to cheis quhom he thocht best to be king. Than  
 Charon, that the crown sal remane ay of the same blud, chesit  
 Ewin, the first of that name, to be king; for Durstus and Ewin war  
 brethir sonnys. Thus was Ewin crownit in the chair of marbill, at  
 Berigone. This castell was haldin certane dayis aganis him, be  
 freindis of Durstus; nochtheles, it was finalie randerit.

This Ewin was the first King of Scottis that socht the aith of fi-  
 delite fra his subditis; that is to say, that his nobillis and subditis  
 suld be leil and trew to him. Throw quhilk it come in use, mony  
 yeris eftir, that all the capitanis of tribis, at thair electioun, con-  
 stranit thair subditis to gif thair aithis of fidelite; quhilk rite is yit  
 observit: for the pepill, dwelling in the hie land and Ilis thair of, at  
 electioun of thair capitane, haldis up thair handis to be leil and trew  
 to him; and, als sone as the capitane is chosin, thay past to the nixt  
 mote, and defendis, under pane of deid, that nane of thaim name  
 thair capitane with ony uthir sloggorne, bot with the auld name of  
 that tribe; and, quhen thay heir his name, to bek and discover thair  
 heid, with na les reverence than he war a God. I beleif, thairfore,

that the pepill that dwellis in hie land, or in the Ilis, quhen thair hieest besines occurris, sweris be the fute, or hand, or name of thair capitane, as sum hid divinite war in the same.

Ewin, to stabil his realme in virtew, cominndit the young children of his realme to be nurist with skars and hard fude; and to sleip erar on hard burdis, than on plumis or coddis; and to be ithandly exercit in swift rinning and wersling, to make thaim the more abill to debait his realme, quhen time requirit: and ordanit thaim, to abstene fra all thing that nicht make thaim soft or effeminat. This virtuus prince past throw all the boundis of his realme for ministration of justice, and punist criminabill personis with sindry punitioun: some skirgit, and sum he punist to the deith.

The samin time, come the ambassatouris of Pichtis, desiring, be the tenoure of confideratioun, to have support aganis the Britonis, quhilkis war laity cumming, with gret incursionis, in the Mers, and purposit to sege thair ciete of Camelon. King Ewin, to support his confederate freindis, come with ane haisty army aganis the Britonis. The Scottis and Pichtis, assemblit in this maner, went forthwart with na les curage, than victory had ben present in thair handis; so far war thair mindis inflammit to revenge the injuris done to thaim in the yeris afore. The Britonis, na thing affrayit of thair cuming, met thaim, with na les ferocite, on the tothir sid. Followit, ane dangerus and cruell battall, focht in lang time with uncertane victory; bot, at last, the nicht severit thaim, with richt sorowfull and doutsum chance of battall. The confiderat kingis, seand thair army brokin, fled, under nicht, to Pentland hillis; and the Britonis, brokin with siclike calamite, and disparit of ony new support, fled, on the same maner as disconfist pepill, and left thair carage behinde thaim. Als sone as the confiderat pepill war advertist heirof, thay returnit to the same partis quhare the Britonis war campit afore, and partit the spulye thairof be custum of armis. Sic thingis done, King Ewin returnit to Berigon, and rewardit richely the freindis of thaim that war slane in this battall. Sum of his capitanis, for thair provin vassalage, war promovit to publik officis; and othirs rewardit with riches and gudis. And, fra thens, he concludit to governe his realme in tranquillite and peace. He maid certane jugis to abide in sindry regionis of his realme, to minister justice to the pepil. He

ordanit certane exploratouris to remane in ilk schire, that thay nicht serche sornaris, theiffis, and reiffaris, and bring thaim to his lawis. And, that thir exploratouris nicht continew in thair office, he dotat thaim with sindry landis. In memory heirof, remanis yit to our days sindry infestmentis of auld baronis, quhais landis war gevin be virtuous princis for the samin caus; howbeit thay exerce noch the effect thairof.

King Ewin biggit ane castel nochit far fra Berigon, callit than Ewin, efter his name; now callit, Dounstafage; and gidit his realme mony yeris efter, to the gret commodite of his common weill; and deceissit, the xix yeir of his regne.

### Chap. Sixteenth.

*How Gillus, bastard sonne to King Ewin, slew two Sonnis and two Nepotis of Durstus, to make himself King; and how the thrid Nepot, Edeir, eschapit.*



FTIR deith of Ewin, his bastard son, Gillus, conventit the nobillis, to bury his fader. And, in the time of his obsequies, com Dothane and Dorgall, two sonniss of Durstus, fast' contending for the crown: for thay war reconseld with King Ewin afore his deth. Yit, becaus thay war twinnis, borne at anis, the law couth noch decerne, in thay dayis, quhilk of thaim had maist richt to the crown. Thus rais ane shameful debait betwix thir two brethir; ilk ane of thaim set in othir slauchtir.

This Gillus was ane man of subtell ingine; and, seikand occasioun to conquis the crown, ekit the hatrent of thir two brethir be mony slichtis, and armit thame in athir slauchter. At last, be appointment of Gillus, thir two brethir war brocht togidder to be agreit, be avise of freindis, of all debatis, and ane of thaim to be maid king; nochtheles, thay war sa extreme at this conventioun on athir side, that thay partit war freindis than thay met.

Nocht lang eftir, thay war brocht agane be Gillus in ane secret



chalker. Eftir lang consultatioun it was concludit sum time to de-  
vide the crown betwix thaim, and sum time to mak ane of thaim  
king. Always Gillus inflammit more thair hatrent than he mesit :  
and, in the mene time, certane armit men ruschit out of privat chal-  
meris, as thay war commandit be Gillus, and slew thaim baith.

Eftir thair slauchtir, Gillus ran heir and thair, with piteus crys,  
schawin how he eschapit ane richt dangerus adventure, quhare  
the kingis sonnis war laid for his slauchter, and baith slane ; and,  
incontinent, he commandit his freindis, that stude about him, to  
have him to sum sicker place ; for, gif he fled nocht in time, he  
suld be tint. His freindis, beleving al thingis trew as he schew,  
followit him to the castell of Dounstafage. Gillus entering in this  
wise within the castel, and finding mony of his opinion, arrayit his  
men in sindry ambushementis, and commandit to sla all thaim  
that war repugnant to his desiris. Incontinent he callit the capi-  
tanis of the tribis to ane counsall, and began, be lang orisone, to de-  
test the insolence, avarice, and unnatural hatrent of the kingis sonnis,  
quhilkis, contending for the crown, hes slane thaimself. And on  
the same maner he detestit the bludy tyranny of Durstus, thair fa-  
der ; schawand, be mony reasonis, his sonnis unabill for the crown ;  
and gaif thankis, thairfore, to the Goddis, that the cuntre was deli-  
verit of thair tyranny, and the tresson falling on thaimself, quhilk  
thay devisit for him. Finally, he schew the gret laubour, cure, and  
diligence, that he tuke baith for the commoun wele, and to have  
brocht the kingis sonnis to concord ; quhilkis as than war baith slane,  
he nocht knawand be quhat maner, bot narrowly eschaping with his  
lif. And, forthir, he schew, how his fader, King Ewin, left him  
governour be his testament, with power to part all his tresoure and  
gudis amang the nobillis that luffit him during his lif. And, that  
the commoun weil nicht suffer na damage, he desirit the admini-  
stration of the realme to be gevin to him, quhill it war cleirly dis-  
cussit, quhay war just heritouris thairto. The capitanis, quhilkis  
war at this time within the castell, knawand weil his treason, to saif  
thair liffis, maid him king.

Als sone as Gillus was maid king on this wise, to stabil the realme  
to him with sickir firmance, he tuk the aithis of his pepil to be his  
faithful liegis. Sic thingis done, he partit the tresure and guddis



of King Ewin, as he promittit; and, be that way, he conquest thair benevolence and favour. Nochtheles, the same ambition and avarice that movit him to seik the crown, remanit with him eftir that he was king: for he set his mind, be mony slichtis, to distroy all the linage and blude of Durstus, that he nicht reiose the crown but ony clame of otheris. And becaus he wes advertist, that Dothane, the sonne of Durstus, afore slane, had thre sonnys nurist in the Ile of Man, under the wise Clerkis thair of; of quhilkis the eldest, Lismorus, had xii yeris in age; the secund, Cormacus, x yeris; and the thrid, Edeir, nocht thre yeir of age; he went the nerrest way to the said Ile, with dissimilat mind, as he wald have brocht thir children to his castell of Dunstafage, to be fosterit thair with otheris nobillis sonnys of the realme. The eldest two, arrayit in thair best avise, met King Gillus; quhome he maist tenderlie ressavit, and spendit the residew of the nicht in cherising thir barnis, that the gret maister and bischop of the said Ile suld have na suspition of his hid treason. On the morrow, he began to common with the bischop and his clerkis, concerning thair religioun, constitutionis, and lawis. On the thrid day he maid sacrifice to his Goddis, with solempnit cerimonis; and eftir that he had left certane men behind him to sla the thrid sonne, Edeir, he pullit up salis, and arrivit at Dounstafage, havand with him the two eldest sonnys of the said Dothane, with thair foster-fader and brether; for, in thay dayis, the pepill had na les affection to thair foster-brether and fader, than to thair awin naturall fader or brether.

The youngest son, Edeir, was in sic infirmite, that na man belevit his lif. Als sone as he began to convales, he was brocht be his nuris to Argyle, quhare he was nurist lang time amang the desert craggis and montanis of that land: for scho suspeckit na gud to cum of his two remanent brether that come in Gillus handis. And, as scho conjecturit, so followit: for the first nicht that Gillus returnit to Dounstafage, he slew baith thir sonnys of Dothane, in the armis of thair foster-fader and brether. And, herand that the thrid son, Edeir, was eschapit, he become sa wod and furius, that he slew the men that he left behind him for his slauchter, at thair returning. And, fra thens, he set his uter besines to persew Edeir to the deith;

and ceissit nocht, quhill he was suerly advertist of his fleing in Ireland.

### Chap. Seventeenth.

*How King Gillus was banist. How Cadal, Chiftane of Brigandis, was maid Governour, and slew Gillus in Ireland. And how Ewin the Secund was maid King.*



Or lang efter, ane counsall was set at Dounstafage; in the quibilk Gillus schew, be lang orison, that he had deservit na litil favour of his nobillis and commonis for the prudent administratioun of his realme, gevand his uter besines baith to take away al movaris of sedicion, and to saif it fra dissention, and weris intestine, and fra the insolence of ane young priunce; and, thairfore, he desirit na suspition to be imput to him, howbeit the sonnys of Dothane war deceissit, as apperit, be the mind of Goddis; for as thay ordanit kingdomes and empire to be, so have thay commandit na wemen nor barnis, bot men only of provin virtew, to have the samin in governance. Forthir, thair was sindry seditius men, and movaris of discord, the quhillkis was necessar to be drawin fra the laif.

Als sone as Gillus had said thir wordis, he enterit, with ane certane of his nobillis, in the castel of Dounstafage. Incontinent, he gart sla all the freindis of Durstus, but ony miseration, quhidder thay war men, wiffis, or barnis. Mony of the noblis that stude about him, was richt astunist for this cruelte; dreidand to be slane on the same maner. Gillus seand thaim affrayit, maid thaim consolatioun; for, gif thay continewit at his opinioun, thay sall leif in gret felicite in times cuming. Efter this, he kest his wickit mind ilk day to more cruelte, that he micht all uterly distroy all thaim that favorit Durstus.

Quhen this bludy tyrane had rounge certane time, with thir, and siclike inhumane cruelteis, unsemand to ane prince; the capitanis and nobillis of Scotland assemblit ane army of chosin men fra all partis

of the realme, and conspirit aganis him with sic prudence, that this tyrane wist nocht thair of, quhil thay war arrayit afore him at Dounstafage. Gillus than, destitute of all support, and havand nane with him bot sa mony as war outhir haldin aganis thair will, or coft with his money, gat ane fischar bait, and fled in Ireland.

Efter his fleing, his men war al yoldin to Cadall, chiftane of Brigandis, and baith his castellis, Berigone and Dounstafage, taikin. The nobillis, be gud advisement, that this tyrane, Gillus, suld be perpetually exilit, maid Cadall governour; quhilk kest his extreme labour to persew Gillus to the deith; and come finaly in the Ilis, quhare he fand Edeir, the thrid son of Dothane, quhilk was savit afore fra the treasone of Gillus be his nurice, as said is. And becaus the said Edeir was destitute of freindis, (for thay war al slane be Gillus,) he was send to Epiak, the principall ciete of Brigance; to be kept thair, quhil he war of more perfectioun and aige.

Gillus, banist on this wise, complanit to the princis of Ireland, of the hevvy injuris done to him be the Scottis; be quhome he was exilit, and spulyeit of his empire and kingdome; throw quhilk na place was left sicker to him in Albion: and promittit, gif the said princis wald restore him to his realme, to gif the Ilis of Scotland fra the empire of Scottis, to be haldin perpetually of the dominion of Ireland. The Ireland princis, glaid of his promis, assemblit ane army to cum in Scotland for the same effect.

Cadall, weill advertist of thair ordinance, returnit to Dounstafage, and tuke consultatioun of the nobillis, how the said Gillus might be esely resistit. Than was it concludit that Ewin, the secund of that name, sal be king; for he was nepot to King Fynnane, gottin of his bruther, Dowal.

Gillus, seand the see campis stuffit in all partis of Albion to resist his cuming, arrivit in the Ilis; quhare he exercit his cruelte but ony miseratioun or piete; sine tuke with him all the guddis that might be caryit, and the remanent put in fire. King Ewin, impatient to suffer thir injuris, providit ane flote of galyeonis and schippis, with marineris, weirmen, and other thingis necessar; and send thaim with Cadall, his admirall, in Ireland. Sone efter, Cadall pullit up salis, and, with fortunat windis, arrivit in Ireland. At quhais cum-

ing went sic confluence of pepil to him, that he semit nocht only to vincus Gillus, bot all the pepill of Ireland.

Gillus sone efter arrayit his folkis, and, be sound of trumpet, baith the armyis junit, and faucht with gret cruelte on ilk side; quhill, at last, mony of Gillus folkis, wery and mate, specially thay that thocht it odious to fecht aganis thair native pepill, fled fra Gillus, and randerit thaim to Cadall. Than Gillus, disparit of victory, raif of his coit-armour, and fled in a thik wod. Sone efter, certane armit men war send to seik Gillus; and fand him finaly in ane dirk coif of the wod, neir famist of hunger; and incontinent thay slew him, and brocht his heid to Cadall.

This miserabill end maid Gillus, the second yeir of his regne; confiding our mekill in his tyranny and falset.

### Chap. Eighteenth.

*How Cadall, returnand out of Ireland, lost the maist part of his Army be rage of Sees. And of the consolatioun maid to him be King Ewin.*



FTER the deith of Gillus, Cadall was returnand in Albioun, be the Ireland sees, with his victorious army: quhen suddandly rais ane unmerciful storme, and turnit all his glore of victory in desolatioun; for, the irrecoverabill skaithis falling be the said tempest, passit all the profet of his victory. The miserabill moderis and wiffis, knawing thair husbandis and sonnis perist in the sees, convenit to the schippis, with hidduous spraichis and schowtis. Amang othir lamentabill sichtis, Cadall come to land in dolorus array, beirand his handis to the hevin, and warying fortoun and the Goddis, that distroyit sa mony nobill and vailyeant men, converting thair glore of victory in supreme misery; quhais dolorus havingis war sa petuous, that every man had compassioun thairof.

King Ewin, richt sorrowfull of thir novellis, come, with gret diligence, to Cadall, and said in this maner: "Thou hes brocht to me



“ and my realme, maist vailyeant Cadall, na litill consolatioun ; re-  
 “ turning with thy victorius army in Albioun, unbrokin be injuris  
 “ of ennimes. Thou hes vincust my ennimes in ane uncouth regioun,  
 “ fechtand manly, be displayit baneris, for the eis of my realme and  
 “ common weill. The tyrane Gillus, pump of every vice, is vincust.  
 “ Howbeit, his schamefull fleing nicht be no support to him ; quhais  
 “ heid, schorne fra his body, is brocht in Albion, to that fine, that  
 “ he sal nocht want now, quhen he is deid, the schame and disho-  
 “ nour that he deservit for his tyranny in his lif. My adversariis  
 “ ar penitent of thair rebelloun, and brocht to my opinion. Our  
 “ army, be thy industry, ar saiffit but reproche amang thair un-  
 “ couth and strongest fais. Thou hes left na thing undone, that  
 “ pertenit to ane forey campiou. Na caus occurris to reclame aganis  
 “ fortoun nor the hevinnis ; for, thoct ane part of thy army be  
 “ perist, be tempest and rage of seis, yit thow, be benevolence and  
 “ favour of Goddis, ar saffit to the hie honour of this realme. Thow  
 “ arrivit in Ireland nocht but propiciant favour of the Goddis, re-  
 “ turning with sa riche spulyeis, but ony injuris of ennimes. And,  
 “ thoct thy ennimes reiose of the mischance falling to thy army,  
 “ yit na glore may succeid thair of to thaim. For the stait of eirdly  
 “ creatouris hes this condicioun : eftir prosperite cumis adversite,  
 “ and eftir adversite cumis prosperite ; proceeding be reward of fa-  
 “ tal destineis, quhais affect may nocht be movit, nor yit eschewit,  
 “ be prudence of mortall creatouris. Thow hes, thairfore, na caus  
 “ to lament, bot erar to have thy adversite in pacience, saiffing the  
 “ to ane better forton. And sen na creatouris may remeid thir dis-  
 “ plesouris bot the Goddis, quhilkis governis the empire of men at  
 “ thair pleseir, schaw now ane plesand vult with us ; that thy  
 “ freindis and ennimes may know the, be ferme constance, na mair  
 “ brokin in adversite, than proud in prosperite ; that thy spreit and  
 “ curage may appere als invincible, as thy body is in battall.”

Cadall heirand this consolatioun of his prince, fenyceit al the cheir  
 he nicht : howbeit, he repentit sair, that this unmercifull tempest,  
 that consumit sa mony vailyeant men, left him on live, to se thair  
 mischeif and sorow. Of this calamite falling to Cadall, is sum part  
 rehersit, be the poete Claudiane, and othir auctouris.



### Chap. Nineteenth.

*How the Kingis of Scottis and Pichtis war alliat togidder be Mariage. How Balus, King of Orknay, slew himself be disperation. Of the wise counsall gevin be King Ewin to Edeir.*



ING Ewin, eftir the slauchter of Gillus, desiring to governe his realme in justice, visit all the boundis thair of, and punist faltouris; and gave to Cadall, for the faithfull service be him done, the town of Epiak, with sindry othir landis and townis of Brigance, in fre regalite.

Nocht lang eftir, King Ewin, accompanit with his nobillis, met Gethus, King of Pichtis, on the borduris of Brigance, and renewit the band of peace with Pichtis. This peace wes roborat be mariage; for King Ewin maryit Siora, dochter of Gethus the Thrid, King of Pichtis. This mariage wes solempnisit be the bischop and preistis of the Ile of Man.

Nocht lang eftir, he wes advertist, that Balus, King of Orknay, wes cumming, with ane flote of schippis, throw Pentland Firth, and maid na litill heirschippis and slauchter in Ros and Cathnes. King Ewin, to meit thir attemptatis, assemblit ane flote of schippis with sic deligence, that Balus wes not advertist thair of, quhill he wes arivit in sicht. The Orknay men, abasit of his suddand cumming, war constranit to gif battall: bot thay war sone discomfist; and, be continewall chais, drevin to the seis, quhare ane part of thame eschapid be fischear batis, and the residew vincust and slane. King Balus seing na way to eschape, that he sall nocht cum in his ennimes handis, slew himself. King Ewin, throw this victory, conquest gret favour of his pepill. And, quhen he wes returning hame be the Ireland seis, he arrivit in the mouth of Lochtie, quhare he biggit ane town, callit Inverlochtie; and maid thair ane sicker refuge, in the honour of his Goddis, defending, under pane of deid, that ony criminabill personis be abstrakit out of the samin, nochtwithstanding quhatsumevir crimis be thaim committit. This town wes

eftir ane commoun port till all marchandis of France or Spanye, for the incredibill plente of fische swommand in thay seis. Of this town remanis nocht, in our days, saif onlie the ruinus wallis thairof; for it wes evertit be the Danis, as we sall eftir schaw. King Ewin biggit ane othir town on the river of Nes, quhilk is yit namit Innernes; quhair sum time wes gret repair of marchandis, quhilkis come out of Almanay to seik riche furringis; as martrikis, bevaris, and siclik skiunnis, quhilkis aboundis in that regioun. This town remanis yit, under the auld name, full of marchandise and guddis; howbeit it be oftines heryit be evil nichtbouris liand thair about.

King Ewin, as ane noble and illuster prince, baith in peace and weir, passit the remanent of his dayis but ony domistik or uncouth weris; and peacefyit the seditionis that rais in the Ilis be marvellus wisdome: for he detestit ay civill weris, als weil quhen he wes in privat as in publik auctorite. Schort time afore his deith, he past to Epiak, to agre the sonnis of Cadall; quhilkis fell in gret contention, efter thair faderis deith, for his riches and guddis: nochtheles, this nobill prince aggreit thaim sone efter his cuming. And efter that he had done the obsequies for Cadall, effering to the gise of thay dayis, he gart rais ane huge stane, gravin to the quik image of Cadall, apon ane hie mot; and commandit the pepill to offer him wine and sens: for oure forebearis war dissavit, als weil as othir pepil, in thair arrouris.

King Ewin, sorrowfull of the deith of Cadall, fell in hevvy infirmite; and was sa disparit of his heill, that he resignit the crown to Edeir, the thrid nepote of King Durstus, for he was just herytoure to the crown, as we have schawin. And to that fine, that Edeir suld be ane gud king, he counsalit him, to defende his liegis and subdittis fra all injuris; and to do na man injure; and to geif na man office nor auctorite, that is ennime to justice; and to dres all gret materis be himself, and the small materis to commit to his nobillis; and to governe him ay in sic maner, that he may be worthy to regne above his subdittis; and nevir to move battall les than he micht na othir wayis do; and, quhen it was necessar to have battall, to irk of na chargis pertening to weirly ordinance; and to devoid him nevir of piete, for that virtew was maist semand in ane prince: and, finaly,

commandit him, above all othir besines, to have his Goddis in reverence, quhais favoure wes ane sover protection to all realmis. And quhen he had gevin this counsal to Edeir, he deceissit, the xvii yeir of his regne. Efter quhais deceis, was raisit ane crafty imatge, maid to his similitude; quhilk was haldin mony yeris efter in gret veneratioun amang the pepill.

And sa endis heir the Secund Buke.

# The Thrid Buke.

---

## HEIR BEGINNIS THE THRID BUKE OF THE CRONIKLIS OF SCOTLAND.

---

### Chap. First.

*Of King Edeir ; and how he revengit the heirschippis maid be the  
tratoure Bredus in the Ilis.*



WIN deceissit in this maner, Edeir was crownit in the chier of merbil. And, sone efter, he vesit all the boundis of his realme ; quhais passaige was the mair plesand to his nobillis, that he was gevin to hunting : for he delitit in no thing more than in chais of wild beistis with houndis and rachis, and specially of wolffis, for thay ar noisum to tame bestiall. This regioun, throw the cauld humouris thairof, ingeneris wolffis of feirs and cruell nature.

King Edeir brocht the pepill to sic tranquillite, that thay levit mony yeris but ony oppression or injure of nichtbouris. Bot at last, Bredus of the Ilis, cosing to Gillus afore rehersit, arrivit with mony schippis and galyeonis in Argyle, to revenge the slauchter of the said Gillus, and othir his freindis, slane in Ireland. The pepill, im-

patient to suffer the heirschippis and slauchter be him maid, complaint to King Edeir, quhilk was huntand on the nixt montanis for the time. King Edeir advertist heirop, past, that same nicht, with ane company of chosin men to the sees, quhair the said Bredus was arrivit; and, first, he brint all thair schippis and galyeonis, that thay nicht have na refuge to fle in Ireland. On the nixt morrow, King Edeir persewit this Bredus and his complicis with sic manheid, that thay war finaly tane, and put to deith. Sic thingis done, King Edeir past in the Ilis, quhare he punist sindry conspiratouris, that followit the opinioun of Gillus and Bredus.

### Chap. Second.

*How the Britonis send Ambassatouris to King Edeir, for support aganis Julius Cesar. Of thair orison, and of King Edeiris answer. And how the said Julius was dounge out of Albion, be support of Scottis.*



As sone as Edeir had dantit all invasouris of his realme, he returnit to Dounstafage. In the mene time, come to him the ambassatouris of Cassibilane, King of Britonis, desiring support aganis Julius Cesar, Romane Empe-  
 rour; quhais army was reddy, with maist awfull ordinance, to cum in Albion. Edeir plesandly ressavit thir ambassatouris, and comandit thaim to propone thair eirandis. Sone efter ane nobill man, namit Androgeus, said in this maner: “ I will say na thing before  
 “ this famous auditoure, in the name of Cassibilane, King of Bri-  
 “ tonis, maist nobill prince; saif it only that sal pertene baith to the  
 “ weil of thy realme and liegis. Nature, the wise moder of all crea-  
 “ touris, hes put in this Ile of Albioun thre vailyeant pepill; nocht  
 “ to that behuffe, that thay suld leif in seditioun, and invaid othir  
 “ as beistis, but reasoun; bot to increas togidder under ane benivo-  
 “ lence and freindschip, that thay may be the more strang to resist  
 “ uncouth ennimes quhenewir it sall happin thaim to be invadit.  
 “ Quha may beleif or traist the realme to stand sicker, quhen the



“ Britonis ar distroyit be Romanis? Bot gif sum man, be vane  
 “ esperance, wald traist the Romanis, quhilkis reiffis sceptouris fra  
 “ kingis, to be the more plesand and mercifull to yow that youre  
 “ nichtbouris ar distroyit, thou may have cognossance, be dammage  
 “ of othir pepill, that this opinioun is vane. The Romanis, calland  
 “ thaimself, be proude insolence, lordis of the world, quhilkis ar ha-  
 “ tit with all pepill for thair tirannie, ar determit to cum haistely in  
 “ Albioun, to subdew the samin to thair empire. Quhat othir thing  
 “ may we beleif the Romanis sall do, quhen thay have subdewit us  
 “ Britonis, bot, with siclik avarice and tyranny, to reif fra yow Scottis  
 “ and Pichtis your landis, lawis, and liberteis? Quhat othir thing  
 “ desire thay, bot to sit down in our landis, castellis, and townis;  
 “ and outhir to thrill us to maist schamefull servitude, or ellis to  
 “ banis the maist nobill and vailyeant men amang us? Thair deidis  
 “ schawis weill thair tyranny: as may be weil provin to us be the  
 “ rewine of Cartage, sum time the riche ciete, and brocht finaly to  
 “ nocht, fra it was randerit to Romanis, nochtwithstanding that it  
 “ abaid at thair opinion and faith. Forther, gif sa remot and un-  
 “ couth history may nocht move yow, behald the Gallis, your nicht-  
 “ bouris, quhilkis, als sone as thay war vincust be Romanis, war  
 “ thirlit to perpetuall servitude; thair munitionis, and every maner  
 “ of wappinnis tane fra thaim. It is nocht to be traistit, that Ro-  
 “ manis sall be more propiciant to us Albanis, gif we be vincust,  
 “ than thay have bene to otheris afore; for ay the more incressis  
 “ thair dominioun, thair tyranny is the mair insufferabill. Lat us  
 “ heirfore resist thir commoun injuris, with all our pissance equale  
 “ concurring. Best is to resist this violence of Romanis in the be-  
 “ ginning, in adventure thay grow efter sa strang, quhen thair  
 “ power is junit togidder, that thay may nocht be resistit. Belt ye  
 “ thairfore, maist invincibil prince, with thy provin virtew, to sup-  
 “ port us be thir thy vailyeant pepil. Come, lusty gallandis, array-  
 “ it in battal aganis our common ennimes. Defend your anciant li-  
 “ berte, and have ferme esperance of victory; sen our common en-  
 “ nimes, nocht content of the remanent boundis of the world, be in-  
 “ saciabil avarice, and but ony occasion of injuris, intendis to sub-  
 “ dew this Ile, quhilk is severit fra all pepill, to thair empire. For-

“ thir, quhen ye, be favour of Goddis hes conquest victory, above  
 “ mony untellabil comoditeis, ye sall reiose youre liberte, and con-  
 “ quest glore immortall baith to yow, and your realme.”

Quhen Androgeus had endit this orison, he was removit aside, quhill the noblis had advisit quhat was to be done. Efter ripe deliberation it was concludit, to send support to Britonis, to resist the commoun danger appering. Than King Edeir maid answer to thir ambassatouris on this wise: “ Ye desire a thing, weil belovit Britonis, baith honest and proffitabill till our common weil; movand  
 “ us to defend this realme, quhilk hes bene sa vailyeantly defendit  
 “ be oure progenitouris, fra extreme danger thairto appering. The  
 “ avarice, riches, chevalry, and pridfull empire of Romanis ar schawin  
 “ weill to us be thaim that hes bene subdewit thairto. And, forthir,  
 “ we know weill, gif the Romanis subdew yow Britonis to thair dominion, thay will invaid us nixt, and outthir thrill us to vile servitude, or ellis expell us out of Albioun. The damage of Gallis  
 “ and Spanyartis, fra quhome our anciant faderis descendit, schewis  
 “ daily to us, quhat affliction and misery thay sustene that ar subdewit to Romanis. It had bene mair honest to thaim, be my opinion, to have fouchtin maist strangly to the deid in defence of  
 “ thair liberte, than to have reservit thair miserabill livis to sic  
 “ schameful servitude. We know the Britonis wil nocht tine thair  
 “ realme, thair liberte, and lawis, but strang bergane; and, sen our  
 “ common weill may suffer na danger sa lang as ye Britonis standis  
 “ in sicker firmance, we ar, be degest counsall, profoundly resolvit  
 “ to jeoperde our livis and guddis in defence of yow; thinkand better to de vailyeantly in that sort, gif sic thingis be plesand to the  
 “ Goddis, than to remane at hame, suffering yow, our tender freindis,  
 “ to be reft fra your landis and liberteis; and, finaly, to rander oure  
 “ native Goddis, wifflis, and barnis, in our ennimes handis. For thir  
 “ reasonis, we will caus our army, in maist weirly ordinance, to be  
 “ send haistely to London, in support of Cassibilane, King of Britonis. We will als require Gethus, our confiderat brother, the  
 “ King of Pichtis, to concour with us, be band of alliance, to the  
 “ same affect. And, we beleif, all thay that dwellis in Albioun, be  
 “ respect thay have to the common weill, will heir us gladly in that

“ behalf ; for the luf we beir unto our native cuntre, enforcis us with  
“ invincibil bodyis to assist thairto.” The ambassatouris of Britonis, rasis in esperance of gret felicitye be this answer, returnit to Cassibilane.

Als sone as thir ambassatouris war dispasshit, King Edeir send two vailyeant men, Cadallane and Dowall, capitaneis of Brigandis and Lorne, with x.m. chosin men, to London. The cuming of thir Scottis was the more thankfull to Cassibilane, that he was to fecht aganis the maist pissant enneme, Julius, dantour of the world.

In the mene tyme, Cassibilane was advertist, that Julius was arrivit within his sees, and brocht his army on land ; and the pepill fled that war left to resist his cuming on the see camp ; the nobill men, that vailyeantly resistit, slane ; and the Egill, quhilk is the ansenye of Romanis, prowldly displayit on hicht. Be thir novellis, na litill affray was among the Britonis. Nocht theles, Cassibilane maid thame plesand consolation, and exhortit thame vehemently to battall, for defence of thair realme and liberte, thair wiffis, barnis, and native Goddis ; quhilkis ar sa deir to mortall pepill, that but thaim the lif of man is nothir plesand nor sicker. “ Beleif na othir thing,” said he, “ bot sicker victory ; sen your ennemes persewis yow be na “ occasioun of injuris, bot only be thair insaciabil avarice.” The Britonis war rasis in gret esperance of victory be cunning of Scottis and Pichtis ; for thay had na litill confidence in thair manheid and chevalry. Incontinent, Cassibilane went forthwart with his hale power aganis the Romanis. And first he send his horsmen, with sindry wageouris in weir-cartis, to breke the array and ordinance of Romanis. At the first contering, was two smal incursionis be uncertane victory ; bot, at last, baith the armyis junit with thair hale power. Followit, ane doutsum battall, lang continewing with uncertane chance : quhill at last, be cuming of Welchemen and Cornwall, sa huge nois rais be reird and sowne of bellis, that hang on thair bardingis, that the ennemes war affrait, and finally put to flicht. The Britonis, with Scottis and Pichtis, that come to thair support, followit on the chace with sic fury, skatterit but array, that thay gat mair skaith than thay did to thair ennemes. The Romanis kepit sic ordour in thair fleing, and abaidd sa fast togidder at thair ansenye, that thay maid thaim oftymes to renew battall, howbeit thay war

nocht of power to resist. The Britonis, wide skatterit in sindry buschementis, eschapit nocht in thair chace but gret slauchter; quhill, at the last, nicht severit thaim.

Als sone as Julius persavit the chace endit, he gadderit the residew of his folkis togidder, and send all the woundit men to his schippis, with purpos to revenge this outrage on the morrow. Nochtheles herand, on the morrow, that mony of his schippis war sa brokin be violent tempest, that thay war not abill to do him proffet; and dreidand that this calamite, fallin to his schippis, suld be na les curage to his ennimes than discomfitour to his awin folkis; he supersedit his intent, quhil he saw ane time mair ganand. Als sone as he had reparit his navy, he brocht all his folkis to new strength, qubare the Britonis nicht nocht invaid him; sine pullit up salis within the nicht, and returnit in France; levand behind him ane huge pray of guddis, quhilk nicht nocht be turst for laik of schippis. The yeir that Julius come first in Albion, was fra the beginning of the world, v.m.c.xxxix yeris; afore the incarnation, lx yeris; in the iv yeir of the empire of King Edeir.

### Chap. Third.

*How Julius returnit in Britane, and maid it tributar to Romane Empire.*



WHEN Cesar was dounge out of Albion in this wise, the Albanis, that is to say, Scottis, Pichtis, and Britonis, partit the spulyc found in his tentis, be custum of armis, rejosing of this glorious victory; and maid sacrifice to thair Goddis, beleving perpetually to be deliverit baith of the weris of Romanis, and all othir uncouth pepill, in timis cuming. Cadallane and Dowall richely rewardit be Cassibilane, returnit with the army of Scottis; and schew to King Edeir al thingis done in maner afore rehersit. Edeir, rejosing of thir novellis, commandit generall processionis and sacrifice to be maid in the honoure of Goddis. Than followit sa incredibil luf and kindnes betwix the Scottis, Britonis,



and Pichtis, that thay apperit to leif in times cuming in perpetuall peace.

In the yeir following, King Edeir past to Innernes, quhare he, be sindry marchandis, was advertist, that Julius had pecifyit France to his empire, and was makand provision for ane new army to returne in Britane, to revenge the injuris done to him in the yeir afore. Edeir, sone efter, send his ambassatouris to Cassibilane, to schaw the hie dangeris appering to his realme; and promittit to send, gif he plesit, x.M chosin men to his support.

Thir ambassatouris, at thair cuming to London, schew thir offeris to Cassibilane. The Britonis, movit be vane arrogance, that the glore of victory suld not be tane fra thaim, refusit to have ony supple of Scottis or Pichtis; and answerit, thay war nocht brocht to sic febilnes, that it was necessar to thaim to have support al time quhen ennimes invadit thaim, and thay had the same pissance instantly be quhilk thay dantit the Romanis in the yeir afore.

King Edeir, and his nobillis, had na litill admiration of sic vane arrogance, to refuse support aganis sa pissant ennimes, the dantaris of the warld; and jugit, thairfore, the nobil realme of Britonis, be proude insolence for ane smal victory, to sustene gret dammage. Quhilk thing was weill sene in the end of thir weris: for Julius returnit sone efter in Britane. At quhais cuming, the pepill, that was left to resist him, affrayit be infinite multitude of schippis, fled to thair best refuge. Nochtheles, Julius was stoutly assailyet be Cassibilane, and thre sindry timis put abak; bot, at last, Cassibilane was discomfist, and all his vailyeant capitanis tane or slane. Cassibilane, brokin ilk day with irrecoverabill skaithis, and disparit of support, randerit him to Julius; and gaif plegis that his realme sall remane tributar as Romane province. Cassibilane, yoldin in this maner, was commandit to pay yeirly M.M. poundis of silver to Romane pepil, in maner of tribute.



## Chap. Fourth.

*Of sindry message send be Julius to Scottis and Pichtis, and of thair answer. Of Julius Hoif; and of sindry opinionis concerning the first Foundaris thairof.*



As sone as Julius had dantit the Britonis in this wise, he come to London, quhare he was ressavit with gret reverence and honoure: and, quhen he had tarryit thair certane dayis to refresche his army, he maid provision to pas on the Scottis and Pichtis. The motive of his weris was, becaus the Scottis and Pichtis maid support afore to Britonis, the first time he come in Britane. Yit, afore he maid ony battall againis thaim, he thoct best to assailye thair mindis be his ambassatouris, quhidder thay list have weir or peace: Peace, gif thay wald be subdewit to Romane empire; Weir, gif thay perversly wald contempnie the same. Belive, he send ambassatouris to the two kingis of Scottis and Pichtis, to schaw thaim, that all realmis, be favoure, as apperit, of the Goddis, war subdewit to Romanis. For the Goddis, be sindry revolutionis of time, has gevin the monarchy and empire of the world to sindry pepil; that is to say, to Affricanis, Medis, Persanis, Grekis, and now instantly to Romanis. Few placis ar foundin in the erd quhare the Romane chevalry is unknowin; for thay, be favour of Goddis, hes brocht all realmis and landis under thair empire. Thay have vincust Aphrik, Egypt, Araby, Joury, Perthia, Troy, Thebes, Asia, Macedone, Grece, France, and Spanye; and now laitly, Britane. Al regionis circulit with the oceane sees, ar obeysant to Romane lawis. Na pepil ar in erd that knawis nocht the name of Romanis. Thair is na sicker leving nor honeste, bot only quhare the Romanis lawis hes dominioun; for the senat and pepil of Rome ar the port and sicker refuge of all pepil, quhais glore is, to defend thair subdittis and freindis in justice and faith. For thir causis, it war na litill honour to Scottis and Pichtis to have societe with Romanis, and be callit the confiderat freindis; quhilkis

hes sa mony cietes and realmis brocht to thair provinces, sa mony kingis under thair servitude. This is the command of Cesar and Romane pepill: quhilk suld be fervently desirit, for singular commodite, baith of Scottis and Pichtis; les, than thay will be rebelland to the Goddis, quhilkis hes determit to bring the hale warld under Romane empire.

King Edeir, and his noblis, herand this message, understude the colorit dissait of Romanis; and, thairfore, maid answer, sayng, Thay wald defend thair wiffis, children, landis, and liberteis, with al the power thay nicht, to the uter end of thair lif; and erar to jeoperde thaim to maist dangerus battall, than to leif in servitude. The fame of Romanis was nocht knawin to thaim, bot in sa far as thay war repute, above ingine of man, maist avaricious theiffis, and reiffaris of realmes; depriving kingis be fenyeit causis and slichtis, and subdewing fre pepill, be unjust battall, to servitude. Forthir, gif the Romanis, movit but occasion of injuris, bot only of corruppit malice, happnit to invade thaim be unjust battal; thay tuke the Goddis, quhilkis ar punissaris of injuris done to innocent pepill, in witnes, to fecht to the deith for defence of thair landis, quhill ane of thaim war left on lif. The ambassatouris, havand siclike answer of the Pichtis, returnit in Britane.

Quhen Julius had herd this answer of Scottis and Pichtis, he send to thaim his secund message, with mair dispiteful chargis than afore; as efter followis: “ The gret Cesar, Romane counsell, persuadis the King Edeir, and yow Scottis, to submit yow to Romanis, the maist pissant pepill of the warld, in adventure ye bring youre self, be imprudent fechting, to uter externioun. Take exempill, be irrecoverabill scaithis falling to uthir pepill for thair vane rebellion. Behald the majeste of Romane pepill! Consider the magnitude of thair name! Wil ye assailye thaim with chance of battall, as the Britonis, your nichtbouris, hes laitly done; quhilkis, be fuliche bergane, ar outhir slane, or tane and brocht to perpetuall servitude? Quhat pissance have ye in respect of Romanis, the concreeouris of the warld? Have ye that vane confidence, that Romanis, the dantouris of all pepill, may be vincust be yow, the hinmaist pepill thair of? Or, beleif ye, that the warld may be deliverit fra servitude of Romanis be yow? May your

“ power, quhilkis is nocht in respect of Romanis, restore the empire  
 “ of sa mony kingis distroyit? Knew ye nocht, that thair is mony  
 “ Romane campionis, na les active than Cesar, baith in wisdom, e  
 “ manheid, and chevalry, quhais illuster deidis hes decorit all re-  
 “ gionis quhare the sonne schinis? And yit it is more difficult to  
 “ vincus Cesar, him allone, than to vincus all the world. How is  
 “ this presumptuous folly cumin to yow? Contempne ye the Goddis,  
 “ quhilkis, be thair propiciant favour to Romanis, hes ordanit all  
 “ regionis to be to thaim subdewit? Beleif ye, the Romanis wil be  
 “ sa irkit be straitnes of your craggis, montanis, or marressis, or be  
 “ penurite of vittallis, that thay may nocht abide in your regionis?  
 “ Beleif ye, to be sicker in your said montanis, with your guddis?  
 “ Ye ar dissavit, gif sic vane confidence be in yow; for sic impedi-  
 “ mentis sal move na mair the Romanis fra thair purpos, than your  
 “ rownis war plentuous, and full of every frutis necessar to sustene  
 “ thair weris. For the Romanis hes experience above ingine of man  
 “ in chevalry: sa agill of thair bodyis, that thay may dant all thor-  
 “ ough and difficult gatis; swift of rink, and reddy to every kind of  
 “ jeopardy; of skars meit and sleip, and accustomat with every dan-  
 “ ger that may occurre in battall; and sa provident, that thay sall  
 “ caus vittallis, gif neid beis, to be brocht to thaim out of all re-  
 “ gionis adjacent: for Cesar hes ane ripe wit for every cais that  
 “ may occurre. Heirfore, gif ye have ony regarde to your weill,—  
 “ gif ye be prudent,—eschew warly; that ye, by fuliche and unpru-  
 “ dent bergane, bring nocht youre self, your wiffis, frendis, and  
 “ barnis, to irrecoverable dammage. Ye may have now honest con-  
 “ ditionis of peace afore the victory: quhilk ye sal nocht obtene  
 “ quhen ye, be force of battall, ar randerit; for than sall ye, for  
 “ your rebelloun, be reft baith of your landis and honouris; and,  
 “ finally, be brocht to sic disperatioun, that ye sall never have espe-  
 “ rance to recover your liberte.”

Als sone as thir wourdis war said, sic fury and nois rais amang  
 the Scottis, for thay war impatient of servitude, that thir ambassa-  
 touris had bene maist cruellie slane, war nocht the law of pepill,  
 quhilk our forbearis had ay in maist reverence, saffit thame. Noch-  
 theles, answer wes maid to thaim be Cadallane, in the kingis name,  
 as followis: “ Suppois the Scottis, be sum opinionis, ar repute nocht

“circumspect; bot of fuliche and dull ingine; yit thay ar nocht mo-  
 “vit mair be Cesaris plesand and dissaitfull wourdis, than be his  
 “awfull minassing, to lose thair landis and liberteis but extreme  
 “jeopardie of battall: for thay ar nocht in use to obey tyranis, and  
 “revaris of realmes and kingdomes; bot onlie to obey thair native  
 “prince. And, thairfore, be degest avisement and counsall, thay  
 “ar profoundly resolvit to have na amite nor alliance with Romanis,  
 “becaus thair fair wourdis ar nocht but hid treason and falset: and  
 “as to thair wrangus and injust weris, thay have the same in plane  
 “diffiance; committing thaim in thair just actioun, to the protec-  
 “tion of Goddis.”

Julius, richt commovit at this answer, maid his ordinance, but tary, to dant thair rebellion. In the mene time, he gatte lettris fra Labienus, his admirall, that Normandis and Piccardis, quhilkis war pecifyit at his departing, war rebellit: attoure, Carnutes hes rasit gret truble in France, and has slane ane man namit Transegerius, quhilk wes chosin be Romanis to be King of France, and to hald the same under the empire of Romanis. Julius, for feir of thir novellis, left his coming in Scotland; and, becaus vittallis war skant in his army, and na apperance of new vittallis to cum in Britane, (for it was the winter season, quhen tempestuus seis sufferis na passage of marchandis,) he gaderit the residew of his army togidder, and returnit in France, levand behind him Britane tributar to his empire, and the Scottis litill abasit of his weris.

This historie of the cumming of Cesar in Britane, and subdewing of it to his empire, nocht far discordant fra the wourdis of his Commentaris, ar drawin be us out of Verimond, Campbell, and othir authouris. Bot it is said in our vulgare croniclis, that Julius come to the Callendare wod, and kest down Camelon, the principall ciete of Pichtis, efter that the samin was randerit to him; sine left behind him, nocht far fra Carron, ane round hous of square stanis, xxiv cubitis of hecht, and xii cubitis of breid, to be ane memory of his cuming to the place. Otheris sayis, he usit this hous as his tent in al his viage, and had it ay tursit with him; and, for that caus, it was callit Julius Hoif. Yit, becaus na famous authouris makkis mention of ony weris led be Julius aganis the Scottis and Pichtis, we



lat thaim pas, and will infer na thing in this werke, bot it only that may not be reprevit. As to this hous of Julius, it is round, as we may yit se, havand na windois bot above, in maner of the anciant tempillis, quhilkis ar yit sene in Rome, with benkis of stane round about within. The pavement hes bene of aselar stanis, and the Egill, quhilk is the Romane ansenye, craftely in it ingrain; bot now, be roust of yeris, is worne away. In it was ane huge stane, standand to the south, on quhilk the Gentilis maid thair sacrifice. Utheris authouris writtis, this tempill was biggit be Vespasiane, in honour of Claudius, Emperour, and the goddes Victory, as the titill thair-of schew. Bot it was cassin down be Edward, the first King of Ingland of that name; as we wil schaw mair largely heirefter.

### Chap. Fifth.

*How the tratour Murket and his Complicis war punist. Of the deith of King Edeir. Of the vicious King Erwin the Thrid; and of his lawis and deith.*



ONE efter that this diffiance was send to Julius, King Edeir assemblit ane army frome all boundis of his realme, to resist the Romanis; for he knew nocht the impediment of Julius weris. And, in the mene time, quhen he was gaderit on this wise, come Murket, quhilk was nepote to Gillus afore rehersit, and arrivit with mony galyeonis in the Ilis; and slew, thair, baith wiffis, barnis, and agit personis, but ony resistance: for all fensabill men, as said is, war drawin out of thay boundis be King Edeir. Als sone as Edeir was advertist thair-of, he send Cadallane, capitane of Brigance, with ane band of armit men, in the Ilis; quhilk, sone efter his cuming, brint all the galyeonis and baitis, within the nicht, that pertenis to this Murket, and on the morrow he tuke this Murket, and hinggit him, with his complicis, on the gallous.

King Edeir levit the residew of his dayis but ony uncouth or domistik weris; and deceissit at Dounstafage, the XLVIII yeir of his



regne; the xxvi yeir of the empire of August, Emperour; fra the beginning of the warld, v.M.C.LXXXIII yeris. His body was buryit in Dounstafage; and about his sepulture war rasis mony hie pillaris, in memory of his nobil deidis. This Edeir, for his singulare virtew, micht have bene callit ane happy prince baith levand and deid; war nocht he left his sonne Ewin, the thrid of that name, the maist vicious man in erd, heritoure to the crown.

This Ewin, eftir deith of his fader, was maid king; and was belevit be ilk man to have followit the futestepis of his fader. Nocht thes, fra he was declarit king, he began to burgeon in every kind of vice; so effeminat and soupit in lust, that he past above the common insolence of youth. He had ane hundreth concubinis chosin of the nobillest matronis and virginis of his cuntre; and, thocht he wes irkit of so surfet noumer, yit he couth nevir be saciat. And, be persuasioun of limmers and harlottis, quhilkis he maid up of nocht for assistance to his vice, he banist ane certane of his nobillis, and otheris slew be hid waching, to the fine he micht the more esaly waik to his lust; and set his mind to sla or banis, be fenyeit causes, all thaim that haitit his vice. This abhominable tyrane, gevin on this wise to maist terribill cruelteis, envennomit the cuntre vi yeris with na les infelicite than schame, be counsall of certane diffamit creaturis, quhilkis, in hop of proffet, extollit and lovit all his governance. Schortlie, this tyrane become sa avaritiis and unthankfull, but ony reverence of the lawis of Goddis or men, that he spulyeit his servitouris of al thair landis, riches, and gudis, that thay conquest under him. And, finalie, he grew in sic blind fury, that he nurist opinle, within hous, theiffis, to mak reiffis and heirschippis in the cuntre but ony punitioun; and tuk ane large part thair of for his assistance. And, beside thir, and mony othir thingis unworthy to be reheirsit, he maid lawis, that his liegis sal have als mony wiffis as thay pleis, effering to thair guddis. Ane othir law he maid, that wiffis of the commonis sal be fre to the nobillis; and the lord of the ground sall have the madinheid of all virginis dwelling on the same. And thocht the first two lawis wes revokit eftir be counsall, yit this last law wes sa plesand to the young nobillis, that it couth nevir be abrogat, quhill the time of King Malcolmme Cammore, and his blist quene Sanct Margaret; quhilkis thocht the samin sa injuriis baith

to God and man, that thay solistit the nobillis to revoik the said law, takand thairfore ane goldin penny, callit the marchetis: quhilk is yit payit to the lord of the ground, quhen virginis ar to be maryit, in redemption of thair honour and chaistite.

Bot we wil returne to Ewin; quhais horribill vices wes sa drevin in every mannis eir, that the nobillis thoct this effeminat monstoure, that wes gevin to sic cruelte and vices, unworthy to be thair prince; and maid, thairfore, ane haiste conspiratioun aganis him. Ewin, nochtwithstanding this conspiratioun, come with displayit baner to the feild, with ane certane evill arrayit men. Nochttheles, he wes sone vincust and tane. Eftir lang consultation, it wes commandit be the nobillis, that he sal be degradit of his kingdome, and remane in perpetual prison. It wes ordanit als, that Cadallane, during his life, sal be governour. Bot, in the first nicht that he wes put in prison, he wes slane be ane young child; quhilk traistit, becaus he wes odious to the pepill, to get reward for his slauchter. Bot, on the morrow, this child wes justifyit in presence of mony pepil.

This end maid the unhappy tyrane, King Ewin; and deceissit, the vii yeir of his regne, but only airis of his body; the xxxii yeir of the empire of August.

### Chap. Sixth.

*Of King Metellane. Of the nativite of Crist, our Saviour. Of the gret fouth of Poetis, Oratouris, and Philosophouris, that flurisit in his time.*



FRIR the deith of King Ewin, the nobillis chesit Metellane, quhilk wes nepote to King Edeir, gottin be his brodir Carron, to be king. This Metellane wes the maist humill prince that rang above the Scottis, to his days; havand na uncouth nor domistik weris during his time, and governit all materis, baith at hame and afeld, with gret felicite. He wes ane mercifull prince to his subditis, and richt religious, eftir the rite of thay dayis. He tuk gret labouris to abrogat the cursit

lawis of King Ewin; nochttheles, he wes so faschit be inoportune solicitation of his nobillis, specially thay that war gevin to thair lust, that he wes constrainit to desist.

About this time come ambassatouris of Romanis to Kymbalyne, King of Britonis; thankand him of his perseverance in peace and amite with the senat and pepill of Rome; and schew to him, that the hail world wes that time in peace, with more tranquillite than evir wes sene in ony time afore; and exhortit the Britonis thairfore, be example of othir pepill, to keip peace and concord amang thaim, but occasioun of ony civill or uncouth weris; for sic doingis pertennit baith to the felicity of August, Empriour, and all othir pepill. Thir same ambassatouris come sone eftir to King Metellane, with sic like exhortatioun. King Metellane heirand, be narratioun of thir ambassatouris, that the farrest pepill of the orient socht amite of the Romanis, and send sindry goldin crownis to August, Emprioure; he thocht he wald nocht be so unplesand to contempne the majeste and magnitude of Romane pepill; and send thairfore, with thir ambassatouris, sindry riche jowellis, to be offerit to August, Emprioure, and othir Romane Goddis in the Capitol. Be this way King Metellane conquest sicker amite of Romanis, quhilk mony yeris eftir indurit. Of this message, send be August to the Britonis, writtis Strabo, in his buk of geography, callit, *The Discriptioun of the Erd*; in quhilk is schawin the situation of Britane, with the maneris of the inhabitantis thairof.

The world beand thus in peace, Christ, our Salvioire, wes borne of the Virgine Mary, douchter of Anna and Joachim, in Bathelem, cite of Jowry, the same time quhen the scheiphirdis herd the angellis sing, quhen the thre kingis, gidit be the sterne, come to the place quhare our Salvioir wes borne. Mony uncouth and strange miraclis apperit in the time of his nativite, as Haly Writ schawis. His nativite fell in the x yeir of the regne of Metellane; fra the beginning of the realme of Scottis, ccc.xxx yeris; the xlii yeir of the empire of August; fra the beginning of the world, v.m.c.xcix yeris. King Metellane rang mony yeris, in gud peace, doing na man injury; and sa happy and plesand to his subditis, that his fame wes patent throw all boundis of Albioun. He deceissit, the xxxix yeir

of his regne; the xiv yeir of Tiberius, Empriour; fra the nativite of Crist, xxix yeris.

In this time wes in Rome, the prince of Latine poetis, Virgill; Horace, Ovide, Tullius, Marcus Varro, Strabo, Titus Livius, Salustius, with mony othir naturall and morall philosophouris. Sic fouth of virtew and letteris multiplyit in thay dayis be felicite of the birth of Crist, the gevar of science and grace; for apperandlie wes nevir sene sa mony eloquent poetis and profound clerkis levand at anis as wes at that time, quhen God, clothit with nature of man, wes sene in the erd.

Bot we will returne to our historie.

### Chap. Seventh.

*Of King Caratak, and how he dantit sindry Conspiratouris of his Realme. How the Britonis, rebelland aganis the Romanis, war discomfist; and of thair Massaiage send to the Scottis.*



ETELLANE nicht have ben callit maist happy prince that evir rang above the Scottis, war nocht he decessit but airis of his body: throw quhilk the crown come to Caratak, son of the vailyeant Cadallane afore rehersit; for he wes nepot to Metellane, gottin of his sister Europea. Caratak, eftir his coronatioun, ressavit the huge treasour and riches gaderit be King Metellane; and excedit all the pepill in Albion in riches. Nocht lang eftir, he past throw all the boundis of his realme: sine past with ane army in the Ilis; for the capitane thairof wes rebellit aganis him. Nochttheles, he peacefyit all truble that rais be his seditioun, and punist the principall movaris thairof to the deith. All thingis peacefyit on this maner, he returnit in Albion; sine past to Carrik, quhilk wes the principal ciete of that schire.

Quhil sic materis war dressit in Scotland, deceissit Kymbalyne, King of Britonis; quhilk, in his youth, wes sa familiar to August, that he held ay the Britonis at the opinion of Romanis. Eftir quuhais deith, Guiderius wes maid king. This Guiderius, seing the realme



stabillit to him, thocht hevvy, that the Britonis suld leif under servitude of Romanis. Movit heirfore be vane esperance to recover his liberte, he convenit his nobillis to ane counsall, quhare he, be lang orison, complenit, that his realme and liegis war haldin under servitude of Romanis; and nocht onlie the said Romanis held all the strenthis of his cuntre garnist with sodjouris, bot resset his rebellis, and wald nocht restore the pledgis that war gevin to thaim, bot causit thaim to waist thair dayis in captivite and preson. Best is, thairfore, to rebell aganis the Romanis, and suffre na langer thair yoke of servitude. The Britonis, inflammit be thir wordis, concludit, with generall consent, to suffer na langer the servitude of Romanis. Incontinent, thay ruschet to harnes, and slew all the Romanis that war found, or takin utouth thair munitionis or strenthis. In the mene time Guiderius gaderit ane army, to distroy all the garisoun of Romanis, afore ony nois of his rebellion war knawin in Rome. Nochtheles Claudius, Empriour, wes sone advertist thair of, and send two capitanis, namit Aulus Plancius, and Gneus Sentius, iu Britane, with mony Romane legionis, to dant the said rebelloun. Thir capitanis, at thair cumming in Britane, reparit al strenthis and munitionis, quhilkis war than under the Romane obeisance, with new vittallis, sodjouris, and utheris sic lik ordinance, to resist the Britonis; and, that thay suld not be segit within thair strenthis, thay brocht thair army to the planis, to be reddy for battall quhen thair ennimes list invaid thame. Not lang eftir, Guiderius assailyeit the Romanis with arrayit battal; notheles, the victory succedit to the Romanis: the Britonis eschapit, with smal dammage, be cuming of the nicht. Than folowit mony incursionis, with gret slauchter baith of Romanis and Britonis, continewing all the simer. At the cuming of winter, the Romanis held thaim within thair munitionis and tentis.

About this time come certane ambassatouris, fra Guiderius, to Caratak, King of Scottis, and said in this maner: “ I think it reason-  
 “ abil, maist illuster prince, that thay that seikis support of strange  
 “ and uncouth realmis, as we now do, gif na amite nor kindnes be  
 “ deservit be thaim for gud dedis, to schaw than the thing that thay  
 “ desire to be honest and proffitabill. For thir reasonis, we Bri-  
 “ tonis, ambassatouris of King Guiderius, opprest with hevvy weiris,




“ and destitute of all supple and help, saif only of yow Scottis and  
“ Pichtis, ar cumin humilly to yow. Treuth is, the Romane pepill,  
“ quhilk daily invadis us with insufferabil injuris, ar sare ennimes;  
“ richt pissant, baith in riches and chevalry, above the estimatioun  
“ of men. Nochtheles, thay may be vincust, for Cesar, the vail-  
“ yeant Emperoure, be your support and virtew, was doung baith  
“ out of our realme and youris, howbeit all France, Spanye, Al-  
“ mane, Grece, Asia, Egypt, and Aphrik, obeyit to him: and thir  
“ Romanis, that now invadis us, ar bot the refuse of Cesaris army.  
“ And, but dout, thay may be vincust; to your gretter honour, gif  
“ the Goddis be favourabil, that thay call thaimself, be proude in-  
“ solence, Lordis of the Warld, and yow, the hinmost pepill thair-  
“ of. And, to ding thir oure commoun ennimes out of Albioun,  
“ we desire youre support, sen the samin may nocht be done be oure  
“ pissance; the quhilk thing gif ye do, in remembrance of your an-  
“ ciant kindnes and amite, supporting us now in oure maist adver-  
“ site and dangere, ye sall conques, above youre honest victory, in-  
“ terminabill glore and honoure to yow and your posterite: First,  
“ becaus ye help us, quhilkis ar nocht persewaris bot only defendaris;  
“ for na thing may be sa honest and plesand amang levand creatouris,  
“ as defend the actioun of common liberte and native Goddis: Se-  
“ cundly, ye sall deliver youre realme and pepill fra hie danger  
“ thairto appering; for the Romanis, your deidly ennimes, intendis  
“ to subdew us, that the way may be the more patent to yow. And  
“ sen thir thingis ar manifest to yow, maist vailyeant championis, gif  
“ ye have respect to the weil of yourself, or your landis, garnis youre  
“ realme with all maner of munitionis aganis the Romanis; quhilk  
“ thing may be esaly done, gif ye and Pichtis equally concur with  
“ us aganis our common ennimes. For the samin, as we dare bauld-  
“ ly afferme, sall pertene na les to youre common weil than to ouris;  
“ for quhen the Romanis hes vincust us in battal, spulyeit us of our  
“ guddis, and subdewit oure realme in forme of province, thay will  
“ be the more abil to subdew you to thair empire. Now is the time  
“ to assailye our ennimes in battall; quhill we have strenth, and  
“ quhil we may, be help of othir, be sufficient to withstand thaim.  
“ Suthly, gif the Albanis will equally concur togidder, all of ane  
“ mind, thay sall draw als mekill fra the Romanis, as thay have won

“ on ony othir pepill. Heirfore, lat the pissance of Scottis, Britonis,  
 “ and Pichtis, equally concur togider to defend the common li-  
 “ berte. Lat us tak our wappinnis at anis, to resist the injure ap-  
 “ pering. And thocht we war vincust, (quhilk God forbeid !) it war  
 “ na reproche to us ; for than we ar not vincust with ane pepil, bot  
 “ with the pissance of the warld : and, gif we be victorius, as our  
 “ just actioun fermely belevis, the victory sall be na les glore and  
 “ proffet to yow than to us, and ye sal be perpetually estemit with  
 “ all pepill.”

### Chap. Eighth.

*Of Caratakis answer. How the Britonis solistit Normanis and Pi-  
 cardis to rebellion. And how the said Britonis war discomfist be  
 Romanis, and thair King slane.*

 ARATAK maid anser to this message in maner follow-  
 ing: “ Had ye Britonis nocht refusit oure supporte,  
 “ frely offerit to yow, quhen Julius, the Romane coun-  
 “ sull, invadit yow with injust battall, it suld nocht have  
 “ bene necessar to yow this day to seik support at us, nor yit suld it  
 “ have ben necessar to us to rais our army aganis sa pissant ennimes ;  
 “ for than, be juning of al our pissance togidder, we nicht esaly  
 “ have vincust thaim, and bene deliverit of all dredoure, rejosing  
 “ oure rowmis in Albion with perpetuall rest. Yit better is, as thay  
 “ say, lait than nevir thrif. It is nocht now to be devisit, how we  
 “ nicht have dantit the Romanis in time bigane ; bot how we may  
 “ eschew the hie dangeir now appering. Ye complane, that ye ar  
 “ injustly invadit be ane riche pepil, richt desirus to have dominion,  
 “ and to reif othir mennis guddis. Ye have bene subdewit to thaim  
 “ mony yeris, liffand under thair servitude, in your avin defalt ; for  
 “ ye ar devidit amang yourself, be seditionis intestine : and, sa lang  
 “ as ye stand so, your common weill sall never be fre. Forthir,  
 “ your munitionis and strenthis ar stuffit with Romane sodjouris,

“and your planis ar garnist with thair tentis. We heir als, that  
 “Claudius Cesar and Vaspasiane ar advertist of your instant rebel-  
 “lioun, and reddey to cum, with mony legionis of pepil, in your  
 “realme. I think, thairfore, sen ye ar brokin with sa many cala-  
 “miteis and battallis, howbeit the haill power of Albion war con-  
 “current with yow, ye cannot resist sa pissant ennimes for this time;  
 “les than the Goddis war contrarius to thaim. Best is, for thir  
 “causis, to meis all seditionis amang youreself, superseding youre  
 “weris for ane seassone; and set your laubour, with maist crafty in-  
 “gine, to transport this dangerus battall on France. To wrik this  
 “prudently, ye man solist the Normandis, Picardis, Bartaneris, Al-  
 “manis, with all uthir pepill liand on the bordour of France, to re-  
 “bell aganis Romanis, in esperance to recover thair liberte; and  
 “promit, gif thay will assist thairto, to support thaim with schippis,  
 “weirmen, gold, and uthir necessaris pertenant to thair weris. Ye  
 “man eik be confiderat with all pepill that hatis the Romanis; and,  
 “gif ye do this weill, ye sall eschew this battall, that the Romanis  
 “intendis to move on yow, and convert it on France. Thus sall  
 “baith ye and we be deliverit of all fere of ennimes, and leif the  
 “remanent of this yeir in quiete; and the mair abill the nixt yeir  
 “for battall. And, gif thair be na way to eschew this maist dan-  
 “gerus battall, than think I best to assemble all the pepill of Al-  
 “bion togidder, to fecht with honest battall to the deith, but ony  
 “respect to our lif, bot allanerly to our glore and honour; for na  
 “pepil may de mair honestly, than fechtand for thair liberte and  
 “native Goddis aganis the lordis of the warld.” The ambassatouris  
 of Britonis, rasit in esperance of gud fortoun be this answer, returnit  
 to Guiderius in Britane.

Quhen Guiderius had hard this wise counsall of Caratak, he send  
 his ambassatouris to persuaid the Normandis, Picardis, Bartaneris,  
 and all othir pepill of the see costis, to rebell aganis the Romanis;  
 saying, na thing was more abhominabill to fre pepill, than contrar  
 thair native lawis, to be subdewit to Romanis; quhilkis war ane  
 proude and cruel pepill, daily exercing, be thair tyranny, sa many  
 new and intollerabill conditionis of servitude on the plegis of sub-  
 dewit realmis, that na maner of deith suld be refusit to recover thair  
 liberte; but quhilk, the lif of man is nocht. For thir reasonis, na

thing was sa gud, as the pepill, throw all boundis of France, to rebell aganis Romanis, and sla thair sodjouris in all partis quhare thay micht be apprehendit. And, to gif the more hortatioun thairto, thay schaw, how all kingis of Albion sal assist to thaim, and support thaim with money, vittallis, schippis, weirmen, and all othir necessaris refering thairto: and schew, how the Romanis, quhilkis war laity cuming in Britane, hais tint all thair horsmen, and the remenant brokin with sic calamite, that thay ar outhir chasit to the see, or ellis to thair strenthis. The cieteyouris of Tervana, in Flanderis, to quhom thir ambassatouris first come, richt desirus to recover thair liberte, refusit nocht thir offeris: bot the charge was so hie, that thay couth nocht answer quhill thay war advisit with thair nichtbouris: and prayit thaim to keip thair petitionis secrete; for, gif the samin war divulgat, al thair plegis, that war gevin afore to the Romanis, sall be cruelly tormentit: and, to remove all suspitioun, prayit thaim, to remane in Calice quhill thay war resolvit in this mater. Thus abaid thir ambassatouris of Britane certane dayis in Calice, abiding thair answer.

In the mene time Guiderius was advertist, that Aulus Plaucius had rasit his camp, and distroyit al the landis with fire and swerd that stud at his opinion. Guiderius, seand na way to eschew his ennimes, gaderit all his pepill togidder in arrayit battall, and closit thaim with wanis and cartis on every side, except the part fornens thair ennimes, to that fine, that nane of thaim sal have esperance to fle; sine put the wiffis in the said wanis and cartis, to exhort thair husbandis to fecht vailyeantly for thair liffis and landis. On the tother side, Plaucius devidit his army in thre battallis; and, be blast of trumpet, come sa fersly on the Britonis, that thay had na space to schute thair arrowis. Than the Britonis flang thair bowis fra thaim, and faucht with thair swerdis. The wiffis exhortit thaim with loude cryis to deliver thaim of Romane servitude. This battall was cruelly fochtin; bot, at last, the Britonis war discomfist, and Guiderius, thair king, slane. Mony of all the wemen war smorit in the cartis, be preis of thaim that fled. The chais ceissit nocht quhill the Britonis war drevin to the rever of Garieme, vi milis fra the place quhare the feild was discomfist. This victory was nocht richt



plesand to Romanis, for Gneus Sencius, with mony othir Romane nobillis, war slane.

Als sone as this unhappy battall was schawin in France, it maid all the pepill thair of disparit to recover thair liberte; and so the ambassatouris quhilkis war send, as said is, in France, returnit but ony expedition of thair message.

This history, as we have writtin, is colleckit out of Godofryde, writar of Inglis historyis; and out of Veramond, Johne Campbell, Cornelius Tacitus, and Eutropius.

### Chap. Ninth.

*How Claudius Emprioure, come in Britane, and subdewit Orknay to his Empire. Of Sanct Peteris first cuming in Italy. And of the assumptioun of the gloriis Virgine Mary.*



SHORT time efter, Claudius, Empriour, and Vespasiane, ane man of singulare virtew, arrivit, with mony legionis of pepill, in Britane. The Britonis herand his cuming war gretumly affrayit: nochtheless, be publik advisement, thay send oratouris to excuse thaim, saying, the offence committit aganis the Romanis was done only be evil counsall; and thay wald, thairfore, not only repare all injuris to thaim done, bot be obeisant to the empire of Romanis and thair lawis in times cuming. Claudius than commandit thaim to geif plegis for observation thair of; sine commandit all the princes and lordis of Britane to cum afore him aganis ane certane day, with intimatioun, gif thay did nocht, he suld persew thaim to the deith. The Britonis knawing na refuge, gaif plegis, and come to London as he desirit. At last, quhen Claudius had demandit thaim, quhy thay brak thair faith, thay fell on kneis, confessand thair offence, and prayit him, sen thay war sufficiently punist be the Goddis, to ressave thaim againe to his mercy, and saif thair liffis, under quhat condition or servitude he plesit; and maid solempne aithis never to rebell in times cuming,



and, gif thay failyeit, al vengeance in erd to fal on thaim, and thair posterite. Sum of the Romanis gave counsall to Claudius, to punis thair rebelloun, and to sla the principal movaris thair of, othirwayis the Britonis nicht nochit be haldin at his opinion. Nochtheles, Vespasiane persuadit him, be mony reasonis, to mercy; for ane prince but mercy may well be dred, bot nevir luffit. Als, na thing pertennit sa mekill to majeste of Romane pepil as to have mercy on thair subdittis, and defend thaim fra al injure of ennimes; for, be that way, the empire of Romanis was ekit, and suld indure be the samin way to the end of the warld. Thir wordis of Vespasian mesit the empriour in sic maner, that he chesit erar to be namit ane merciful prince, than ane vengeabil tyrane. In the mene time, he began to treit of materis concerning the administratioun of Britonis: and, first, he maid Arviragus king of Britonis, that the crown sall remane in the native blude; for he was Prince of Walis, and brutlir to Guiderius, afore slane. He ordanit Plautius to be governour as afore, and M. Trebellius to be thesaurar; and commandit thaim, to stuf all the strenthis and townis of Britane with strang gareson of weirmen; to minister justice be the lawis; to hald the Britonis in peace, and defend thaim fra all injure of pepill liand thaim about, specially fra the Scottis and Pichtis, quhilkis wer ane pepill full of chevalry, and impacient of servitude: and to seik na occasion of weir aganis thaim; and, gif it war necessar to haif battal, to haif than stout wachis, baith at hame and afeild; havand na les respect to keip the Britonis at the opinion of Romanis, than to eik thair empire: and, finaly, he exhortit the nobillis of Britane, to remember the affliction falling to thaim be thair rebellion, and to keip thair faith in time cuming, for the weill of thaimself, thair barnis, and gudis. Sic thingis done, the Britonis returnit hame; and gaif thankis to Vespasiane, for his humanite schawin to thaim.

Efter this, Claudius Cesar, desiring sum triumphe of honouris afore his returning to Rome, thocht expedient to vesy Orknay, the last Ilis within the occiane sees. The motive of his weris aganis thaim was, becaus thay supportit the Albianis in the battall afore rehersit aganis the Romanis. Schort time efter, Claudius, providit with all necessaris, come out of Britane with prosper windis, and passit throw Pentland Firth to Orknay, quhare he was neir perist.

Nane of the Orknay men was sene at his first cuming; for, quhen thay saw sa huge flote of schippis arrivit within thair sees, thay hid thaim in cavernis. Claudius, findand this Ile desert, went to Kirk-wall, and send his scurriouris to spy the nature of the cuntre, and pepil thairof; and, fra he was advertist that the same was full of every bestiall and foulis necessar to sustene the lif of man, he thoct the same sufficient eneuch to decore his triumphe. On the morrow, herand that Ganus, King of Orknay, was in ane castell nocht xii milis fra his army, he send ane cumpany of weirmen to sege the said castell. And quhen thir men war passand forthwart to the same effect, thay persavit sindry rude pepil of that cuntre cummand fra the covis, quhare thay war hid all the nicht, and passing to the montanis. Thir rude pepill war astonist be sicht of Romanis: nochtheles, seand na refuge, thay facht cruelly ane quhile; bot, at last, thay war all slane or tane. The Romanis, rejosing of this victory, laid ane sege to the castel. At last, quhen King Ganus had debaitit lang time, and saw na rescours, he randrit the castell, and was brocht presoner, with his wiffe and children, to Claudius. Than Claudius pullit up salis, and arrivit at Calice; quhare he abaid certane time, quhill his army wer refreschit; sine returnit to Rome: and led Ganus, with his wif, barnis, and the plegis of Britonis, in his triumphe.

This history of Claudius cumming in Britane is drawin out of Suetonius, Eutropius, Beda, Campbel, and Cornelius Ireland.

The same time, Sanct Peter, the Appostill, come out of Antiochia to Italy, efter that he had ereckit mony kirkis in Asia; quhare he, prechand the evangell of Crist, began to found the Cristen faith. About this time, was the gloriis and blissit Vergine Mary, Moder of God, tane with body and saule to hevin: in the v yeir of the empire of Claudius; efter the incarnatioun, xlvii yeris.

## Chap. Tenth.

*How sindry Princis of Britane, conspirand aganis Arviragus, wer discomfist. How the confiderat Kingis come to support thir Princis of Britane aganis the Romanis.*



As sone as Arviragus was maid king on this maner, he repudiat his lauchfull quene Voada, sister to Caratak, and put hir in preison, efter that scho had borne to him two douchteris, and ane sonne; and, in the mene time, he maryit ane Romane lady namit Genissa, be persuasioun of Plautius, trasting, gif it hapnit the said Arviragus to rebell aganis the Romanis, the affinite ceissing betwix him and Caratak, he sall get na support of Scottis. Sindry princis of Britane war richt commovit, that Arviragus had repudiat his quene in this maner; and persuaded him, be mony reasonis, to denude him of the Romane lady, and to adheir to his lauchfull wiffe, quhilk had bene with him mony yeris, and borne to him plesand childrin, to quhome na thing in erd nicht be comparit. Attour thay schew, quhat proffet nicht be had of Scottis, gif his ennimes hapnit sum time to invaid his realme; and prait him to eschew, that he, be rage of lust, and dissaitful wordis of Romanis, drew nocht himself, and the Britonis, fra amite of thair auld confiderat freindis. Nochtheles, quhen thay had assaileit him in vane with thir and sielik wordis, thay fand nocht bot his reason blindit with new lust, but ony sicht to wisdome or honour. In the nicht following, thay brak the preison quhare Voada was incarcerat, and brocht hir and hir barnis with thaim in Walis. Than Arviragus wrait to the gret princis of his realme, schewing, that his freindis, the lordis of Walis, in quhom he maist confidit, tuke indignatioun that he had preferrit ane Romane lady to his first wiffe; as it had bene unleifful to him to have sindry wiffis at his pleseir; howbeit nouthir the lawis, nor the consuetude of Britane, maid dirogation thairto: afferming, eik, the said mariage was for na rage of lust, bot only that Britonis and Romanis nicht increse togidder,

under ane blude and amite. Forthir, he desirit thaim, gif the lordis of Walis hapnit to conspire aganis him, that thay defend thair faith promittit to Romanis. It was answerit be thaim, that it was unleiffull to him ony maner of way to prefer ane new wif to his first wif; and, for that caus, thay war nocht content of the injuris done to hir.

Arviragus, knawing quhat mind thir nobillis bure to him, thoecht best to invaid thaim but more tary; and, be advise of Plaucius, he assemblit ane army of Romanis and Britonis, and went in Walis. The princis of Walis, na thing affrayit of his cuming, met him with ane gret power; nochtheles thay war vincust, and put to flicht. On the morrow, Arviragus and Plaucius was advertist, that Darby, Longcastell, York, and sindry othir schiris war rebellit. Dredand, thairfore, that thair ennimes suld invaid the eist partis of Britane, thay returnit to London. Fra thens, Plaucius had litil confidence in the Britonis, and send in France for two new legionis to support his army; sine garnist all his strenthis with new wageouris and vittallis.

Sic thingis done be Plaucius, the princis of Walis convenit at Schrewisbery, to take consultatioun in this maist dangerus mater. At last it was concludit, that all pepil under thair obeisance sal convene, ane certane day and place, to expell the Romanis out of Britane, or ellis al at anis to de. Be the same counsal was decernit, that oratouris sall pas to the lordis of Carlyll, Kendell, and Durame, to solist thaim to the samin effect. In the hervest following, thir princis foresaid convenit at Schrewisbery; quhare thay, be lang regrait of Romane injuris, lamentit hevely the fekilnes of Arviragus, quhilk had more desire to be servand to Romanis than king of Britonis. Nochtwithstanding, with haill mind and pissance, thay concludit to reeover thair anciant honouris and liberte. Bot than began na litil contention quha suld be capitane of the army; for few of thaim wald geif place to othir. Than Comus, prince of Walis, said in this maner: "We may sone gadder, maist vailyeant men, ane greter army of our pepil and freindis than may be esaly resistit, sa that every thing war governit be craft of chevalry; for thairin standis al victory and glore of battall. Nochtheles, sedition, discord, and ambitioun of honouris, ar so contrarius thairto,



“ that quhare thay sprout, nouthir ordoure nor craft of chevalry  
 “ may have place, nor yit victory may be had of ennimes. Thair-  
 “ fore, all ambition is to be drawin away, and all dissentionis to be  
 “ expirit; and, finaly, ane man to be chosin, to quhome the rema-  
 “ nent pepill sall be obeisant; be quhais auctorite this battall sall  
 “ be led, and, gif we intend to have victory, to be obeisant thairto.  
 “ And, because we ar nere equale to othir in power, thairfore it is  
 “ best to send oratouris to Caratak, King of Scottis, quhilk is maist  
 “ cruell ennime to Romanis, and desire him concur with us to re-  
 “ venge the oppressioun done to his sister Voada, and to defend  
 “ his nevo, quhome the Romanis intendis to defraude of the crown  
 “ of Britonis; and to exhort him to take the governance thairof,  
 “ quhill his nevo war of perfite aige: and thay to obey him in all  
 “ chargis as occurrit; for the more affection that he have to his sis-  
 “ ter and nevo, the more esaly may this mater be solistit.”

Sone efter, oratouris wer send to Caratak, and schew him all this  
 mater at lenth, as it is afore rehersit. Caratak answerit, that he was  
 more grevit that Arviragus had maryit ane Romane lady, in dis-  
 truction of himself and his realme, than of ony injuris done to his  
 sister or nevo; knawing weil, how Romanis, be vane fallowschip and  
 gile, subdewis unprudent kingis to thair dominion. Nochtheles, he  
 promittit to cum, agane the spring of the yeir, to support thame  
 with his army, as he thocht maist expedient. The oratouris, de-  
 peschit in this maner, returnit to Schrewisbery.

At the spring of the yeir, as said is, thir foresaid princes of Bri-  
 tane, be generall edict, assemblit all men that micht beir wappinnis,  
 to ane certane day, at York, to defende thair common liberte, to the  
 nowmer of LXXX.M men; and, at the said day, come Caratak and  
 Congestus, the confiderat kingis of Scottis and Pichtis; quhais cum-  
 ing maid the Britonis sa rejosit, that thay belevit na thing bot sicker  
 victory. Incontinent, as was afore devisit, Caratak was maid gene-  
 ral capitane of all this army; and he maid under him sindry othir  
 capitanis, quhare thay war found of maist wisdome and manheid;  
 and exhortit the pepil to be obeidient thairto, with sic respect to  
 thair singulare and commoun weill, that thay suffer nocht thaimself  
 to be randerit to ennimes: and sumtime he prayit thaim, to remem-



ber the manheid of thair elderis, quhilkis dang the vailyeant Julius out of Albion.

The Albanis, inflammit to battal be this hortation, come forthwart weill arrayit on thair ennimes. Als sone as Plautius and Arviragus war advertist thair of, thay arrayit thair folkis. Nochthelless, thay thocht it unganand to geif hasty battall, knawing weil thair ennimes ful of ire and hatrent; and, thairfore, concludit to irk thaim erar with lang tary, walking, labour, and penurite of vittallis, than to jeoperde aganis sa huge multitude of peple, all enragit aganis thaim at anis, quhilk culd nocht be vincust but untellabil murdir. The Albanis, be delayng of battall, come to sic point, that thay nicht nocht, for multitude of peple, be haldin togidder: for sic derth and hunger rais in thair army, that sindry of thame depertit fra thair camp to seik vittallis; of quhom ane certane wer takin and brocht to Plaucius, and schew the Britonis, be hunger, walking, and truble, neir discomfist. Plaucius, on the morow, maid his armye reddy for battall. Caratak weil advertist thair of, arrayit his folkis, and, be sound of trumpat, junit. Followit ane scharp battal, and fochtin continewalie with uncertane victory, quhill the nicht severit thaim on ilk side. Plaucius, on the morow, seing that he nicht nocht renew his army, returnit to London, eftir that the maist part of his horsmen were tint. Caratak, brokin in the samin maner, come with the remanent of his army to York: and comandit al his folkis to pas hame, quhil thay wer new warnit.

## Chap. Eleventh.

*Of the message send to Caratak be Plaucius, and of his answer. Of the deith of Genissa. And how Vespasian was send in Britane to dant the Britonis.*



LAUCIUS, eftir this unhappy battal, send his oratouris to Caratak, and schew that he had gret admiration that Caratak, but ony occasioun of injuris, invadit the landis of Romanis, and supportit thair ennimes; havand na remembrance of the gret humaniteis done to him be Claudius, Empriour, quhen the said Claudius, with smal difficulte, micht have subdewit his realme and pepil: howbeit he abstenit, and exertit his wraith on Orknay. And, thairfore, desirit him to repair al injuris be him done, and obstene thairfra in times cuning; or ellis he suld be reput ennime to Romanis. It wes answerd be Caratak, that it wes not to have admiratioun thocht he defendit his nepote Guidarius undefraudit of his just heritage and kingdome. And to the remanent pointis he answerit, It wes for na favour that Claudius invadit nocht the realme of Scottis, bot onlie becaus he knew the samin nocht possible to be conquest but extreme jeoperde and chance of battal: and, for that caus, he past on the rude and unarmit pepill of Orknay, quhilkis micht be sone vincust; to that fine, that he, the gloriis and vailyeant Empriour, amang febil creaturis, micht have ane fenyait glore of triumphe. For thir causis, the Romanis suld redres baith the new and auld injuris done to Scottis and Pichtis, and depart hastely out of Albion, with thair folkis; uthewayis nocht wes to be traistit, bot Scottis, Pichtis, and Britonis, quhom thay held in maist contemptioun, suld be thair perpetuall ennimes, for defence of thair liberte, and native Goddis.

Plaucius, be this answer, tuk hie indignation; and thocht it richt unworthy that ane pepill nothir pissant in riches nor chevalry, so pertlie sal contempne the power of Romanis: and maid, thairfore,

his aith to revenge this proud contempton done be Caratak. Mony othir Romanis maid thair aithis in that samin maner.

Quhen Arviragus had considerit the gret constance of Caratak in this maner, he tuke ferme beleif, gif his pissance wer concurrant with the remanent Albanis, that Romanis might be esalie dounge out of Albion. Desiring thairfore to recover his anciant honouris and liberte, he left Plaucius, and past, with al that war of his opinion, to the remanent princis of Britonis, quhilkis war convenit for the time at Schrewisbery; quhare he was plesandly ressavit. Genissa, the Romane lady, quhome Arviragus tuke in place of his lauchfull wif, herand the rebellion of Arviragus, tuke sic displeseir, that scho partit with child, and sone efter deceissit. Than Aulus Plaucius, ilk day havand les confidence in Britonis, becaus thair faith was sa oft brokin; began to garnis the munitionis, strenthis, and townis of Romanis with new wageouris and vittallis; and send letteris with diligence to Claudius, complening the falset of Britonis, quhilkis might na way be haldin under the Romane lawis, bot maid new rebellion, and hes brocht with thaim the Scottis and Pichtis, the maist cruell and bludy pepill in erd: and thairfore the battal sal not be led, in times cuming, only aganis the Britonis, bot erar aganis all the Albanis: For thir reasonis gud war to send hasty support to Romanis, that thay be nocht shamefully dounge out of Britane. Als sone as Claudius rede thir letteris, he send Vespasian with mony Romane legionis in Britane.

Vespasian, efter his cumming, seing the dangerus cais the Romanis war intil, maid him to bring all materis to beter estait. And first he callit afore him the said Plaucius, to se gif the dammage falling to Romanis in this battal, succedit be his imprudence or sleuth. Plaucius, for his purgation, maid few wordis; bot sufferit his dedis to schaw thaim self: for every thing, that pertenit to craft of chevalry, war sa wisly be him providit, that the same was in sic admiration to Vespasian, that he fernly belevit the said Plaucius was sufficient, howbeit na othir power had cumin to him, to have subdewit the Albanis to Romane empire.

## Chap. Twelfth.

*How the thre Kingis of Albion, movand weir aganis Vespasian, wer discomfist. How Vespasian ressavit Arviragus to his mercy, and maid his Lands tributar to Romane Empire.*



ESPASIAN, sone efter, maid his ordinance to pas on Arviragus and the Britonis, for thair rebellion. Arviragus advertist thairof, convenit his noblis at York, quhare the Scottis and Pichtis war devisit to cum. In this counsall, was not devisit, as afore, that every man sufficient to beir armoure, suld convene to expel the Romanis out of Albion; bot ane certane of every schire allanerly, that thair vittallis nicht be the mair esaly providit. Thus war the Britonis, at the day affixit, gaderit to the nowmer of Lxv.M chosin men, and convenit at York, with two monethis vittallis, abiding the cuming of the confiderat kingis; quhilkis come, sone efter, with Lx.M men. The Albanis assemblit togidder in this maner, devidit thaim in sindry battallis, with capitanis to hald thaim in gud array. On the tothir side, Vespasian rasis his tentis, and was convoyit be certane treasonabill Britonis, quhare the Albanis war. Followit sone, ane dangerus and terribil battal; for the Albanis stude at ane strenth beside ane mos, nocht twelve milis fra York. Alway the Romanis that faucht in the richt wing war neir discomfist; nochtheless, Vespasian supportit thaim with ane new legion: be quhais cuming thair curage was sa rasis, that, notwithstanding thair hevy woundis, thay renewit battal; and quhen thay war persit throw the bodyis, thay ceissit not quhill thay slew thair ennimes fornens thaim. Otheris faucht sa cruelly, that quhen thair hand and swerd was doung away, thay fell above thair ennimes, and rave thaim with thair teith. Nochtheless, the fatal necessite of victory, gevin be devine weirdis to Romanis, nicht not be vincust that day be multitude, manheid, nor lang perseverance in battal; be repugnance of the Goddis, quhilkis had determit to

subdew all realmis to Romanis : for the Albanis, howbeit thay left na thing undone that micht pertene to vailycant campionis, war finally discomfist. Arviragus, opprest with hevy dolour, for slauchter of sa mony nobil campionis, wald have slane himself ; bot he was stoppit be his friendis, in esperance of better fortune. Caratak, saiffit with ane few nowmer of pepil, went to Brigance. Illithara, King of Pichtis, desiring not to leif efter the slauchter of his dere freindis, raif of his coit armour, and was slane sone efter, unknowin quhat he was.

The Britonis, efter this unhappy battall, send ane herald to Vespasian, desiring peace ; and schew sa huge calamite falling to thaim be ire of Goddis, that of LXV.M Britonis, war left only VI.C men on live, and war sa punist, that thay micht be sufficient example to schaw quhat vengeance and sorow cumis to all pepil, for violation of thair faith and promis. Vespasian answerit, he wald heir na condicion of peace, quhill Arviragus wer brocht to his presence. Arviragus, seand na refuge, comperit in his humly maner ; quhilk thing movit Vespasian to gret reuth, seing, be chance of fortune, that he, quhilk was sa provit that day at morow, was than sa destitute of freindis, that he desirit mercy at his ennimes. Incontinent Arviragus fel on kneis, saying, the Goddis had tane sa rigorous punition on him and his pepil, that he covet not to leif above so hie calamite. And thairfore he desirit nocht bot grace to his son and wif, quhilkis he afore had wrangusly exilit but ony falt. Vespasian seing his dolorus estait, had sic compassion, that he micht not retene fra teris ; nochtheless, he tuke counsall how he suld behaif him in this mater. Sum gaif counsal, that Arviragus suld be send, with his wif, children, and guddis, to Rome, as lauchful pray, to abide the jugement of Romane senatouris ; to be exempil to all pepill, quhat frute procedis of rebellion aganis the Romanis. Otheris, havand sicht to chance of fortune, counsulit him to have reuth, and not to travel the said Arviragus to Rome, sen he was not thair lauchful pray, bot cuming under assurance of Romanis ; quhais empire was eikit be inviolat faith, and be no slichtis on thair subdittis. Vespasian, be this counsal, tuke Arviragus to his mercy, and continewit him in his auctorite ; syne commandit all the strenthis of the townis of Britane, quhilkis afore war stuffit aganis the Romanis, to



be randerit to his capitanis; and plegis to be gevin for observation thair of. The principal man that was gevin at this time in plege, wes Guiderius, Prince of Britane, and sonne of Arviragus; quhilk pass-and with Vespasian to Rome, fell in gret infirmite, and deceissit. Quhen Vespasian had dantit the Britonis on this wise, he distroyit al thair awin lawis, and brocht on thaim the lawis of Romanis: and commandit that na man sal haif commission of blude within Britane, bot Plaucius, or his deputis; be quhom certane men war limit to minister justice on the Romane maner. The fame of thir lawis causit al the remanent Britonis to be yoldin to Vespasian, and gave him mony riche jewellis, in satisfaction of thair offence.

### Chap. Thirteenth.

*How Vespasiane wan the Towne of Camelon, and discomfist Caratak. Of his Message send to Caratak, and of Caratakis Answer.*



Ow was the winter cummin, and causit Vespasiane to returne to York; quhare he abaid, all the said winter, with Arviragus. And at the nixt somer he rasit his army, and come within the boundis of Mers and Berwik, pertenning to the dominion of Pichtis: quhais inhabitantis war ay maist vailyeant, and strangest ennimes to Britonis; nochtheles, thay war than sa brokin, at this time, with the battall afore rehersit, that thay nicht make litil resistance, bot war haistely yoldin to Romanis. Utheris, quhilkis war mair nobil, fled to Camelon, belevand the Romanis suld noch cum thair, for difficill and strait passage. Vespasiane weill advertist of thair departing, come with more diligence than ony men presumit, and wan the said town of Camelon. Amang mony riche and precius jewellis, in spulyeing of this town, war found the armis of the kingis of Pichtis; and ane crown of gold, set about with precius stanis of variant colouris; and ane swerd, with heft of gold maist curiously wrocht, within ane purpoure sleith. This

sword was worne, mony yeris efter, be Vespasiane in all his weris. All the nobillis of Pichtis, that war takin in Camelon, war licent to returne hame, on thair pledgis. Vespasiane abaid, lang time efter, in Camelon; and brocht divers auld capitanis to dwell in it, and to leif under Romane lawis, instrukand the rude pepill thair of in civil maneris. He biggit ane tempil, nocht far fra the said town, upon the watter of Carron, in honour of Claudius and Victory; and commandit the samin to be adorit be the pepil. Quhill Vespasian was gevin on this maner to polesy and vane religion of gentilis, he was advertist be his exploratouris, that Caratak, King of Scottis, had renewit his army, and cumand furthwart to revenge the injuris done to him be Romanis. Vespasian litill affrayit of thir novellis, abaid in Camelon, and commandit Plaucius, with ane part of the Romanis army, to meit him. Not lang efter, be sound of trumpat, baith the armyis junit, and faucht with incredible slauchter on athir side. At last, quhen thay had focht in fra the dawing to the midday, the victory succedit to Romanis. The residew of Scottis, that eschapit fra this sorrowful battall, fled to the montanis. King Caratak, evil woundit, was brocht out of the felde, with gret difficulte, to Dounstafage. Throw fame of this unhappy battall, mony pepil war yoldin to Romanis. All thay that dwelt in Brigance, havand litil confidence in thair strenthis, fled with thair wiffis, children, and guddis, to the nixt montanis. The fourt day efter, Plaucius tuk the town of Carrik, and pertit al the spulye and guddis found in it, amang his weirmen; and send ane herald to Vespasian, to advertis him of this victory, and schew that Brigance, the principal province of Scotland, was to be randerit but ony forthir rebellion. Vespasian rejosing of thir novellis, come to Carrik; quhare he ressavit mony of the pepill of Brigance to his opinion. Efter this, havand compassion of the lamentabil chance falling to Caratak, fechtand to the uter exterminion of his pepill, for defence of his liberte; he send messingeris to him, saying: It was nocht ganand to him to be ony forthir repugnant to the Goddis, be quhome all victory, empire, and aucto-rite procedis in erd; quhais deliverit sentence hes ordanit all regionis to be subdewit to Romanis. It wes necessar, thairfore, to him and his pepill, to obey the Goddis; quhilkis hes tane ane manifest puni-

tioun on him and his pepill, for thair rebellious : attoure, promittit, gif he wald be obedient to Romane empire, that he suld remane in honouris as afore, and to be reput as freind to the senat and pepill of Rome ; uthirwayis, gif he wald be repugnant, and perseveir be unprudent hatrent aganis thaim, he suld be degradit of auctorite, and his peple uterlie distroyit. To thir wourdis answerit Caratak, It wes na les fury than imprudence, to mortall pepill to presume, (as thay war familiar with Goddis,) to have ony cognoscance of thingis to cum. Forthir, gif the Romanis, but ony occasion of just battall, wald invaid him, he culd do na thing les than resist sa farre as he micht : for he traistit the Goddis not to be sa injust, to gif victory to injurius and wrangus pepil. Forthir, he culd nochit understand that Romanis suld defend him in his realme, sen thay have socht sa mony wayis to reif him, as thay have done to othir kingis. As to the amite and freindschip of Romanis, he thocht the same to be desirit, gif it micht do him ony commodite ; bot as than it was to be refusit, for gret dammage suld follow thairthrow to his realme and subditis. The realme of Scottis wes als fre to him, as the kingdome of Romanis wes to Cesar Empriour. And sen all pepill that will nochit defend thair awin, ar reput na les detestabil than thay that reiffis othir mennis realmes, he suld perseveir in battall aganis the Romanis to the finall end of his live, in defence of his realme and liberte.

### Chap. Fourteenth.

*How Caratak cumand with new army aganis Romanis, wes vincust.  
Of the Deith of Plautius ; and how Ostorius was send in his place,  
and dantit the Britonis.*



BE this answer, Vespasian tuk gret admiration ; seing Caratak of sa invinsabil sperit : quhen al the remanent princis of Albion wer subdewit, he only, pretending to fecht aganis Romanis : and, for his proud contemp- tion, he tuk purpos to put him and his pepill to uter rewine. Yit, becaus the passage wes diffiail, and vittallis nicht not be transportit in his boundis, but huge dammage of Romanis ; he changit his mind, and maid him reddy to pas in the Ile of Man, lyand betwix Ireland and Albion : and for the expedition thair of, he brocht mony schippis and galyonis to the nixt port, reddy to the samin effect. In the mene time, he gat lettris, schewand, that baith Walis and the Ile of Wicht wes rebellit ; and uncertane gif the same procedit be persuation of France or not. Vespasiane, traisting na thing sa gud as to meit this present truble afore it ony forther spred, supersedit his passage in the Ile of Man, and past in Britane ; leiffand behind him the strenthis of Brigance garnist with strang sodjouris, and the residew of his army with Plaucius. At his cuming in Britane, the pepill, with facill lauboure, wer sone dantit ; and the principal conspiratouris punist for thair rebellion. Vespasiane, eftir thir felicitais, returnit be command of Claudius, Empriour, to Rome ; quhare he wes ressavit with gret triumphe.

Als sone as Caratak wes advertist that Vespasiane wes departit out of Albion, he thoct time ganand to recover the landis of Scot- tis and Pichtis, quhilk war reft afore be tyranny of Romanis ; and assemblit thairfore ane army fra sindry boundis of Albion, with al pepil that hatit the Romanis, or desirit to revenge thair injuris. The Romanis, weil certifyit of his cuming, met him with arrayit



ostis. Followit, ane terribill bergane, fochtin with birnand hatrent on all sidis: the Scottis desiring to recover thair liberte; and the Romanis, to tine not the landis that thay wan afore with gret difficulte and pine. This battall wes lang fochtin with uncertane victory; nochtheles, the wisdom and chevalrie of Romanis wan the victory, and put the Scottis to the flicht. Caratak, seing his army brokin, colleckit the residew of his folkis, and come to Dounstafage; quhare he, be lang consultatioun afore his nobillis, tuke avisement how he micht defend his realme aganis the Romanis; and desirit ane new army to be gaderit out of al boundis undir his dominioun, with al support that micht be gottin fra the princis of Ireland, thair anciant faderis, to expel the Romanis out of Scotland, or than all at anis to de. The counsal ripely avisit, with thir present calamiteis falling on thaim be frequent victorie of Romanis, thocht nocht profitable to jeopard the realme to the last chance of battall: bot erar to suffer thair pepill to waik sumtime fra battal, to recover sum strenth, quhilkis hes bene sa oft diffait afore. Be the samin counsall, wes devisit, that certane chosin men suld lye on the bordour of Brigrance, to stop the Romanis fra invasioun of the remanent boundis of Scotland, be frequent incursionis erar than plane battall: thus wes the battall prolongit twa yeris eftir, but ony gret slauchter. The samin time, Plaucius, governour of Romane army, fel in irremediable infirmite of flux; and quhen he understude cleirly he micht nouthir convales be support of nature nor medcine, he wes sa disparit of his life, that he desirit Claudius, Empriour, sen he micht nocht labour forthir for the common weill of Rome, to send ane prudent capitane in his place, to hald the Albianis undir Romane lawis, that the landis conquest afore with gret difficulte wer nocht tint. Claudius, at his desire, send in Britane ane vailyeant knight, namit Ostorius Scapula; and sone eftir his cuming, Plaucius deceisit in Camelon. His body wes brint, eftir the custome and rite of Romanis, and consecratit in the Tempill of Claudius and Victory. Thus rais ane consuetude, mony yeris eftir observat amang the Scottis and Pichtis, to birne the bodyis of thaim that deis; as apperis yit, be mony signis, to our dayis: for, in the yeir of God, M.DXXXI yeris, in Fyndoure, ane town of the Mernis, v milis fra Aberdene, wes found ane anciant sepulture, in quhilk wer II lame



piggis, craftely maid, with letteris ingravit, full of brint powder; quhilkis sone eftir that thay wer handillit fel in dros. Siclike in Kenbothen, ane town of Mar, x milis fra Aberdene, wer found two sepulturis, on the samin maner, full of brint powder. Mony othir sepulturis hes bene oft times found on the same maner, ful of brint powder. Bot we wil return to our historye, quhare we left.

The Britonis, eftir the cumming of Ostorius Scapula, beleving to recover thair liberte, becaus he knew not thair maneris nor countre, rebellit. Ostorius, desiring to have occasion of rebelloun, that he nicht schaw his proues and manheid; rasis his camp to invade the Welchemen and otheris Britonis, in the west partis of Britane; and finalie put thaim to discomfiture. Eftir this victory, he went on the est Britonis, fornence the France seis, quhilkis war the principal movaris of this rebellion. Thir Britonis seing na refuge, fledde to ane strait ground, quhare thay nicht nocht be esalie invadit: nochtheles, thay wer finalie vincust. Throw fame of this unhappy battall, all the remanent Britonis wer subdewit to Ostorius.

### Chap. Fifteenth.

*How Caratak, fetchand with new army aganis the Romanis, was discomfist and maid Presoner to Ostorius, be treason of Cartumandia, his stepmoder.*



STORIUS, schort time eftir, tuk ane castell, in Cumber, namit Carlyll: and eftir that he had tane gret praye of guddis out of all partis lyand thair about, he come with al his army, baith in Penthland, Carrik, Kyle, and Cunningham; and wrocht insufferabil injuris with fire and swerd, on the pepill thair of. Caratak, impacient to sustene thir offensis, determit outhir to de, or ellis to revenge the samin. Mony othir Albanis come to him on the samin mind. The army of Caratak at this time wes noumerit to XL.M men: and wes arrayit in sic maner that al thair bakkis wer set contrar ane deip rivere, but ony furde; to that fine, that nane of thame may have esperance to flee. Than wes al

the agit wemen, quhilk come in gret noumer to visie the chance of this feild, set on ilk side of the battall; to rais the spreitis of men with thair clamour, and to cast stanis at thair ennimes, and sla thaim quhen thay fell. All othir wemen, that war young and wicht, war arrayit with armour and wappinnis amang the men. Sic thingis done, the capitanis went heir and thair about the army, exhorting thame all in general to battal; and said, That daye, behuffit thay othir to recover thair liberte, or ellis be thirlit to perpetual servitude. And sumtime thay maid invocatioun to the Devine Spreit of thair eldaris; quhilkis, be thair manheid and gloriou chevalrie, dang Julius out of Albion, and maid thaim and thair posterite exonerat fra al tribut and servitude of Romanis. Than followit sa huge clamour and noyis in the army, that ilk man promittit, but ony feir, to fecht for thair realme and liberte to the deith. Ostorius wes na litil astonist, seing the Scottis of sa huge multitude, and brim desire of battall; knowing weil how dangerus it wes to fecht aganis ony men in extreme disperation but refuge. Caratak, yit to gif the army more curage and spreit to fecht, schew that thair perpetual liberte wes than present to thaim in that feild, for the winning. On the othir side, Ostorius wes na les prudent in hortation of his folkis: desiring thame, be lang orison, to remember how thay wer Romanis, dantaris of all pepill; and thair ennimes, bot rude and barbar, but humane, and cassin be Nature, the crafty moder of al creature, in the remote and last nuik of the warld. Incontinent, baith the armyis, be thunderand preis of trumpat, junit, and faucht with mair cruelte than evir wes herd in ony warld afore: nochtheles, the Romanis wer finalie victouris.

In this battall wes tane Caratakis wif, his dochter, and breder. And, as oft is sene, few men can haif sicker freindis in adversite: This Caratak fled to his gud moder, Cartumandia, Quene of Scottis; quhilk, eftir deceis of his fader Cadallane, wes maryit apon one vailyeant knicht, namit Venisius. Cartumandia seing Caratak distitute of all consolatioun, deliverit him to Ostorius, the ix. yeir eftir that the battall wes begun be Romanis in Albion. Ostorius seing Caratak brocht afore him, and reft fra kinglie dignite, had sic compassioun, that he tuke him be the hand, and said, "O Caratak, this mischance suld be sufferit with pacience; for thocht thow be dis-

“ titute of gud fortoun, yit thou art nocht cumin in our handis,  
 “ nakit of virtew. Eschame nocht to be the pray of Romanis,  
 “ quhilkis hes subdewit sa mony riche and vailyeant kingis, and led  
 “ thaim in triumphe.” To this answerit Caratak, with hevvy cheir :  
 “ I mon,” said he, “ suffer this adversite, howbeit it be contrar  
 “ my will. And yit na thing is sa grevous to me as Fortoun ; quhilk  
 “ is sa contrarius to my governance, that scho hes dejeckit me at thy  
 “ feit, to be example of hir mutabilite ; and maid me presoner, more  
 “ be treason than force : quhil my pissance indurit, I maid impedi-  
 “ ment ; bot now, be treason of my stepmoder, Cartumandia, in  
 “ quhom had I maist confidence eftir my discomfitour, I am cumin  
 “ in thy handis. My part is now to obey to the as victour, and un-  
 “ derlie the wil and plescir of my ennime : thy part sal be to use  
 “ the chance of ane victorius capitane, and so mercifull, that vincust  
 “ and miserable peple may have sum esperance of grace.” Als sone  
 as Caratak had said thir wourdis, he wes brocht to the tentis of Ro-  
 manis, and tretit with all reverence, as efferit to ane king.

### Chap. Sixteenth.

*How Caratak was brocht to Rome, and how he returnit in Scotland.  
 Of uncouth mervellis sene in Albion ; and of sindry nobill Clerkis,  
 and of the Deith of Caratak.*



ARATAK, within few dayis eftir, wes brocht throw  
 Italy, with his wiffe, douchter, and breidir, to Rome.  
 The pepil, heirand his cumming, assemblit out of all  
 partis ; richt desirus to se that vailyeant king quhilk  
 had fouchtin sa mony yeris aganis the Romanis. At his cuming,  
 stude arrayit in the stretis of Rome, the band of weirmen, in gret  
 ordour. First wer schawin his hors, harnes, barding, and riche  
 spulyeis ; quhilkis war gottin in the feild aganis him : followit, his  
 wif and douchter ; and, last of all, himself. Caratak, brocht afore the  
 Empreour in this maner, and seing his freindis that come with him  
 sum part astonist ; to schaw his curage na thing dejeckit in this cala-

mite, said in this maner : “ Had I bene als fortunat in prosperite  
 “ and riches, as I am in hie nobilite and blud, I micht haif erar  
 “ cummin freind than presonere in this town ; for I wes nocht un-  
 “ worthy, throw my progenitouris and gret dominion, to have bene  
 “ confiderat with Romanis. This present calamite is na les honor-  
 “ able to the, Cesar, Empriour, than unplesand to me. I had sum-  
 “ time hors, harnes, men, and riches : quhat wonder is thocht I have  
 “ lost thaim aganis my will ? for gif the Romanis will have em-  
 “ pire above the warld, on force al peple man be thrillit to your  
 “ servitude. Had I bene randerit to Romanis, sone eftir thair cuming  
 “ in Albioun, nothir had thy glore, nor yit my calamite bene sa  
 “ notable and knawin. And thocht thow punis me, that am thy pre-  
 “ sonere, to the deith ; the memory of me sall sone evanis : yit, will  
 “ thow suffer me returne to my realme, it sal be ane perpetuall ex-  
 “ ample of thy mercy.” The Emprioure incontinent gave pardoun  
 and grace baith to him, his wiffe, and brether ; and deliverit thaim of  
 bondaige. Sone efter, the faderis convenit, and fell in sindry com-  
 municationis concerning the capitane of Caratak. Mony of thaim  
 thocht the taking of him na les honorabil to Romanis, than was  
 the taking of King Syphax be Scipio, or Persis be L. Paulus, or  
 the taking of ony othir vincust kingis be the Romanis ; and decern-  
 it, thairfore, ane triumphe to be gevin to Ostorius. Caratak was  
 commandit to returne in Scotland, leiffand his eldest brothir and  
 douchter in pledge.

Mony prodigeis and uncouth mervellis, war sene in Albion, that  
 yeir that Caratak faucht with Romanis. Ane gret battall of hors-  
 men war sene arrayit in the feild ; and sone eftir, with huge nois and  
 murdir on athir side, junit togidder : bot thay evanist so suddanly,  
 that na maner of signe apperit in the feild quhare thay war first  
 sene. In the nicht afore the battall, apperit to the wache, ane mul-  
 titude of wolffis, and tuke ane of thaim that war at the wache away,  
 and brocht him with thaim to the nixt wod ; bot on the morrow, als  
 sone as licht apperit, thay brocht him agane, but ony harme of his  
 body. In Carrik was ane child borne with ane ravin heid. Thir  
 uncouth signis apperit, to na les terrour than admiration of the  
 pepil. The devinouris intrepret thaim to signify gret trubill and  
 danger appering to Caratak, the heid of the realme : nochthe-



les, seing him returne fra Rome, but ony displeseir, thay began to interpret thaim to ane othir face. The pepill rejosing of Caratakis returning, ressavit him with excellent honouris, and convoyit him to the town of Carrik. This town, be command of the Empriour, was restorit to him, with Brigance, Kyle, and Cuningham.

Caratak past the remanent of his liffe in tender amite with the Romanis, but any uncouth or domistik weiris ; for baith his brethir and douchteris war send hame to him, be favoure of the Empriour. Caratak leiffit two yeris efter this, in gud peace, and deceissit the *xxi.* yere of his regne ; ane prince mair vailyeant than fortunat, all his dayis ; gevand his ingine and curage to defend his realme and subdittis fra servitude of Romanis, and to institute thaim in gud maneris. About this time was mony nobill clerkis, as Persius, Juvenale, Senica. The pepill began, als, in all partis of the world, to ryis in sickier faith of Crist ; and all vane idolatreis and superstitionis put downe.

And sa endis heir, the Thrid Buke.



# The Feird Buke.

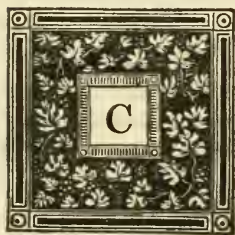
---

## HEIR BEGINNIS THE FEIRD BUKE OF THE CRONIKLIS OF SCOTLAND.

---

### Chap. First.

*How Corbrede was maid King of Scottis. How the Pichtis rebellit  
aganis the Romanis, and slew Ostorius thair Capitane.*



ATARAK beand on this maner deceissit, and beryit with funerall triumphe in Carrik, ane riche and precius sepulture wes maid for him, with hiear pillaris rising about the samin than evir wes sene afore, to his eternal glory. This prince had na airis, bot ane dochter, to succed to his realme; and wes trublit with sic infirmite, that scho deceissit ane virgine. Eftir hir deith, Corbreid, youngest brothir to Caratak, wes maid king; for his eldest brothir deceissit, as we schew afore, passand with Vespasiane to Rome. This Corbreid wes of fers ingine, nocht far different fra his brothir Caratak in maneris. In the beginning of his empire, he went in the Ilis, Ros, and Cathnes; quhare he punist mony wekit schrewis for thair attemptatis, and rewardit all thaim that he fand defendouris of the common weill, with large commoditeis.

Quhill Corbreid wes gevin on this maner to justice, the Romanis began to decay in Britane: for the Pichtis, eftir creation of thair new King, Conkist, in hope to recover thair liberte, slew mony of the Romanis, heir and thair skatterit throw the cuntre; for thay traistit, eftir deith of Caratak, na recounting to be foundin. Thus had nane of the Romanis eschapit, war nocht thay hapnit more haistelie to be reskewit be support of thair strenthis; nochtheles, mony of the principall capitanis wer slane. Ostorius, impacient to suffer thir injuris, come with ane haisty and weil arrayit army aganis the Pichtis; followit sone, ane sore battal, fochtin with sic cruelte and slauchter, that the Romanis wer neir discomfist. Than Ostorius ruschit sa fersly forwart to have maid thaim support, that he wes evill woundit, and narrowly eschapit untakin: nochtheles, the nicht severit thaim, with lamentable slauchter on ilk side. Followit, continewal incursionis, with reif and slauchter, as the chance succedit. Throw fame of this victory, come sindry cumpanis of pepill to the Pichtis, and gave occasioun to fecht aganis the Romanis. Bot skarsly wes the battall junit, quhen the Pichtis left the feild, and fled, as thay had bene discomfist; to that fine that thay nicht draw the Romanis to the said place quhair thair ambusche-ment wes laid. And as thay devisit, sa succedit eftir; for the Romanis, following in this maner, wer slane. Als sone as Ostorius wes advertist heiroyf, he fled with gret dredour to his tentis; and wrait to Claudius, Emprioure, that the Pichtis were rebellit, and nicht na ways be haldin under Romane lawis. Than Claudius maid his vow to punis the Pichtis in sic maner, that thair name and memorie sall peris in Albioun; and, to bring his purpos to effect, he send in Britane two Romane legionis: and, nochtwithstanding the cuming of thir legionis, the Pichtis grew ilk day more insolent aganis the Romanis; and finalie, be suddan irruptionis, slew two capitanis of Romane sodjouris, quhilkis wer assemblit afore to mak incursionis in the cuntre; and partit thair spulyeis amang thair fallowis, that concurrit with thaim in the said bergane.

Ostorius, trublit with hevvy curis, and doloure, rising of the woundis that he gat in this last battall, deceissit, to the gret consolatioun of his ennimes.

## Chap. Second.

*How Manlius Valens, Capitane of Britane, was discomfist be the Pichtis. How Didius was send in his place. Of the Messaige send be Pichtis to Corbreid; and of his Answer.*



STORIUS beand decessit in this wise, Manlius Valens wes maid capitane to Romanis in Britane; and com with mony aful legionis aganis the Pichtis. Followit, ane scharppe bergane, fochtin lang time with doutsum victory. And quhen the Pichtis stude in maist danger, come haistelie cccc. men of Kendill, quhen na man belevit, to thair support; be quhais cumming, the Romanis war put to flicht. In this battal wes slane mmm. Romanis, and twa thousand Pichtis. Claudius, advertist of this unhappy chance falling to Romanis in Britane, send Aulus Didius, with two Romane legionis, to succeid in his place. This Aulus, at his cumming in Albioun, fand the Romanis in small felicitie; and maid him thairfore to revenge the injuris done to thaim; and persewit the Pichtis, quhare evir thay might be apprehendit, to the deith. And first he callit all the Romanis afore him, and reprochit thaim that thay failyeit to thaim self, and war nocht sa walkrif and provident in al materis as thay suld haif ben, eftir the taking of Caratak. He mervellit eik that thay wer sa far degenerit fra Romane glore, to be schamfullie ouirthrawin with thair febill ennimes; and finalie, he prayt thaim to beleif nocht thair discomfitoure cummin be ony manheid or virtew of thair ennimes, bot onlie be thair awin, necligence and sleuth; and prayt thaim to be so obedient to thair capitane, that he have no occasioun be thaim to leis his curage. The Romanis maid incontinent thair solempne vowis, to revenge al injuris done be thair ennimes. The Pichtis, at the first brut of thir novellis, wer effrayit: nochtheles, be memorie of this recent victorie, thay began to tak gud curage; and send incontinent thair ambassatouris to Corbreid, King of Scottis, schawing to him, thocht thay

have laitlie conquest two victoreis on the Romanis, yit the said Romanis, be more hatrent than afore, intendis to cum with awfull incursionis in Pentland, and purposit, eftir the distruction of Pichtis, to invaid the Scottis on the same maner: and, thairfore, desirit the said Corbreid to send support, in time to occurre, the present dangeir, erar afore his pissance wer brokin, than quhen his landis wer so waistit, that he nicht mak na support.

It wes answerit be Corbreid, that he knew weill how Didius wes cumming in Albion, with na gud mind to him nor his realme; intending nocht onlie to keip the landis conquest afore be Romanis, bot als to augment the samin with new regionis and landis. Yit, becaus he wes confiderat with Romanis, he wald na wayis invaid thaim with battal, bot gif thay first invadit him; for he wes oblist thairto be contract maid afore be Caratak. Nochtheles, for defence of his realme and pepil, he suld cum, within ane certane day, with al his power; erar to mak impediment to Romanis, than to invaid thaim with ony battall.

### Chap. Third.

*How Cartumandia, Quene of Scotis, was beryit quik. How the Scottis and Pichtis faucht aganis the Romanis with uncertane victory, and war constrainit to take peace; and of the deith of Didius.*



As sone as thir oratouris war depeschit, Corbreid went with ane army in Brigance. Didius, heiring his cumming, chargit him, beane herald, to depart haistelie thairfra; and allegit, it wes the province and land of Romanis, and grantit bot onlie to Caratak, during his life: certifying him, gif he wer rebelland to this charge, he suld be repute ennime to Romanis, and dounge be force out of all boundis of his realme. Scarslie wer thir wordis said, quhen tithingis come, that Cesius Nasica, lieutenant to Didius, wes entrit with ane army in Brigance. Cor-



breid incontinent gaderit all his pepill to ane gret strenth; traisting na les honour to keip his subdittis but perell, than to wirk dammage on his ennimes: sine went to Epiak, to be consulit in this maist dangerus mater with Venisius, the husband of Cartumandia, his gud-moder.

This Venisius wes ane man of hie ingine, and wes lang time defendit fra injuris of nichtbouris be auctorite of Romanis; yit, becaus he saw thair tyranny and proud dominioun sa importabill, he rebellit, and come to the opinioun of his native prince. Cartumandia, Quene of Scottis, and spous to the said Venisius, richt sorowfull for thir felicitis daily succeding to Corbreid, and dredand hir to be punist, (for scho treasonabilly randrit Caratak afore to Romanis,) tuke hir husband and freindis be crafty slichtis, and held thaim in preson. Corbreid, movit for this offence, come to Epiak; and, eftir that he had put the said Venisius and his freindis to liberte, he commandit this wekit woman, Cartumandia, to be buryit quik.

Ane cumpany of Scottis, at this time, followit so unwarly on the chase of Romanis, that thay wer belttit about on every side with ennimes afore thay wist, and all slane. This discomfitoure maid the remanent Scottis, within thair municionis and stenthis, so effrayit, that thay nicht scarsly be haldin fra fleing. On the fift day eftir, the Romanis went forwart to assailye this munitioun of Scottis with thair horsmen: bot it wes sa circulit on ilk side within ane mos, that na horsmen nicht invaid thaim; and it had na out passage bot at ane part, quhilk was maid be thaim with flaikis, scheretis, and treis. Nochtheles, quhen thir Romanis knew that the Scottis and Pichtis wer within thre milis to thair army, thay left thair purpos. Incontinent, Cesius Nasica, capitane of Romanis, brocht all his army, weil arrayit, to the feild; and abaid still, quhill the cumming of thair ennimes. On the tothir side, the confideratte pepill, I mene the Scottis and Pichtis, went so fast forthwart, quhen thay saw thair ennimes in sicht, that thay wer out of aind, or evir thay come to ony straikis. And yit thay junit at the occasion of the sonne, and faucht continewally quhill thay wer severit be cumming of the nicht; and than the Romanis fled to thair tentis, and the confiderat kingis to the montanis.



In the mene time, Didius, the Romane legate, send ane herald to Cesius, his leutenand, and schew gret trubill amang the Britonis in Walis; and, thairfore, commandit him, to make sum honest way of peace with the Scottis and Pichtis, that the landis, conquest afore with sa huge difficulte, war nocht schamefully tint. Thir novellis maid Cesius to defaik sum part of his curage. The confiderat kingis, brokin with this recent bergane, send thair ambassatouris, on the nixt morow, to Cesius to have peace; lamenting the huge murdir and calamite falling to baith thair armyis be this last battall: and schew, thairfore, it was sufficient ineuch to Romanis to have the confiderat kingis as thair freindis in times cuming; for thay war sa obstinat, that na thing nicht vincus thaim during thair liffe. Cesius, havand this honest occasioun to treit peace with the confiderat pepill, set ane day to common on all materis. And, at the said day, peace was finaly tretit betwix the Romanis, Scottis, and Pichtis, undir thir conditionis: The Romanis sall keip the landis be thaim conquest afore this peace, but ony ferder conquies; and sall nouthir invade the Scottis nor Pichtis with battall, les than the Scottis and Pichtis invade thaim first. The Pichtis sall leif on thair awin lawis; and Conkist, thair king, to regne above thaim, as afore, payand the auld tribute to the wageouris of Camelon. The jurisdictionn of blude sall be onely with Romanis. Na Franchemen nor Britonis, that ar fugitive fra the Romane lawis, sall be resset amang the Scottis and Pichtis. The Scottis sall rejose frelie all thair landis, and use thair awin lawis; providing allwayis, that thay support nocht the inhabitantis of the Ile of Man with vittallis or wappinnis, for the injuris laitly be thaim done to Romanis. And, finally, the said Scottis sall nouthir support the Pichtis in Britane, gif ony of thaim happinnis to rebell aganis the Romanis; nor yit invade thaim with battall, sa lang as thay abaid at the faith of Romanis. The peace beand confirmit in this sort, all partyis returnit hame.

This peace indurit, but ony violatioun, sa lang as Didius was capitane in Britane. And, the saxt yeir efter, he deceissit in London.



### Chap. Fourth.

*How Veranius was maid capitane of Britane ; and of his deith. How Swetonius, his successoure, put the Ile of Man to sak. How Britonis maid new rebellioun on the Romanis ; and of sindry Prodigies and Mervellis sene in Albioun.*



**D**IVUS beand deceissit, as said is ; be command of Nero, Emprioure, was send in Britane, ane new capitane, namit Veranneus. Quhen this Veranneus had visit sindry provincis of Britane, he come to Camelon, and maid sacrifice in the honoure of the Goddes Victory, and Claudius, Emprioure, quhilk was laitly deceissit, and deificat be the Romanis.

Veranneus, richt desirus to be equale to his antecessouris in glore of chevalry, socht mony occasionis to move battall on his nichtbouris. So hapnit, that certane Hieland thevis of Scotland, tuke ane pray of guddis out of the Pichtis landis. Veranneus, traisting this sufficient

occasioun to move battall, socht na redres be reasoun of the peace afore contrakkit; bot send ane multitude of pepill, but ony mair tary, in the landis of Scottis; and, be frequent incursionis, brocht away ane gret pray of men and guddis with thaim in Pentland. The Scottis, movit be this outrage, ruschit haistely to harnes. Followit ithand heirschippis and slauchter on athir side; and, in the middis of this trubill, Veranneus deceissit. His last wourdis war sa full of vane arrogance and glore, as writis Tacitus, that he beleivit himself sufficient, gif he had leiffit two yeris mair than he did, to have subdewit all the boundis of Albion to Romane Empire.

Efter his deceis, Swetonius, ane humill man, was send in his place; quhilk, efter his cuming, renewit peace with Albanis: and, quhen he had reparit all injuris quhare thay complanit, he maid him reddey to pas on the Ile of Man; for it was full of vailycant pepill, and generall resset to all thaim that haitit or rebellit aganis the Romanis. At his cuming in the said Ile, he fand ane strange gise of battall arrayit aganis him. First, stude ane cumpany of wod women, arrayit in furius habite, on the sandis, with hair hingand ouir thair ene, and armit with firebrandis in thair handis. Efter thaim, stude the preistis namit Druides, hevand thair handis to the hevin, and makand maist terribil cursing on the Romanis; and, in the middis of thaim, stude ane band of armit men, reddey to fecht. The Romanis war mair astonist for this uncouth sicht of furius women and preistis, than ony terrour of armit men: nochtheles, be hortatioun of thair capitane, thay went forthwart with displayit baner; and, finaly, baith thir women and preistis war discomfist and yoldin. Swetonius, efter this victory, garnist all the strenthis of this Ile with garnison of Romanis; and maid plane eversiou of all the woddis, quhare the preistis usit thair sacrifice in the honour of thair Goddis.

Quhen Swetonius had dantit the Ile of Man in this maner, he was advertist that France was rebellit; and, thairfore, to peacify this trubill, he pullit up salis, and arrivit in Bartanye. The Britonis herand his departing, thocht the time ganand to recover thair liberte, and rebellit. The motive of thair rebelliou was, that Arviragus, thair last king, left his two dochteris, and the Emprioure, heritouris to his kingdome and riches; traisting, to saif thaim fra

trubill be that way: howbeit, all thingis succedit contrar his beleif; for his realme was governit be Romane capitaneis, and his hous put to servitude, as it had bene tane be pres of battal; his wif, Voada, bet with straikis; and baith his two dochteris deflorit. The Britonis, opprest with thir injuris, and dreidand ilk day mair displeseris to follow, maid plane rebellion, and socht support in all partis quhare thay nicht.

Mony uncouth mervellis war sene, about this time, in Albion. The occiane see apperit bludy, and mony deid bodyis cassin to the brayis thair of. Wemen yeid wod, and declarit terribill thingis to cum. The imagis of Claudius, beside Camelon, fel down in dros; and the image of Victory fell down fra the alter on hir bak, as scho had bene vincust. The spaymen said, thir prodigies signifyt gret damage appering to Romanis. The Pichtis quhilkis war in Camelon and othir munitionis thair beside, herand this answer, wer erekit in esperance of better fortoun; and nocht only maid privat conspuration aganis the Romanis, bot slew mony of thair wageouris, afore thair rebellion was patent. The agit Romanis, in quhome the Pichtis had maist hatrent, war slane in gret nowmer, and the residew chasit out of al boundis gevin to thaim for lang service; and, finaly, thir agit Romanis fled to ane auld tempill, within the boundis of Berwik, quhare thay war al slane be the inhabitantis of that region. Petus Cerealis, lieutenant to Swetonius, desiring to support thir agit capitaneis, come with ane legioun of Romanis, and ane cumpany of horsmen; nochtheles, his legion was discomfist, and himself chasit to the Romane tentis. The nixt nicht, he fled to Cattus, procuratour of Britane, quhilk was for that time in Kent. Als sone as Cattus was advertist of the trubill ilk day rising in Britane, he fled, for feir of his lif, in France.



## Chap. Fifth.

*Of the Complaint maid be Voada, Quene of Britonis, to Corbreid.  
Of his Message send to Cattus. Of Cattus answer. Of sindry  
Incursionis maid be Scottis on the Romanis. And of the first  
cuming of Murrayis in Scotland.*



VOADA, Quene of Britonis, opprest with daily injure of Romanis, send hir secretar to hir brothir Corbreid, King of Scottis, complening hir mesirie and trouble; hir dochteris deflorit; and himself sa shamefully dounge be the Romanis, that pacience nicht nocht availl, bot onely to be ane place to new injuris. Sum time wes bot ane king in Britane, bot than rang two kingis, the legat, and the Romane procuratour; that ane havand power to distroy thair blude, and this othir, to devore thair substance. That man was reput maist nobill amang Romanis, that nicht defoule moniast wemen, or make maist herschippis on the pepill. And, becaus na thing nicht suffice to satefy the insaciabil lust and avarice of Romanis, scho requirit hir brothir, to suffer nocht hir, his onely sister, to be shamefully dounge, and hir dochteris defould, but punishment. And finally schew, how the Britonis, for the infinite harmes done to thaim be Romanis, war rebel-lit; throw quhilk, he nicht haif better occasion to invaid the Romanis with battall at this time, than ony othir time afore.

Corbreid, movit be this piteous complaint, send ane herald to Cattus, Romane procuratour, quhilk was laitly returnit in Britane, commanding him to redres al offencis done to his sister; and, failyeing thairof, declarit him to be ennime to Romanis in times cuming. It was answerit be Cattus, that na thing pertenit to Corbreid, quhidder richt or wrang war done to Voada; als, it was ane vane foly to Corbreid, sen he was bot ane rud and barbar man, to seme curius in Romane materis, pertening na thing to his chargis. Forthir, gif ony displeseir war done to Voada, Quene of Britonis, the samyn sall be eikit with doubill injuris; for the Romanis wald nocht dedenye



thair majeste, to satefy the desire of barbar pepill in ony othir sort ; and tuke na regard quhidder he war freind or fo, or quhat he nicht do.

Corbreid, movit be this outrageous answer, maid new band of confideration with Pichtis. And, within schort time efter, the confiderat kingis rasis ane army of all fensabil men that nicht be foundin within thair realmis, with sindry Ireland men, that come to thair support, and slew the Romanis, in al partis quhare thay nicht be apprehendit, but ony ransom or piete : and in this jurnay thay tuke Berwik, quhilk was than maist populus town of that region ; and, quhen thay had slane all Romane sodjouris foundin thairintill, thay kest downe the wallis thair of onto the ground.

The inhabitantis of the Ile of Man heirand thir novellis, thocht the time ganand to recover all thair strenthis. Sone efter, all pepil of Brigance, Carrik, Kyle, and Cuningham, come to thaim ; and past, in arrayit battall, throw sindry provincis of Romanis, ceissing fra na maner of cruelteis that nicht be devisit on thaim. The town of Carlell was nocht saffit fra this cruelte ; for, efter that it was tane, all the cieteyanis thair of war slane, and the strang wallis thair of, equat to the ground. The wemen, during this fury, war sa desirus to revenge the cruelteis done be Romanis, that thay bure armour and wappinnis.

About this time, ane pepil, namit Murrayis, discending of Almane blude, and dOUNg out of thair native region be Romane weris, come, skatterit in sindry cumpanyis, to the mouth of Ryne ; quhare thay pullit up salis, with thair capitane Rodorik, to seik ane new habitation. At last, efter that thay had bene lang travellit on the wilsum sees, and inhibit to land in France and Britane, thay arrivit in Forthe ; quhilk is ane arme of the see deviding Pentland fra Fiffe. The Pichtis ressavit thaim the mair plesandly, that thay apperit with strang bodyis to support thaim aganis thair pissant ennimes ; and war nocht only discendit of thair linage and blude, bot als war sworne, sa far as thair power nicht, to revenge the injuris done to thaim be Romanis.

Rodorik, brocht in Pentland with the Murrayis on this maner, went to the confiderat kingis ; and, before thaim, lamentit sore the tyranny of Romanis, quhilkis, be onely desire of dominioun, hes

subdewit ane large part of Almany; and nocht only thirllit the pepill thair of to importabil servitude, bot subjeckit thaim to Romane lawis. Siclike, the Murrayis, to quhom he wes capitane, war douning out of thair native landis; and constrainit, becaus thay nicht suffer na servitud, to seik new habitation. Alwayis, it wes ane gret consolatioun to him and the Murrayis, that thay, be favour of Goddis, wer brocht in thay landis, quhare thay nicht revenge the injuris done to thaim be thair ennimes. And, for thir motivis, he desirit the confiderat kingis, to suffer him and the Murrayis to pas formast in support of thair peple; and desirit, gif it hapnit thaim, be thair manheid and chevalry, to ding the Romanis out of Scotland, to grant thame wiffis, that thay nicht increas under ane blude with Scottis and Pichtis: be contrar, gif it hapnit thaim to be slane, thay tuke na cure of thair deith, swa that thay had sufficientlie revengit the injuris done be thair proude ennimes. Thir desiris of the Murrayis wer the more acceptabill to the confiderat kingis, that thay understude thaim enragit with maist cruell hatrent aganis the Romanis; and, thairfore, condescendit to all thair peticionis, traisting, be thair incredible manheid and strenth, to wirk sum hie displeisur to thair ennimes.

### Chap. Sixty.

*Of the Orison maid be Voada, Quene of Britonis, to the confiderat Kingis; and how scho [wes] vincust [be] the Romanis, and finally slew hirself. And of the deith of King Corbreid.*



HE confiderat kingis, rejosing of the cumming of Murrayis on this maner, went forthwart with diligence to meit Voada; the vailycant Quene of Britonis, quhilk wes than gaderit with ane huge noumer of Britonis, abiding thair cuming. Als sone as Voada understude hir bruthir Corbreid and the King of Pichtis wer cumin with thair armyis, scho went forthwart to meit thaim.

Eftir maist tender and hertlie embrasing on ilk side, Voadā said to thame on this maner: “ Had I bene borne, maist vailyeant cam-  
 “ pionis, ane man, I nicht nocht have sufferit sa mony cruell and  
 “ intollerable injuris as now ar done be Romanis: nochtheles, in  
 “ quhatsumevir image nature hes formit me, gif ye will concurre  
 “ with me to revenge the common offence done to us all, thir Ro-  
 “ manis, that ar sa vailyeant aganis wemen, and sa cruel to thair  
 “ subditis, sall sone se quhat vassalage may be done be ladyis, quhen  
 “ extreme danger occuris. And, thocht I may no wayis devoid me  
 “ of wiflie image, yit I sall not want mannish hardiment; bot I sall  
 “ fecht formest in the bront, with v.m. armit ladyis, quhilkis ar all  
 “ sworne to revenge the crueltis done be Romanis. We sall pas  
 “ formast in battall, but feir of deith, or bludy woundis. We sal  
 “ nocht, as othir wemen usis, be affrayit for ony woundis tane or  
 “ gevin be our ennimes. I can have na mercy on thaim that hes  
 “ invadit my freindis with sic odious slauchter and crueltis. Thir  
 “ odious tyrannis, nakit and vodie of piete, hes slane sa infinit nou-  
 “ mer of pepill, and deflorit sa mony honest virginis and matronis,  
 “ that thay knaw nocht thaimself, as I belief, men, nor borne of  
 “ wemen. Arme yow, for this motivis, maist vailyeant kingis, aganis  
 “ your common ennimes, with sic courage as ye sall se ladyis have  
 “ afore yow: and beleif nocht bot sicker victory; for the Romanis  
 “ ar sa effrayit, that thay confide in na thing sa mekle as in thair  
 “ fleing. And haist your army with al deligence, in aventure sum  
 “ new power come nocht with Cattus, the Romane procuratoure,  
 “ throw quhilk it sal be the more difficill to resist; and, finally, I  
 “ beseik yow to rander nocht youreself, your wiffis, and barnis, but  
 “ scharp bargane, to Romanis.” Quhen Voadā had endit this ori-  
 son, the confiderat kingis apprisit hir wisdom and courage.

Cattus, advertist of thir novellis, wes effrayit: nochtheles, he come forthwart with arrayit oistis to meit the Albanis; and thay na thing eschewit his cumming. Incontinent, baith the armyis junit. At the first cumming, all the horsmen of Romanis wer discomfist; and, sone eftir, the futemen, on the samin maner. Followit, ane miserable slauchter on the flearis. Cattus, evill woundit in this battall, eschapid, and fled in France. The Albanis, proud of this victory, partit the spulye and riches of this feild amang thaim; and slew the Ro-

manis in al partis quhare thay micht be apprehendit. In this battall wer slane, as writtis Cornelius Tacitus, LXX.M Romanis, and XXX.M Albanis. Be this cruel slauchter, the Romanis wer brocht to sic calamite, that wer nocht Suetonius, the Romane legatte, come the more haistelie fra France to thair support, the Albanis had bene perpetuallie deliverit of Romane injuris. This Suetonius come in Britane with twa legionis, and x.M. wagiouris of sindry nationis, and tuke purpos to persew the Albanis with new battall. Voada, heir- ing the returning of Suetonius in Britane, send to the Britonis to cum to hir but ony tary. At the day prefixit, come to hir ane huge army of Britonis, Scottis, Pichtis, and Murrayis, devidit in sindry buschementis; all atanis rejosing, be thair recent victorie, that thay had occasioun and ganand season to distroy the Romanis. The wiffis, quhilkis come with thair husbandis, as the custome wes in thay dayis, wer set in cartis on the out bordouris of the campe, to beir witnes quhay didde maist vassalage. Quhen the Britonis, Scottis, Pichtis, and Murrayis, wer ordorit in gud array, Quene Voada, nocht unworthy to be noumerit amang maist douchty campionis, ruschit about the army, with hir two armit dochteris, and schew hir not cummin amang sa mony vailyeant capitanis onlie to defend hir realme and riches, bot to revenge the mony schamfull and unworthy offencis done to hir be Romanis; and had na litill indignatioun in hir mind, that the Romanis enragit in so unbridlit lust, that no estait of virginis nor matronis wer left be thame undeflorit: and, forthir, scho schew, how the Goddis, quhilkis ar just punisaris of all wrangis, wer presentlie cumin to beir witnes of the inquiteis done be Romanis; and hes recentlie punist thaim in this last battall with schame and slauchter, becaus thay movit unjust battal aganis fre peple. “Now restis nocht,” said scho, “bot onelie to fecht aganis “thay miserabil cativis, that wer saiffit be thair schamefull flicht “fra this last battal; and thocht Suetonius, thair new capitane, “may exhort thaim to battall, yit he may not restore, sen thay ar “vincust, thair curage and spreit. Will ye considir,” said scho, “your vincust and discomfist adversaris, aganis quhom ye suld now “fecht;—wil ye considir your awin pissance, and the occasioun of “battal;—ye sall think it honorable, othir to be victorius in this



“ battal, or ellis al at anis to de: for nobil men suld cheis erar to .  
 “ de honestly, than schamefully to leif.”

On this othir side, Suetonius ceissit not to exhort his army to battal; for, thocht he had gret confidence in thair manheid, he requirit thaim to regard nocht the vane minassing of barbour pepill, amang quhom wes more noumer of wemen than of men. Thay wer als bot young, febill, and unarmit pepil, but ony cognossance of chevalry; and nicht, thairfore, the more esalie be discomfist, fra thay have provin the manheid and scharp swerdis of Romanis. And thocht his said army wes bot of few noumer, the more glore suld follow, gif thay, with sa few and sufficient pepill, vincust sa huge multitude of barbour ennimes. And, finalie, prayit thaim, to weild thair swerdis and dartis maist ferslie, to the murdir of thair fayis; and to have na sicht to spulyeis, quhil the victory wer cleirly conquest; eftir quhilk, all thingis nicht succeid to thair plesour.

Thir wourdis of the capitaneis movit the armyes to brim and ardent desire of battall. The agit knichtis, be lang experience and use, had na les confidence in thair manheid and virtew, than victory had bene present in thair handis. On the tothir side, the Albanis, confiding in the huge multitude of armit men, be sound of trumpet gaif signe to june. Followit, ane bludy and terrible battall. Bot at last the Albanis wer vincust, chasit, and put to flicht with gret slauchter: and the more slauchter followit, that thair army wes circulit on every side with sic multitude of cartis, that the discomfist pepill had na place to fle. The Romanis slew all the wemen in this battal but ony piete or ransom. This battall wes honest, bot richt unplesand to Romanis; for the maist part of thair army wer tint.

In this battall wes slane, as Tacitus writtis, lxxx. m Albanis. The Murrayis, for the maist part, wer all slane, with thair capitane Rodorik. Quene Voada, that scho suld nocht cum quik in hir ennimes handis, slew hirself. Baith hir dochteris wer tane; and brocht armit, as thay facht, to Suetonius. The eldest of hir dochteris wes maryit apon ane nobill knicht of Romane blude, namit Marius; for he bereft hir virginite afore; and wes maid king of Britonis be auctorite of Cesar. This Marius, eftir his coronatioun, went in Kendale, ane part of Britane liand fornens Annandale and Brigance; and namit that land, eftir his name, West Maria, that is to say,



Westmurland. King Corbreid, brokin with this sorowfull battall, returnit with the residew of his army in Scotland; and gaif to the Murrays, quhilkis eschapit out of this feild, all the landis liand betwix Spay and Innernes; quhilkis landis wer callit, eftir thame, Murray-land. The auld inhabitantis of thir landis, namit Vararis, wer expellit; becaus thay wer ane seditious pepill, and more gevin to civill weris, for dissentioun of thaimself and thair nichtbouris, than ony defence of the realme. The Murrays wer than maryit on Scottis virginis, and grew under ane blude and amite with the Scottis.

Corbreid past the remanent of his dayis but ony weris: for the Romanis wer so irkit with civill battallis, that it wes gret difficulte to hald the south partis of Britane at thair opinioun; and, for that cause, thay persewit not the Scottis nor Pichtis, mony yeris eftir. This nobil prince, brokin with dammage of yeris, deceissit at Donstafage, the xviii yeir of his regne; and wes beryit amang the remanent sepulturis of his progenitouris; in the first yere of the empire of Vespasiane, Emprioure; fra the incarnation, lxxi yeris.

### Chap. Seventh.

*Of sindry nobill Clerkis. How Petir and Paule war martirit. How Dardannus was maid King of Scottis; and slane for his tyranny.*



ONLY nobill Clerkis flurist about this time in Itale; as, Statius, Persius, and Plutercus. And the faith of Christ began to spreid fast in al partis, throw preching of the haly apostolis, Peter and Paule; quhilkis gave thair hale attendans, as gud hirdis, to instruct thair flok in the sicker faith, but ony respect to riches, or feir of thair liffis; quhill, at last, thay wer baith slane in Rome, be the wickit Nero. Peter wes hingit be the feit, in a place of Rome callit Mont Auri; and Paule, hedit be the sword, in ane place of Rome callit Porta Hostiensis.

King Corbreid left behind him thre sonnys, so yong that nane of thaim nicht succedd to the crown. Thair namis wer Corbreid, Tulcane, and Brekus. The first of thaim wes nurist in Britane, with his ant Voadæ, the vailyeant Quene of Britonis, with sic courtlie maneris and havingis, that he wes callit Corbredus Galdus; for yit amang us, al pepill that is componit and honest is callit Galdis. The nobillis, eftir the deith of Corbreid, that the crown nicht remane hail to Galdus at his perfite age, maid Dardannus king: for he wes nepot to King Metellane. This Dardannus wes of sa large stature, that he wes callit the gros king. He wes richt plesand to the nobillis, afore he wes king, and richt tender to King Corbreid, baith in weir and peace. The pepil belevit, that he suld have followit the maneris of otheris wise kingis, his progenitouris; and, becaus he wes ane lusty person, of fair vissage and body, he wes gretumlie luffit amang the pepill. Nochtheles, his mind wes gevin to maist effeminat vices; as apperit in the end of his life. In the beginning of his empire, he usit the counsal of his nobillis, and wes nocht far discordant fra the maneris of ane gud prince: bot, within thre yeris eftir, he left all thingis pertenant to justice, and slaid in every kind of vice; and, be counsall of certane wikkit schrewis, his familiaris, he tuke all officis, concerning publik ministratioun of justice, fra wise and nobil men, and gave thame to vicious rebaldis, that assistit to his insolence and lust; and had all wise and virtews personis in na les hatrent than suspitioun. At last, quhen he had waistit his substance and tresour be assistance of thir unhappy limmaris, quhilkis had na sicht to his honour, bot allanerlie to thair singular advantage; he become sa avaritious, desiring uthir mennis guddis but ony conscience or reason, that he slew, be vane causis, ane nobill man namit Cardorus, quhilk wes Gret Justice to the last king, Corbreid; and had na occasion to sla this innocent man, bot allanerlie becaus he repruvit his vices. Mony otheris, nobillis and innocent men, wer slane be him in that samin maner. Thir doingis maid him odious to his nobillis and commonis. At last, he kest his extreme besines to destroy Galdus, and his two brethir; traisting, becaus the crown pertentit to thaim eftir his deceis, to stabill the same with sicker firmance to him and his airis. And, to the same

effect, he send ane servand, namit Carmonak, quhilk wes corruppit with his money, to slay Galdus, and his two brethir, in the Ile of Man. Carmonak, instruckit in this maner, come in the said Ile; and, finaly, quhen he had socht lang time ane ganand oportunitie to sla Galdus, he was tane, waytand in ane secret place, with drawin swerd, quhare he beleiffit Galdus to cum; and was brocht before the Gret Justice of this Ile, and accusit sa scharplie, that he revelit in quhat sort he was instruckit to sla Galdus and his brethir. Als sone as he had schawin this treasoun he was put to deith.

The nobillis, herand this treasoun, conspirit aganis Dardannus; for thay haittit him, afore, for his inhumane crueltis; and, than, maist of all, seand him gevin to the slauchter of the kingis sonnys. And, first, thay slew al thaim that favourit him. In the mene time rais ane man, of vile and obscure linage, namit Conanus, quhilk was promovit to gret riches and honouris for his assistance to Dardannus; and maid him to gaddir the pepil, in gret nowmer, to support this tyrane aganis the nobillis: bot at last he was tane be thaim, and hingit on ane jebait. Incontinent, thir nobillis come with ane army aganis this odious tyrane, and maid Galdus thair capitane. Dardannus advertist heirow, and seand na refuge, wald have slane himself; bot he was stoppit be his familiaris, in esperance of better fortun. At last, he was brocht afore Galdus, and slane. His heid was efter schorne fra his body, and borne on ane staik throw all the army, to his gret schame; and his body cassin in ane maist vile closet.

This ende maid the odious tyrane Dardannus, the fourt yeir of his regne; in the sext yeir of Vespasiane, Empriour; fra the incarnation, LXXV yeris.

## Chap. Eighth.

*How mony Romane Capitanis, for thair febil administration, war interchangeit in Britane. How Galdus was maid King of Scottis. And how he was discomfist be Petulius.*



THE Romanis, about this time, began to decay in Albion, be negligence of febil capitanis, and dammage of civill weris. For Swetonius, legat of Britane, for his arrogance and cruelte usit on the Britonis, was deponit; and Petranus Turpilianus, as mair merciful capitane, was send in his place. This Turpilianus, at his cuming in Britane, mesit all seditioun and trubill among the Romanis; and randerit all thair provinces to ane new capitane, namit Trebellius Maximus, ane man of slaw curage, havand litill experience of chevalry. This Trebellius, seand gret sedition and trubill apperand to rise, throw lang peace, in his army; he randerit the samin to ane othir capitane, namit Vectius Velanus: quhilkis, on the samin maner, dantit the Britonis mair with amite and kindnes, than ony auctorite: and he was in the time of Galdus, of quhilk sall be oure history nixt following.

Efter the deith of Dardannus, the nobillis set ane counsal, and fand the said Galdus baith richtuous aire to the crown, and ane maist excellent person, dotat with sindry virtewis, and hie prerogativis; and, thairfore, crownit him in the fatall chier of marbill.

Galdus, eftir his coronatioun, maid sacrifice to the Goddis for the felicite fallin to him; sine gaif thankis to his nobillis and remanent pepill, and promittit, to govern his realme be consultatioun of the maist prudent and nobil men thair of: throw quhilk he wan gret favour and luf of his pepil. He wes of young and flurisant age, and nocht unlik to Corbreid, his vailyeant fader. Forthir, he wes of nobill and anciant blude of baith his parentis: his modir wes the King of Pichtis douchter, descending be lang lineage of kingis: quhairthrow, na thing failyeit to him that micht conquies the favour of his pepil. In the beginning of his empire he set him to punis the

wickit consalouris of Dardannus, be quhome the realme wes misgovernit, and brocht to gret truble. Sic thingis done, he past throw sindry boundis of his realme, and maid sic punitioun on trespassouris, that he stabillit his realme in gret tranquillite.

In the mene time come to him the Murrayis, and schew thaim rejosit that Dardannus, the invasour of the common weill, wes destroyit. The cumming of Murrayis was the more acceptabill to the king, that thay brocht sindry oppressouris and thevis to his justice; quhilkis war sone efter punist to the deith. Nocht lang efter, ane counsall was set in Dounstafage, quhare mony nobill actis war revisit for the commoun weil; and the wickit law of Ewin, quhare the wiffis of the commonis was fre to the nobillis, abrogat and annullit. And yit he could nocht purches the remanent cursit lawis of King Ewin to be revocat; for all the young nobillis war repugnant thairto.

Quhill Galdus was gevin to sic besines, come novellis to him, that ane new capitane, namit Petulius Cerealis, was send be Vespasiane, with ane army in Britane, to recover the landis tint afore be negligence of febill capitanis; and purposit to cum haistely in Annandale and Brigance. Galdus richt astonist be thir novellis, howbeit he walde proclame na weiris quhill he war mair surely advertist, send his spyis to explore the counsall of Romanis. Thir spyis returnit with diligence; and schew, how the Romanis war cumming, baith in Mers and Berwik, with mair awfull ordinance than ever was sene afore in Albioun; the bestial drevin away; the cornis and insicht brint; and ane gret nowmer of Pichtis, quhilkis invadit the Romanis in defence of thair awin guddis, slane.

The Scottis, richt affrayit be thir novellis, said, the Britonis war unkind, quhilkis wald not advertis thaim of the cumming of Romanis; considering thay laitly faucht neir to the uter exterminioun of thaimself, for defence onelie of the said Britonis. Nochtheles, Galdus set him to meit the Romanis afore thair cumming in his realme; and assemblit ane strang company, to the nowmer of fifty thousand men. Few Scottis that micht beir armour, war absent that day.

Quhen Galdus was passand forthwart on this maner, apperit sindry uncouth mervellis to his sight. Ane egill flew all day, with gret



laubour, above his army; to na les terrour than admiratioun of his pepill: for it was interprete, that the Scottis suld be distroyit be the egill, quhilk is the ansenye of Romanis. Nochtheles, Galdus requirit thaim to have gud esperance; for he interpret, that the said day suld put the Romanis to gret lauboure. Ane armit knicht was sene fleing in the air; and, quhen he had floin round about all his army, he suddanly evanist out of sicht. The lift apperit dirk, and full of clouddis. Divers fowlis fell out of the air, full of blude, in the place quhare the battallis efter junit. Galdus, nochtwithstanding thir sorowfull and uncouth prodigies appering sa suddanly in the face of his army, allegit, that thay signifyit gret felicite to his pepil; and perswadit thaim to pas forthwart with gud esperance of victory.

In the mene time come novellis, that the Romanis war enterit in Brigance with mair pissance than evir thay come afore in thay boundis, with purpos nocht onely to fecht, bot, be plane conques, to sit downe in thay landis; for thay had sic confidence in thair chevalry and manheid, that na power of erdly creatouris nicht impesche thaim fra thair purpos. Galdus, na thing affrayit thairof, thocht to meit the Romanis with sic hard chevalry as he was lernit be his eldaris; trasting, efter sa mony happy chancis falling to Romanis, that Fortoun, the instabill gidar of mortall creatouris, sall sum time bring the Romanis, be hid waching, to ruine: for the Goddis, oft times, ar sene favorabill to all pepill that justly defendis thaimself fra injure of ennimes. Sum men perswadit the king to invade nocht haistely his ennimes, bot to tary with ane few pepill, and suffer the residew of his folkis to returne hame; to that fine, that the Romanis might be constranit, throw laik of vittallis, outhir to depart out of Brigance, or ellis to be trubillit with hunger, and othir incommoditeis. This counsall was weil apprisit be the nobillis. Yit mony of thaim dred thair vailyeant pepil to defaik curage be lang tary; for the Scottis at thair first assemblance hes maist curage and spreit, and ar brokin with na thing mair than lang tary: and, for thir reasonis, na thing was sa gud as to invaide thair ennimes quhill thair fury indurit.

Galdus and his nobillis following this last opinioun, rasit his army, and brocht the samin, on the thrid day efter, in sicht of Romanis.

The grete multitude, and singulare manheid, of Romanis, sa oft as-sailyeit with frequent victoryis, maid the Scottis sa astonist, that all thair esperance of victory was turnit in maist drery sollicitude. Yit, be hortation of thair prudent capitanis, thay enforst thaimself to new curage; and maid invocatioun to thair Goddis to send thaim victory. Incontinent, baith the armyis junit, with uncredibil fury. The Silurianis,—I mene the men of Carrik, Kyle, and Cuninghame,—in the same battall quhare Galdus was, faucht sa vailyeantly, that the richt wing of Romanis was nere discomfist. Quhen Petulius was advertist thairof, he send ane new legioun of Romanis in thair support. Thus war the Silurianis ouriset. Thair followit yit ane cruell and terribill bargane, with untellabill murdir; for the capitanis faucht in sic ire, that thay pretermittit na thing that micht pertene to forcy campionis. Petulius yit, ithandly went about the Romanis quhare thay faucht, and supportit thaim with new power quhare thay failyeit.

Quhill Petulius was fast vesiand his army on this wise, he beheld Galdus fechtand, with gret manheid and spreit, amid his fois; and incontinent, enkendelit with mighty curage, and desirus to conquessum hie honoure be notabill and souveraine vassalage, he tuke purpos outhir to slay Galdus, or than, magre his pissance, to put him to flicht. Bot than rais ane battall mair vehement than afore; for mony of the maist vailyeant and forcy campionis amang the Scottis, fechtand with perseverand manheid to the deith, war slane in defence of thair prince. Galdus, evill woundit in the face, montit on hors, and departit fra the feild. The residew of Scottis, disparit be fleing of the king, fled heir and thair to thair best refuge. The chais followit be the Romanis in sic ire, that the Scottis war slane in all partis quhare thay war tane. In this battall war slane XII thousand Scottis, and VI thousand Romanis. Galdus, evill woundit on this wise, colleckit the residew of his army, and returnit to ane castell of the Levynok. The Romanis abaid, the remanent of this year, in Epiak; and subdewit all the bundis of Brigance, but ony trubil of battall, to thair empire.

## Chap. Ninth.

*How the nobill Lady Vodicia invadit the Romanis with battall. How scho was finally slane, and hir army discomfist.*



ETULIUS, legate of Britane, richt insolent efter this victory, and desirand na les to eik the empire of Romanis, than to succed in equale gloire to his antecessouris; raisit his campe, to subdew the remanent boundis of Brigance. The Brigandis, be ithand incursionis and licht battallis, refusit, lang time, his weris; for it was defendit, be decreit of Parliament, efter slauchter of sa mony vailyeant Scottis, to feild the Romanis with plane battall, or to jeoperde the realme undir the chance of ane battall.

Quhill the Romanis invadit Brigance in this maner, Vodicia, youngest douchter to Voada, quhilk was deflorit, as we schew, be Romanis, and exilit be wraith of Marius, hir gud-brothir; to revenge the pollution of hir body, and othir intollerabil offensis done to hir modir, Voada; assemblit ane army of Brigandis and Britonis, with the inhabitantis of the Ile of Man; and come with awfull battall on the Romanis, quhen thay belevit na thing les than hir invasion. At the first cumming of this army, was hard ane huge din and noyis, be sound of pepill, ilk ane exhorting othir to battall; and incontinent come sa thik schoure of arrowis and dartis on the Romanis, that the lift micht not be sene above thair heidis. Thus war the Romanis sa astonist, that thay knew not quhat was, in this suddand danger, to be done; for nouthir knew thay quhat ennimes thay war that did thaim so awfully assailye, nor yit had thay sufficient manheid to fecht aganis sa gret multitude of uncouth and strange pepill, cummand on thaim untimuslie within the nicht.

Quhil the Romanis war in this affray, thair ennimes ruschit on ilk side, with sic hardiment and curage, that thay brak the trinschis of Romanis; and enterit perforce apon thair tentis, quhare the maist vailyeant and forcy campionis amang the Romanis war slane. Thus

had the Romanis bene uterly distroyit, and the Brigandis perpetually deliverit of servitude be Vodicia, war nocht, Petulius come the mair haistely to thair support. For Petulius met this extreme dangeir sa prudently, that he, with birnand flammis of pik, roset, and brintstane, quhilkis he had preparit aganis sic occurring jeoperdis, withstude his fayis, quhare gretest noyis was herd; and dang thaim, be force of rage and flambis, fra his tentis. Bot Vodicia sa craftely exhortit hir army aganis Petulius, that scho oft times renewit battall. Than was the bergane sa cruell, that al the nicht following was nocht sufficient to schaw the ende of thair laubouris. At the spring of the day, Vodicia was discomfist, and hir cumpany put to flicht. Petulius, efter this victory, dredand sum hid dangere occurring, inhibit his folkis to follow ony forthir on the chace.

Vodicia, provoket ilk day with mair injuris, past to Epiak, and brint the said town, with mony agit knichtis and wageouris of Romanis; to that fine, scho nicht revenge the injuris on the Romane garnisoun, quhilk scho nicht nocht revenge on Petulius. Petulius, to punis thir offencis, send ane legioun of Romanis, and put Vodicia and hir army to flicht. Nochtheles, scho was finaly tane; and accusit, quhy scho durst pretend sic thingis above the spreit of women. Scho answerit, scho was thair ennime, and wald have slane hir ennime; and laikit na gud will, howbeit hir power failyeit: and had na thing in mair hatrent than prosperite of Romanis, for the gret cruelteis done be thaim to hir and hir freindis. The Romanis, but more tary, slew hir.

In the mene time, Petulius was advertist, that the Ile of Wicht and Kent-schire was rebellit, and Marius chasit. Apperit thus, plane rebelloun of Britonis, les than the trubill war the mair hais-telie dantit. Thir novellis movit Petulius to returne in Britane; quhare he, with small deficulte, dantit the Britonis. The Romanis, that abaid in Brigance behind Petulius, war gevin mair to keip the landis afore conquest, than to persew the pepill with new conquests. And, in the yeir following, Petulius deceissit.



## Chap. Tenth.

*How Julius Frontinus was maid Capitane of Britane. Of his message to Pichtis; and of thair answer. And how the said Julius invadit the Scottis with gret injuris.*



**E**FTER the deith of Petulius, ane vailyeant knicht, namit Julius Frontinus, was send in Albion with two legionis, and was plesandly ressavit be Marius. Julius, efter his cumming in Britane, went throw all the Romane provincis, and persuadit the Britonis, be mony reasonis, to persevere at the opinion of Romanis.

Als sone as he had pecifyit thaim of al trubill, he began to be desirus of fame and glore, as his antecessouris war afore; and tuke purpois to subdew the last Ilis of Albion to Romane empire: howbeit, thay war oft afore assailieit, bot nevir vincust: and, to bring his purpos to effect, he left Marius behind him in Kent, to hald the Britonis under Romane lawis; sine came in Brigance with ane gret army. Yit, in his passage, he did na injure nor trubill to the Pichtis; for he belevit thaim, fra the Scottis war vincust, sone ourthrawin. Be cumming of Julius in this maner, was na litill effray amang the Scottis; for that name was of gret renown and estimatioun amang the Scottis. This Julius, at his cuming in Brigance, vesyit the munitionis quhare the Romane sodjouris lay, and exhortit thaim to perseveir in gud curage; for, be thair manheid and virtew, it micht happin, the haille Ile of Albion to cum undir the empire of Romanis.

Sic thingis done, he send letteris to the Pichtis, desiring that thay and Romanis nicht increse togidder undir ane freinschip and amite; and sumtimes remembrit thaim, of the misery and trubill falling to thaim be the weris led afore aganis the Romanis: and to have na company with Scottis, for he was commandit be the Empriour, outhir to destroy thaim al uterly, or ellis to thirll thaim to perpetuall servi-



tude. The Pichtis had thair desiris in gret suspitioun; and answerit, Thay had gret admiration, be quhat motive the Romanis nicht have ony just occasioun of battall aganis the Scottis: or quhat suld move thaim, nocht content of the empire of the warld, to seik the last Ilis of the occiane sees, and to reif fra the Albianis thair native liberte; les than thay, be insaciabill avarice, war set to reif fre realmes but ony reason; havand na feir, nor dredoure of the Goddis, to be punist for thair insufferabill inquiteis. And, for thir causis, thay wald cum in battal aganis the Romanis, with al thair power, in support of thair confiderat freindis, for defence of thair realme and liberte; for the same was nocht only proffitabill for thair commoun weil, bot thay war als bound thairto, be sic contract that nicht na wayis be dissolvit.

Julius, in contemptioun of this answer, was the mair fers and pererant aganis the Scottis; and come in Kyle, Carrik, and Cuninghame, quhais pepill war mair strang than ony pepill that faucht afore aganis the Romanis. Galdus, astunist be this new ordinance of Romanis; nochtwithstanding his hevy woundis gottin in this last battall, gaderit his folkis out of all boundis undir his dominioun, to defend his realme. Than followit continewall scarmussing with licht hors, but ony greit slauchter; for Galdus, be noy of his woundis, set him erar to irk the Romanis be lang tary, than to invaide thaim be battall. Followit, be thir incursionis, mony sindry chancis of fortun. Sumtime, the Romanis vincust; sumtime, victorius: quhill, at last, the Scottis, be frequent slauchter of thair vailyeant capitanis, war attenuat, and brokin; and Galdus, be noy of the woundis gottin in this last battall, was sa wery, that he nicht nocht do the office of ane forcy campion, bot was brocht on an hors-litter to Argyle.

Within few dayis efter, the Romanis come in Carrik, Kyle, and Cuninghame, and slew 111 thousand Scottis; and, the remanent, vincust and chasit. And, efter this victory, the Romanis returnit to thair tentis.

## Chap. Eleventh.

*How Julius Agricola was send in Britane. Of his frequent Victoryis maid on Scottis and Pichtis ; and how he subdewit sindry of thair Landis to Romane Empire.*



IN the nixt winter, Julius Frontinus fell in gret infirmite, be immoderat flux of catter, generit of wak humouris ; becaus the air was nubilus and donk, throw continual schouris of rane and sleit, proceeding be the hicht of montanis, and gret multitude of fludis and lochis aboundin in this regioun. This infirmite inressit ilk day more, be uncouth and intemperat cauld ; and micht be curit be na ingine, nor art of medicine. Domiciane, Empriour, advertist of his vehement dolour, causit him to returne in Italy, to recovir his heil be new air and fude ; and send Julius Agricola, ane of the maist vailyeant capitanis that come afore his dayis in Britane, to succeid in his place.

The same time, the men of Annandale slew ane gret nowmer of Romanis on the bordouris of Brigance ; and, throw the samin victory, persuadit the Pichtis and Brigandis, with the Silurianis, to rebell aganis the Romanis. Agricola, advertist of thir attemptatis, rasis his army, and come in Pentland, with mair diligence than ony man presumit ; and, efter that he had tane and garnist all the strenthis of thair cuntre with his wageouris, he come to Camelon. Caranach, King of Pichtis, advertist of his cuming, gaif him battall ; nochtheles, he was finaly discomfist, with all his army. Efter this discomfitoure, Caranach fled to Fiffe ; quhilk is ane plenteous regioun, liand betwix two firthis, Tay and Forth, full of woddis, lesuris, and valis, to the gret proffet baith of corne and bestial. In it ar mony louchis, full of sindry fische. This regioun is now bair of woddis ; for the thevis war sumtime sa frequent in the samin, that thay micht na way be dantit, quhill the woddis war bet down. Agricola, efter this, past with his victorius army in Annandale. The inhabitantis thair of, knawing his cuming, met him in thair

scharpest maner; nochtheles, thay war finaly chasit, and slane. The remanent of thaim, that eschapit, war all slane be thair wiffis, the first nicht thay come hame. Agricola, proude of this victory, past to the Ile of Man, quhilk rebellit, mony yeris afore, aganis Romanis; and tuke it with litill laubour. Quhen he had stuffit the munitionis thairof with Roman sodjouris, he returnit in Brigance, levand his army in the winter schelis. The nixt simer, he come throw Brigance, Carrik, Kyle, and Cuningham; quhais passage maid the pepill sa astonist, that thay left thair townis desert, and fled to the montanis.

In the simer followinge, he brocht sindry nobill men of Albioun afore him, and exhortit thaim to polecy and civill maneris; that thay nicht have templis and biggingis on the Romane fassion; and to put thair sonnis to wise preceptouris, that, efter the end of Romane weris, thay nicht rise in virtew, eloquence, and gud havingis. Thus past Agricola the winter seasoun, instruckand the princes of Albion with sic thingis as apperit for thair commoun weill.

The thrid yeir efter, he come to Striveling; quhilk was callit, in thay dayis, the Dolorus Montane: for the inhabitantis thairof hard, sindry times, ane dolorus and lamentabil crying, quhilk come be ilusioun of wickit spreitis, dessaving the pepill with vane superstition. Quhen Agricola saw the castell of Striveling set on sa strang place, he reparit and biggit it with sa crafty and sumptuus lauboure, that it apperit unwinnabill: and, nocht lang efter, he biggit ane brig ouir Forth, and transportit all his army be the same. On the morrow, he laid a sege to the castell of Montbennart, traisting to have found the King of Pichtis in it: bot the Pichtis war so astonist be the cuming of the Romanis, that thay left the castell, and come with gret diligence, under nicht, to cast down the brig of Striveling, laity biggit be Romanis; that the said Romanis nicht be inclusit betwix Tay and Forth, but ony refuge. Agricola, weill advertist thairof, returnit fra the sege of Montbennart; and followit with sic diligence on the Pichtis, that thay war constrainit to geif battall. Nochtheles, thay war finaly vincust; and thair king, Caranach, chasit to the watter of Tay, quhare he gat ane bait, and eschapit. The remanent Pichtis, for feir of this victory, war randerit, with all thair munitionis and strenthis. Than Agricola past throw

all boundis of Fiffe, Fothrik, and Erne; sumtimes biggand, and sumtimes castand down, the strenthis of the cuntre, quhare he plesit.

### Chap. Twelfth.

*How the King of Pichtis send his Ambassatouris to Scottis, desiring support aganis the Romanis. How Agricola invadit the Scottis, baith be see and land. How the King of Pichtis was slane, be sedition of his Army.*



ARANACH, King of Pichtis, brokin be this last discomfiture, fled to Dundee: quhare sumtime was ane strang castell; bot it wes cassin down in the time of King Robert Brus, becaus it micht not be keipit fra Inglismen, as we sal efter schaw. The Pichtis convenit to the said castell, and exhortit Caranach, thair king, to have na disperation, howbeit his pepill war brocht to gret afflictioun and trubill; for gret nowmer of thaim was yit on live, baith unbrokin with weris, and sufficient, gif the Goddis war propiciant, to ding the Romanis out of Albion. For it micht happin, that the Romanis, prowde and insolent efter sa mony hie victoryis, may fal, quhen thay beleif leist, in sic invy to Fortoun, to be vincust be the pepil quhom thay held of vilest reputatioun: for this instabill Goddes turnis, with suddand quhirle, the governance of mortall creaturis. Scho hes rasis mony othir realmes with gret felicitie, afore the Romanis had dominioun; and brocht thaim, quhen thay war in thair hie and soverane honouris, to finall rewine. It is nocht, thairfore, to be supponit, that the empire of Romanis, sen it began with mortal pissance, sall perpetually indure; bot necessar sum time to have rewine. Thocht thir and sic persuasionis of Pichtis war apprisit be thair king, yit nane of thaim micht rais his spreit and curage to ony gude esperance aganis Romanis; bot traisting thair majeste and pissance sa montit above the hicht of naturale chance, that na pepill may resist thairto.



Eftir lang consultatioun, it wes concludit, to send ambassatouris to Galdus, to have support aganis the extreme dangeir apperand to baith thair realmes, according to the band sa mony yeris continewit betwix Scottis and Pichtis. Galdus glaidlie condescendit to thair petitionis: for he had na les indignatioun aganis the Romanis, for thair wrangus conques maid be thaim on the Pichtis, than on Scottis; and thairfore determit, erar to haisart his realme to extreme jeoperde of armis, than to leif ilk day in ithand displesour, and, finallie, be subdewit to servitude.

Quhil the confiderat kingis wer gevin in this sort to resist thair ennimes, the Silurianis, be plane rebelloun, slew all Romanis, quhare thay micht be apprehendit: and not onlie recoverit thair munitionis, bot brint all thair cornis and vittallis, except sa mekill as micht be caryit with thaim; to that fine, that na thing thairof suld remane to the proffet of thair ennimes.

Agricola, weil advertist of thir motionis, come so haistellie on the Silurianis, that he dantit and punist thame in maist rigorus wise. Nocht lang eftir, he wes advertist, that his ennimes wer gaderit in gret buschementis, uncertane to quhat effect, aganis the Romanis. Incontinent, he followit thaim with gret violence, and chasit thaim ouir Clyde. This riveir is dividit, ane litill space, fra the riveir of Levin, quhair thay fal baith, nocht far fra othir, in the Ireland seis. And, nocht far fra the said riveir of Levin, is ane castell, more strang be strenth of ane crag than ony artificiall laubour, namit, be the pepil, Auld Cleuch; bot now callit Dunbriton, that is to say, the Castel of Britonis. Alwayes, it wes so stuffet with men and vittallis, that it micht na waye be tane.

Agricola, occupyit with thir and siclik besines, ouir-past the fourt winter: and, in the spring of the nixt yeir, he causit the Romane navy, quhilk abaid, with his ordinance, in the Ile of Wicht, to cum to Lochfine, beside Argyle; that his ennimes micht understand, na landis nor seis fre fra Romane dominioun. And, quhen he had brocht his army ouir Clyde, he fand thair the men of Lenax, ane pepill unknawin afore to Romanis; and tuke purpos to subdew thaim to Romane empire. In the mene time, he gat writingis, that the Pichtis wer rebellit; and, becaus he dred gret truble to rise, bot gif



the samin wer the more haistelie dantit, he left his first purpos, and come in Pentland with ane legion of Romanis, and dantit the Pichtis. The nixt simer, he began to serche all the havinis and portis of Argyle and othir Ilis thairabout, with his schippis; and come landgait ouir the riveir of Levin, to tak the munitionis and strenthis of the cuntre. The Romanis wer first irkit with scharpe and difficill passage, full of breris and thornis, to thair gret impediment; bot, quhen thay considerit the virtew and manheid of thair anciant faderis, na thing apperit difficill to thaim: and sa, with curage ay more inccessing, thay dantit na les the difficill passage of the cuntre, than the pepill thairof; and, finalie, returnit, with huge pray of men and guddis, to thair tentis.

Sic thingis done, Galdus maid ane conventioun, in Athole, of all pepil under his empire: abiding the cumming of the King of Pichtis; to that fine, that baith thair armyis beand junit togidder, thay nicht the more esalie resist the Romanis. Now war the Pichtis cumand ouir the montanis of Granyebane, quhilkis rinnis fra the fut of De to the castell of Dunbritone, and wer nocht five milis fra the army of Scottis, quhen thay, be unhappy chance, wer devidit in two factionis, and faucht amang thaimself, to the gret murdir of baith the partis, for ane vane cause. The King of Pichtis, seing this lamentabil cais, ran feirslic, but his coit armour, amang the preis, quhair thay wer maist keinely fechtand, to have put thaim sindry; and wes slane thair, unknowing quhat he wes. The residew of Pichtis, quhilkis war left on live fra this unhappy bargane, knowing the slauchter of thair king, skalit, and returnit hame.

### Chap. Thirteenth.

*How Galdus pecifyit all seditioun among the Pichtis. And how he faucht aganis the Romanis, and was discomfist.*



ALDUS heirand the deith of his tender freind, the King of Pichtis, become richt sorowfull; for it constrainit him to superseid his army aganis the Romanis. Nochtheles, he callit his nobillis to ane counseal: quhare he schortlie, detestand the inoportune seditioun rising among the Pichtis, prayit thaim to ripely avise, how his realme might be defendit in sa hie dangeir thairto approching. Eftir divers opinionis, it wes decretit to resist the Romanis, erar be frequent incursionis than set battall, fra ony forthir conques. Attour, prudent men sal pas to the Pichtis, to peacifie thaim of al seditiounis; and ambassatouris sall pas in Ireland, Norway, and Denmark, to seik support aganis the Romanis.

Be this counsall, ambassatoris wer send to the Pichtis; and schew, that sic dammage and cruelteis procedis of civil weris, that na realmes may stand in sicker firmance quhare the same induris. Finalie, the Pichtis wer aggreit among thameself of al debatis; and Garnardus maid king in place of Caranach afore deceissit. The Pichtis, as wes devisit, send thair ambassatouris in Norway and Denmark, to the effect aforesaid.

Quhil sic thingis wer done be Pichtis, Galdus assemblit ane army fra all boundis of his realme, and dividit the same in divers buschementis; be quhais wisdom and ithand jeoperdis, the Romanis wer stoppit, all the simer following, fra ony forthir conques on the Scottis. The winter following wes sa tempestuous, that na weris might be sustenit. And, in the nixt simmer, quhilk wes the vii yere of the weris maid be Agricola, come ane gret cumpany of Ireland men to Galdus and Garnardus, at Athole, quhair thay wer present for the time, with al the nobillis of baith thair realmes. On the tothir side, Agricola, knowing weill the ordinance of Scottis and Pichtis, dividit his army in thre battallis, abiding thair cumming.

Galdus, weill advertist in quhat sort Agricola purposit to invade him, changit haistely his purpos; and come, within the nicht, on ane strang legion of Romanis, quhilkis wes not far fra his army. Now had the Scottis slane the wache of this legioun, and fechtand ferslie within thair tentis, quhen suddanlie Agricola, weill convoyit be his exploratouris, come with strang buschementis, baith of futmen and horsmen on thair bakkis. Nochtheles, the battal wes fochtin with gret crueltie and slauchter on all sidis; quhill the Romane baneris, schining in the cleir morrow, schew Agricola, with al his army, arrayit fornens thaim in battall. Incontinent, the confiderat pepill gaif bakkis; and fled, throw desertis and mossis, to thair best refuge.

### Chap. Fourteenth.

*How sindry Almanis and Danis come in support of Scottis and Pichtis. How the Romane Navy perist in Pentland Firth.*



BE this unhappy battall, the confiderat kingis wer so brokin, that thay defendit thaimself, thair bestiall, and guddis, al the simer following, mair be frequent incursions, than ony set battall; abiding the cuming of Danis and Norowanis to thair support. Bot the Romanis, ilk day more feirs and insolent, be frequent victoryis, and traisting na thing possibill to resist thair soverane virtew; come throw the wod of Calidon, with purpos to serche all the last boundis of Albioun: and becaus thay wer stoppit be strait ground thairof, thay come ouir the watter of Awmond, and set down thair tentis nocht far fra Dunkeld, quhair Tay rinnis deip, with few furdis, in the Almane seis. This reveir, beside Dundee, is two milis braid, deviding Fiffe fra Angus. The Pichtis, effrayit be cumming of Romanis sa far within thair landis, brint ane riche town, namit Inchecuthill, quilk stude upon the riveir of Tay, that the samin suld be na refuge to thair ennimes; and fled with thair wiffis, children, and guddis, to the

montanis of Grandyeben. The samin time, arrivit in Forth, ane cumpany of Almanis, namit Usipianis, banist out of thair native landis, for slauchter of ane Romane capitane and othir pepill undir his band ; and becaus thay bure extreme hatrent aganis Romanis, thay wer plesandlie ressavit, and ordanit to have certan landis to thair habitatioun, beside the Murrayis, for thay wer baith of a blude. And nocht lang eftir, arrivit in the firth of Tay, ane vailyeant capitane, namit Gildo, with x.m Danis, to support the Scottis and Pichtis. Thir Danis wer the more plesandlie ressavit be Garnardus, King of Pichtis, that his common weil wes approcheand to hie dangeir. Galdus, richt glaid, and rejosing of the cumming of Gildo, come to Dundee, to gif thankis to him and the remanent folkis that come to support thair freindis ; and eftir maist hertlie embracing, Galdus said in this wise : “ I have na litil caus of joy, maist  
 “ vailyeant Gildo, seing the, with sa mony fair and lusty personis,  
 “ cumin but truble in Albioun, for defence of Pichtis, thy anciant  
 “ lineage, and us, thair confiderat brethir, standing now in sic  
 “ treme dangeir and perell. We abaid mony dayis your cuming ; and  
 “ now we ar mair rejosit thair of than may be schawin at this time,  
 “ and randeris to the and thy pepil infinite thankis thairfore ; for,  
 “ be thy cuming, sic esperance is rasit in our curage, that we beleif,  
 “ be your support, to vincus our ennimes, and banis thame furth  
 “ of our rowmes. For quhen I behald the and thir thy vailyeant  
 “ pepil, apperis sikker victory present in my handis.” To this answerit Gildo, he was cumin to fecht for defence of his tender freindis, aganis the Romanis, and perseveir in thair opinioun to his end ; of quhilk thay suld have sone experience.

Within ane schort time efter, the confederate kingis, with Capitane Gildo, went to Forfar ; in quhilk sumtime was ane strang castel, within ane loch, quhare sindry kingis of Scottis maid residence, efter the prescription of the Pichtis, thoct it is now bot ane popil town. Efter thair cuming to Forfar, thay tuk lang consultation, be quhat ingine the Romanis micht be resistit. At last it was concludit to ceis quhil the winter season ouripast, to eschew the vehement stormes quhilkis haboundis in this region ; and to maik thair ordinance aganis the nixt simer : als ordanit ane band of chosin men to be vigilant in sindry partis, to stop vittallis cuming to Romanis,



and that none of thame sal ische to invade the cuntre ; and to stop that na brig war maid our Tay, that the Romanis cum not, be the samin, within thair landis.

In the simer following, Agricola returnit to his navy, lyand that time on the Ireland sees, and commandit thame to pas about all the boundis of Albion, to that fine, that na part thairof suld be unknowin to Romanis in his time. The marinaris, as he commandit, pullit up salis, and brocht the Romane navy about the outmaist boundis of Albion ; be quhilk viage thay saw al the Ilis thairof, with Orknay, Sky, and Lewis. Bot quhen thay war cuming nere Pentland Firth, quhilk devidis Caithanes fra Orknay, thay war advertist of the dangerus flude rinnand, thair, with sa quhirlland and contrarius tide, that na schippis may pas the samin but extreme dangeir ; nochtheles, thay conducit certane fischaris, quhilkis had perfite cognoscence of the said parellis, and promittit large proffet, to gide thame throw the said dangeir. The fischaris and othir landwart pepil quhom thay conducit to the effect aforesaid, traisting na way to revenge thair deith bettir than to caus sa mony vailyeant weirmen and crafty marinaris de with thaim at anis, led the Romanis quhare maist dangeir occurrit. Thus wes ane pert of the Romane navy drevin, be violent streme, on craggis, and brokin : and otheris kest thair ankeris, to eschew the craggis ; nochtheles, be stormy wallis, thay frit thair takillis, and sank down in the middis of the see. Ane certane of thame come to land on burdis and tabillis ; nochtheles, thay war all tane, or ellis slane be the inhabitantis of the cuntre. The remanent navy of Romanis seing this calamite fall to thair fallowis, abaid abak ; and returnit, but ony perell, the same way thay come.



## Chap. Fifteenth.

*How Agricola brocht his Army ouir Tay. How Galdus come in defence of the Pichtis with XL.M Scottis; and of his Orison maid to exhort his Army to Battal.*



GRICOLA, na thing knowing the calamite falling to his navy, beildit anc brig of tre ouir Tay, and transportit his army be the samin, nocht far fra the fute of Granyeben; sine left behind him mony gret buschemenis of weirmen, to keip the said brig unbet down be gile or violence of enimmes. The Pichtis, richt affrayit of his cuming, send thair ambassaturis to Galdus, to schaw him the dangeir appering to baith thair realmis, and desirit him to cum with al his power.

Galdus gaderit, afore thair cuming, XL.M chosin men, out of all boundis within his realme, al of anc mind to de at anis, or ellis to recovir thair liberte be extreme jeoperde of armis; and, finaly, he brocht the said army, with na litil labour, ouir the montanis of Granyeben, quhare he met the remanent army of Pichtis and Danis abiding his cuming. Efter lang consultationis, Galdus, becaus the charge of battal was gevin to him, said in this maner: “ Als oft as I  
 “ behald the caus of battal, and our necessite, vailyeant campionis,  
 “ my spreit risis; traisting this day, be your consentis, sal be the  
 “ beginning of liberte to al Britane. We ar yit fre of servitude;  
 “ and thair is na land nor see beyond us sickir in timis cuming, for  
 “ feir and minassing of Romane navy. The preis of armis and che-  
 “ valry ar na les refuge to febill creaturis, than honour to vailyeant  
 “ campionis. The battallis afore past, quhare sindry chancis of  
 “ fortoun hes occurrit, war ay led be our manheid and prudence;  
 “ and we, as maist vailyeant pepil of Albion, dwelling within the  
 “ bosum thairof, hes kepit us evir unthirllit to Romane dominion,  
 “ be strait ground, and remote situation of us in the outmaist partis  
 “ of the world. Now ar the Romanis cumin to the last boundis of  
 “ Albion, traisting to schaw thair magnificence in na thing mair than

“ in subdewing of unknowin and outmaist regionis to thair empire.  
 “ Beyond us ar na pepil nor refuge, bot only desert roukis, and  
 “ streme of sees; and within us ar our ennimes, garnist in our mu-  
 “ nitionis, quhais proud tyrannyis can not be eschewit be meiknes  
 “ or service. The Romanis, revaris of the warld, now quhen na  
 “ thing restis unspulyeit be thame, serchis baith erd and sees. Gif  
 “ the ennime of Romanis be riche, thay ar avaricius; gif thair en-  
 “ nime be pure, yeit thay ar ambitius, and desiris glore in thair sub-  
 “ dewing. Nothir may the est nor the west pertis of the warld sa-  
 “ ciat thame. Thay ar the only pepil of the warld that regardis po-  
 “ verte and riches be equal affection. Thay stele, thay sla, and  
 “ reiffis kingdomis be injust conques; thay ar nevir in peas, bot  
 “ quhen thay ar solitar. The children, quhilkis nature hes ordanit  
 “ maist deir to thair parentis, ar drawin be Romane army to servi-  
 “ tude: our wiffis, virginis, and matronis, quhilkis detestit thair un-  
 “ bridillit lust, ar deflorit, outhir be feneyit amite or feid. The frutis,  
 “ quhilkis nature hes productit of our ground, ar expendit be thaim  
 “ in maner of tribute. Our handis worne with thair surfet laubour.  
 “ We ar injurit nocht onely with unplesand wordis, bot maist vio-  
 “ lently strikin in our bodyis. Quhairthrow we ar mair thirllit than  
 “ ony brutall beistis to lauboure: for sic beistis quhilkis bene borne  
 “ to servitude, ar coft and nurist be the biar; bot we ilk day byis  
 “ and fedis our awin servitude: and, as new servandis ar in deri-  
 “ sioun amang the quent servitouris, sa we, as vile and last pepill of  
 “ the warld in thair sicht, ar daily invadit to the deith. Now restis  
 “ na kind of lauboure, service, nor punishment, to saif us fra thair ty-  
 “ ranny; for all pepil ar the mair suspect to Romanis, the mair fe-  
 “ rocite and manheid be knawin with thame. Thairfore, maist vail-  
 “ yeant campionis, sen hope is nane to have the Romane benivolence,  
 “ spreit yow with curage, and have mair respecte to your eternal  
 “ glore, than to youre fragill livis: for gif Voditia, the vailyeant  
 “ lady, nicht birn ane towne, quhen it was strangest with Romane  
 “ sodjouris, and deliver the Brigandis perpetually of servitude, gif  
 “ fortoun had bene propiciant; it is nocht to be traistit bot we,  
 “ quhilkis ar mair vailyeant, sal recover our liberte at our first  
 “ meting. And traist nocht bot Romanis may be vincust. Quhat  
 “ nowmer of thame bene laitly slane in the wod of Calidon! Be-

“leve ye, that the virtew of Romanis be als gret in time of battal  
 “as thair lust is in time of peace. Thay conques honour be our  
 “civil weiris and dissension: thay turne the vices of thair ennimes  
 “to the glore of thair army; quhilkis is gaderit of divers pepill un-  
 “der divers mindis, and sall, thairfore, skaill als fast sindry, quhen  
 “adversite occurris, as thay assemblit togidder now in thair maist  
 “prosperite. Traist ye, that Franchemen, Almanis, and Britonis,  
 “quhilkis ar ane gret part of thair army, sal have ony othir affec-  
 “tion or faith to thair ennimes, bot invade thaim quhen thay se oc-  
 “casioun. Traist na thing other, bot dreid and terroure ar sa un-  
 “sicker bandis of luf, that quhen the same ar removit and put  
 “aside, extreme hatrent sproutis in thair place. Mony persuasounis  
 “apperis in us, to have victory: for the Romanis hes nocht thair  
 “wiffis present, to exhort thaim to curage; nor yit thair agit faderis,  
 “to reproche thame of fleing. Few of thame hes ony certane cuntre  
 “or habitation, les than it be reft; thairfore, the Goddes, in puni-  
 “tioun of thair inquiteis, hes laitly randerit ane certane of thame  
 “vagabound and vincust in oure handis. Be not astonist, I pray  
 “yow, for this vane visage and schining of gold and silver; quhilk  
 “may nocht defend nor wound yow. Lat us find our handis in the  
 “bront of ennimes. The Britonis sal know thair caus of battall;  
 “the Gallis sall remember thair anciant liberte; al pepil of uncouth  
 “nation sal leif thame at thair first juning. Na occasioun remanis  
 “of dredour. Our castellis ar left be thaim wast; the townis quhare  
 “thair agit capitanis dwelt, betwix evill obeisance and unjust em-  
 “pire, ar brocht to servitud. Heir ar your capitane and army, to  
 “win glore and riches: yondir ar your ennimes, to put yow to sur-  
 “fet tribute, or ellis to condampne yow to winning of mettellis, or  
 “sum othir kind of punishment; the quhilkis sal be perpetuall to yow  
 “and your posterite, les than the samin be recoverit in this battal.  
 “Quhen ye, thairfore, ar to pas fortwart, remember baith your el-  
 “daris past afore, and your posterite and successouris to cum.”

## Chap. Sixteenth.

*Of the Orison maid be Agricola to his Army; and of the huge victory falling to Romanis be discomfitour of Scottis.*



FTER this orison of Galdus, followit, in the army, gret noyis and clamoure, be desire of battal. On the tothir side, thocht Agricola beheld his army richt impatient of lang tary, yit he said to thame as followis: “ Now is  
 “ the VIII yeir, gud companyeonis, sen ye, be felicite of Romane  
 “ majeste, with trew and faithfull laubouris, hes conquest Annan-  
 “ dale, the Ile of Man, Carrik, Kyle, and Cuninghame, with mony  
 “ othir regionis, quhilkis was nevir subdewit nor knawin afore to  
 “ Romane empire. Ye have sustenit na les fortitude aganis your  
 “ fais, than pacience and laubour almaist aganis nature. Ye have  
 “ na caus to be penitent of me your capitane, nor I to be penitent  
 “ of yow, my gud men of armis. Ye have subdewit may boundis  
 “ of Albion than ony armyis did afore; and I have won mair ho-  
 “ nour than ony othir capitane did afore me. We have not socht  
 “ the last boundis of Albion be rehers and fame of otheris, bot per-  
 “ sit the samin be strang army and camp. Quhen ye, my gud com-  
 “ panyeonis, war oftimes wery, ourpassing the difficill montanis,  
 “ mosis, and fluddis of this regioun, I had gret compassion, and  
 “ knew every ane of you be your voce, criand, ‘ Quhen sal our en-  
 “ nimes haif curage? quhen sall thay meit us?’ Now thay ar cum-  
 “ and furth of thair dennis, quhare thay war hid. Now may your  
 “ manheid and virtew be sene. Every thing sal be plesand to thaim  
 “ that ar victorius, and unplesand to thaim that ar vincust. And,  
 “ as na litil honour apperis to us quhilkis hes ouriset sa mony strait  
 “ montanis, woddis, fludis, and dangerus firthis of this region; sa  
 “ sall it be ane vassalage of souveraine honour, howbeit it be dange-  
 “ rus, to withstand ferslyoure ennimes, and put thaim to flicht.  
 “ And, thocht mony placis of this cuntre be unknawin to us, and  
 “ hes na gret plenty of vittallis, yit we laik na manheid nor curage,



“ in quhilk lvis the baill frute and glore of armes. Forthir, sa far  
 “ as pertenis to me, I think, nothir is the capitane nor the army  
 “ siker that gevis thair backis to ennimes; thairfore, honest deith  
 “ is better than schamefull lif; and hele and honour ar situat baith  
 “ in ane place. Forthir, it war na gret schame to our honoure, how-  
 “ beit we war defeat heir in the last and outmaist partis of the world.  
 “ Gif ye war now to be assailyet be uncouth and strange ennimes,  
 “ I suld exhort yow to fecht, be vassalage of othir vailyeant pepill.  
 “ Now have e to your honoure, and know, that thir pepil that  
 “ standis with face arrayit aganis yow, ar nocht bot the refuse of  
 “ thay febil cativis quhilkis war discomfist laithly within the nicht  
 “ be your onely noyis and clamoure. Thay ar the maist febill bo-  
 “ dyis amang all the Britonis; and remanis, for that caus, sa lang  
 “ on lif. And as maist forsy and strang bestis, be thair awin jeo-  
 “ perdyis, ar oft slane; and as maist cowart and febill bestis saiffis  
 “ thaimself for dangeir, and fleis quhen thay heir the sound of ony  
 “ cumpanies: sa, all the vailyeant Britonis ar slane, and nane of thaim  
 “ ar now on lif, saif thay onely that be cowart flicht hes debaitit  
 “ thair miserabil livis, and wald pretend na resistance, war not  
 “ thay ar now tane but refuge: quharthrow ye may haif honest  
 “ victory. Pas, gud companyeonis, throw your ennimes, and finis  
 “ the LI yeris weir with this solempne day; that it may be put in  
 “ kalender, as end of all your weris. Do sa, that nothir your lang  
 “ tary, nor rebelloun of ennimes, may be impute to youre negli-  
 “ gence.”

Skarsly was this orison endit, quhen baith the armyis, be birnand  
 desire of battall, junit. Agricola arrayit his folkis in sic crafty or-  
 dour, howbeit thay wer of les nowmer than thair ennimes, that thay  
 sall nocht be assailyet nothir on ane side nor othir. Galdus, with  
 na les providence, arrayit the formest part of his army on ane hie  
 mote, to discomfis the wingis of the Romane army; and exhortit  
 thaim, with schill voce, to perseveir in ithand bergane, and outhir  
 to conques immortal glore, or perpetual servitude; for that was thair  
 last day, in quhilk thay nicht win outhir honour or schame. The  
 first battall was fochtin on dreich: for the Albanis, Danis, and No-  
 rowanis, schot ane huge nowmer of arrowis and ganyeis at thair first  
 contering; nochtheles, the Romanis eschewit the samin with thair



targis. The bowmen, efter flicht of arrowis, faucht with swerdis and litil buklaris, as we do yit in our days, mair semand for nicht-boure weir, than ony defence of realmis; throw quhilk oure pepill hes gret dammage, quhen thay meit with ennimes of uncouth realmes. The battal of speris, quhilkis stude nixt the bowmen, in the brount with Galdus, ruschit furthwart at anis, and bure mony of thair ennimes, with mony bludy woundis, on thair backis. Followit the billis, axis, lang swerdis, and ledin mellis, with sic slauchter, that the Romanis had bene all utterly discomfist, wer nocht ane band of Almanis, quhilkis war send laitly in Britane, come the more haistely to thair support. Attour, this Agricola was sa circumspect, that he stuffit his army with thir Almanis in al partis quhare he saw ony danger occurring. The Albianis seing thaimself, heir and thair, sa cruelly ouriset, war astonist; nochtheles, seing na refuge bot in thair handis, thay ruschit al togidder in ane knot, but ony feir of deith or woundis, with deliverit mind, to fecht for thair realme and liberte to the deith. Followit, ane sorowfull battall; for the confiderat pepill facht mair be force than craft of chevalry. Mony of thaim, sloppit throw the body, fel downe above thair slaaris; otheris offerit thaimself wilfully to be slane; otheris, efter thay had eschapid thair ennimes, slew thaimself. The place quhare thay faucht was bludy; all ouercoverit with leggis, armis, and wappinnis, skatterit throw al boundis thair of. Baith the armyis faucht with perseverand hatrent, quhill the nicht constranit thaim to sever.

The confiderat pepil and thair freindis quhilkis war left on live efter this unhappy battall, fled to the nixt montanis, quhare thay biggit firis to ouripas the nicht. Than come to thaim gret confluence of men and women, seikand thair freindis with mony sorowfull sichis, murning, and teris. Incontinent Galdus, that thir dolorus spraichis and cryis sall nocht be patent to his ennimes, commandit all his army to schout with schil nois and sang, quhill the women war expellit fra his camp. The confiderat kingis seing, on the morow, thair power sa brokin that thay nicht nocht renew battall, commandit thair folkis to returne hame; and left behind thaim ane huge fire, birnand with bald and vehement flammes, on the said montanis, to the hevin, that thair ennimes nicht have na presumption of thair departing.

In this unhappy battall war slane xii thousand Romanis, and xx thousand Scottis and Pichtis, with mony othir pepill that come to thair support. Gildo, the vailyeant capitane of Danis, ruschand our feirsly on his ennimes, was slane on the samin maner with the maist part of his company.

### Chap. Seventeenth.

*How Agricola reparaits his navy, to pas about the Ilis of Albioun, and brint sindry schippis of Danis. Of uncouth Mervellis sene in Albioun. And of the deith of Agricola.*



HE day following this unhappy nicht, maid the discomfiture of Scottis patent to thair ennimes: for thair camp was void, and plenist with nocht bot deid bodyis; but ony quhispering on the montanis, quhare maist gild was hard afore. The Romanis, traisting thir tithingis proceeding be slicht, inhibit ony forthir chace to be. Otheris, proud, efter thir feliciteis, commandit vailyeant and chosin men to serche all the woddis and strenthis, to espy gif ony hid waching of enimes war within the samin. Ane certane of Romanis following this last counsal, followit sa unwarly, that thay war all slane.

On the morrow, Agricola, seand his army sa brokin that he nicht nothir renew the samin, nor yit pas our the montanis of Granyebene but extreme dangeir, past, with his victorius army, in Angus; quhare he abaid al the nixt winter. And, in the mene time, he was advertist, how the maist part of his navy was lost; and the residew thair-of, brokin with gret calamite, arrivit in Argyle. Agricola movit nocht his contenance for thir novellis; for he fermely belevit his army, for this smale calamite, deliverit of all othir trubill that was appering thairto, be invy of Fortoun, efter sa lang prosperite and victoryis. Incontinent, he reparaits his schippis, with new marineris, and otheris quhilk had sicker experience of al dangeris and firthis in the occiane sees; and commandit thaim, as he war to fecht aganis all chance of fortoun, to pas the samin way, thay yeid afore, about

the Ilis of Albion. This navy, be prosper windis, arrivit finaly in the mouth of Tay, and brint the flot of Danis, quhilk lay in the said firth all the winter afore.

Sindry mervellis war sene in Albion, afore this last battal that Galdus faucht with Romanis. Mony birnand speris war sene fleand in the air. Ane gret part of the wod of Calidon apperit birnand all nicht; howbeit na thing apperit thair of in the day. Ane flot of schippis was sene in the aire. Ane schoure of stanis was in Athole; siclike, in Angus, ranit paddokis. Ane monstoure was borne in Inchechuthill, with doubill membris of men and wemen, with sa abhominabill figure, that it was distroyit be the pepill. Thir uncouth and wonderfull mervellis maid the pepill astonist: for thay war interpret to sindry facis; sumtimes to the gud, sumtimes to the evill.

The Empriour Domiciane, heirand thir hie and vailycant dedis of Agricola, was richt sorowfull in his mind, havand na litil indignatioun, that the fame of ane private man suld obscure his imperiall estait; and, thairfore, send haisty writtingis to him to returne, al excusatioun ceissing, to Rome, to ressave the governance of ane new province, namit Syria, vacand be deceis of Actilius Ruffus, last legat thair of.

Agricola, sone efter his cuming to Rome, was poisonit be invy of the said Domiciane, Empriour.

### Chap. Eighteenth.

*How Tribellius was send in Britane. How the Romanis fell in gret divisioun amang thaimself. And of the huge victory gottin on thaim be Galdus.*



FTER the deith of Agricola, Gneus Tribellius, was maid capitane of Britane, and fand the Romanis in gret felicite. Howbeit the samin schort time indurit; for ane gret contention rais betwix this new capitane, Tribellius, and ane othir capitane, namit Tribellianus, quhilk of thame suld have maist auctorite above the army. The first was au-

torist be the army, for he was cosing to Agricola; the secund was autorist be the Empriour. Efter lang contentioun, Tribellianus departit with ane nowmer of chosin men in France.

Galdus, knawing weil this seditioun amang the Romanis, come, with ane army of Scottis and Pichtis, in Angus, quhair this new capitane, Tribellius, wes, with the residew of Romanis, for the time. Tribellius, astonist be his suddane cumming, tocht al thing wes to be done than erar be manheid and gud werkis, than be ony consultation; and, nochtwithstanding that his army bure hatrent aganis him, he went forthward with displayit baner. At last, the army seand him nocht do the chargis of ane vailyeant capitane, dischargit him of auctorite; and chesit Sisinnius, quhilk wes brodir to Tribellianus afore rehersit, to governe thaim in that maist dangerus aventure. Sisinnius refusit this charge, and said, gif he ressavit auctorite in sic extreme dangeir, it suld be occasioun of gret divisioun and truble within the army.

Quhill the Romanis wer at sic debait, Galdus come, with arrayit hoist, in sicht. The Romanis, be suddane cumming of Galdus, nicht nocht array thaim in thair best avise; nottheles, baith the armyis junit, with birnand desire on ilk side. The confiderat pepill faucht with perseverand manheid: quhill, at the last, Sisinnius, woundit to the deith, fled out of the feild, and mony othir Romanis with him. Incontinent, all the army of Romanis gaif bakkis, and fled to the nixt wod: on quhom followit the Scottis and thair confiderat freindis, with ithand slauchter; quhill, at last, Galdus, dredand sum dangeir to fall be thair continewal feirsnes, callit thame, be sound of trumpat, to his standart. Nochttheles, thay wer sa far enragit with hatrent aganis the Romanis, thay couth nocht be brocht thairfra, quhil the nicht bereft thaim the licht.

The confiderat pepill passit the nicht following with gret joy, and blithnes of dansing, singing, and playing; siclike as wes usit in thay dayis. On the morrow, the preistis come with processioun, in thair maist reverend habitis, and gaif thankis to the Goddis; quhilkis, eftir mony calamiteis sustenit be thaim, mair than ȝ yeris, in continewall battall, had grantit anis ane honest victorie of thair ennimes.



## Chap. Nineteenth.

*How the Romanis war dounge out of all partis of Scotland, and sindry times vincust, be the vailyeant Galdus.*



THE Romanis, brokin in this maner, and seing na sickirnes, to abide in Angus, aganis sa feirs and cruel ennimes; rasit thair tentis, and come, within the nicht, to Inchechuthill: and, quhen thay had transportit the residew of thair army our Tay, thay brak the brig thairof, that thair ennimes suld nocht follow.

Galdus, advertist of thair fleing, partit the riche spulye that wes gottin in this last feild, amang his army, effering to thair manheid and vassalage; and, on the morrow, he tuke consultatioun quhat wes best to be done. Be this consultatioun it wes concludit, that the Scottis sall persew the Romanis, and ding thaim furth of all partis of Albioun. The Scottis incontinent ruschit to harnes, with all the army of Pichtis concurring to thair opinioun, and followit on the Romanis; that the injuris so oftymes done be thaim suld be anis sufficientlie punist. At last, quhen thay wer cumin to Inchechuthill, thay fand the brig bet down; and returnit, thairfore, to Dunkeld, quhair thay transportit all thair army be ane brig of tre.

The Romanis, heirand thair cuming, ordourit thaimself in gud array, and chesit ane new capitane, namit Chelius, to governe thaim in this maist dangerous battall. Sone eftir, baith the armyis junit, and faucht lang time with uncertane victorie: quhill at last the Romanis wer vincust, and chasit with ithand slauchter, quhill thay wer drevin to the wod of Calidone. In this battall were slane v.m Romanis, and ii.m of Scottis and thair confideratis.

Sindry cumpanyis of Britonis, eftir this victorie, come to Galdus. For als sone as it wes schawin in Walis, that the Romanis wer twyis vincust be the Scottis and Pichtis, incontinent all the princis of Britane maid rebelloun: and eftir that thay had slane the Romanis in al partis, quhair thay micht be apprehendit, thay send am-



bassatouris to Galdus, with mony riche jowellis; schawing thaim rejosit, that eftir sa lang rage of Fortoun aganis him, he began to be victorius and fortunat.

In the mene time, the Romanis send thair ambassatouris to Marius, King of Britonis; lamentand the hevvy injuris done to thaim be Scottis and Pichtis; and schew, gif thay gat nocht support in time, thay suld be schamefully doung out of all boundis, conquest with sa gret difficulte afore be Romanis. Marius answerit, Throw rebelioun of Britonis in sindry partis aganis him, he stude in dailie feir of his life. Attour, the young wenchis, gestouris, and commoun pepil, sang dailie ballattis, in derisioun and skorne of Romanis: and be that way, he knew not quhay wer freindis or fayis to him in Britane. Attoure, Domiciane, Empriour, wes so haitit for the cruell slauchter of the senat and cieteyanis of Rome, that nocht apperit bot civill battallis: thus nicht na support come in Britane. For thir causis, his mind wes set, erar to keip ane part to him of Albion with sicker firmance, than schamefully to tine the hail empire thair of. This answeire maid na litill affray amang the Romanis.

In the mene time wes schawin, that Galdus wes within ten milis fra the tentis of Romanis, with ane army, baith of men and wemen that nicht beir wapinnis, to ding the Romanis out of all boundis of his empire. The Romanis, for feir of his cuming, left the wod of Calidon, and fled in Brigance. Galdus, weil advertist be] quhat passage his ennimes wer departit, set him, with maist diligence, to follow on thair bakkis; that he nicht distroy thaim, but ony recover, afore thay gat ony support fra Rome. In this voyage, Galdus left the seging of the castellis and strentthis stuffit be Romanis, and come with gret deligence in Brigance. And, thair, met him ane huge nowmer of pepill, sic as haitit the Romanis, all rejosing atanis, that the said Galdus, brokin with sa mony calamiteis and truble, wes nevir disparit, bot evir reserving him and his pepill to better fortoun. Galdus ressavit all thir pepill with plesand visage, and persuadit thaim to have gud esperance: for, as than, he wes nocht passand to battall, bot erar to sicker victorie; and the hard fortoun sa lang rageand aganis him and his pepill, wes brokin: and, thairfore, trais-

tit, behind sa mony cruell extorsionis done be ennimes, to have, sumtime, ane glorius victory of thaim.

The Romanis, seing the confiderat pepil cum in Brigance with sa hie curage and spreit, wer affrayit. Nochtheles, confiding in na thing mair surele than in thair handis, thay went forwart in thair best array, sayng, That day wes othir the gait to thair triumphant glore, or than perpetuall schame. Than ilk ane exhortit othir to have hope of victory, sen thay wer to fecht aganis ane vane and barbar peple; and to haif in memory the gret manheid and virtew of thair eldaris, with more respect to thair common than singular weill; and erar to de in the battal, than to incurre the schame and dishonour that thay nicht nevir eftir do away. Quhil the Romanis wer exhorting thaimself with thir and siclike wourdis, come haistely ane hevy schoure of arowis and ganyeis, schot on thaim be thair ennimes.

In the mene time, ane cumpany of Britonis, quhilkis wer laitle send be Marius in support of Romanis, come to the Scottis and Pichtis. Mony of the Romanis, be fleing of thir Britonis, defakit curage: otheris, seing na remeid, tuke the more spreit, and, with gret force, ouriset the wingis quhair the wemen faucht. Than Galdus, richt circumspect in all his werkis, send ane cumpany of fresche men to thair support, be quhom the Romanis wer drevin sum part abak. The wemen wer more cruel than ony men, quhen thay saw thair ennimes vincust.

Thus had the Romanis bene invadit on ilk side, wer nocht thay had thair tentis at thair bakkis. Mony of thaim perseverit in battall, and wer slane; otheris fled to thair tentis: on quhom the Scottis followit sa fast, that thay slew thaim, heir and thair, and kest thaim in the fowseis; intending, be filling of the fowseis with deid bodyis, to make ane reddey gait to thair tentis. Nochtheles, the Romanis defendit thair tentis with incredibill laubour and manheid, and wald not suffer thair ennimes to entre on thaim: quhill the nicht severit thaim on ilk side.

## Chap. Twentieth.

*Of the Message send be Romanis to the confiderat Kingis ; and of thair answer. How the confiderat Kingis gaif peace to the Romanis.*



THE Scottis, nochtwithstanding the cuming of the nicht, went to the nixt wod, to bring treis to fil the fowseis, quhare the tentis of Romanis lay ; otheris maid sindry instrumentis to breke down thair trinschis ; otheris wacheit all nicht to stop thame fra fleing, and abaid the cuming of the day with birnand desire.

The Romanis, seing, on the morrow, sa gret ordinance reddy at anis to invade thaim, desirit assuverance of the wache, to send oratouris to the confiderat kingis, to treit peace. Part of Scottis said, Na conduct suld be gevin to Romanis, and na alliance to be maid with thaim ; bot victory to be usit with maist rigoure, and all the Romanis, that fled to thair tentis, slane ; that, be thair slauchter, al othir pepil may take exampil, how odious it is baith to Goddis and men, to invade realmes and pepill but occasioun of injure. Otheris said, Best was to use thair victory with mesure, and not to be our insolent and proud for this felicite ; sen every pepill ar thirlit to sic uncertane lawis of fortoun, that eftir adversite cumis prosperite, and eftir prosperite cumis adversite : and, for this reason, the Romanis suld be herd, and thair ambassatouris saiffit be the law of pepill. This last counsal wes apprisit.

Incontinent, come four honorabil men, with fair vissage, cloithit, in thair maner, with na les precious than semand abulyementis, and fell on kneis afore the confiderat kingis. Als sone as thay wer rasis, ane of thaim, to quhilk the charge wes committit, said in this wise : “ The Romane army and capitanis, dantouris of the world, desiring “ your amite and freindschip, invincibill Kingis, requiris you humilie “ of grace, quhom thay have, thir mony yeris, persewit with auful “ and kene battall ; and traist fermelie, na thing nicht have cumin,

“ be glorie of marciall dedis, sa hie to your honour, or mair worthy  
 “ to have memory, than to have the ambassatouris of Romanis, be  
 “ quhom all kingis and realmes bene subdewit, dejeckit at your feit,  
 “ and humilie desiring grace. Ye have vincust us, we grant; our  
 “ life and deith now depending in your handis, be hatrent of Goddis,  
 “ quhilkis ar commovit aganis us for the injust battall that we have  
 “ led aganis yow. Use now sic victorie as ye think respondent to  
 “ your honoure; and vincus your ire, sen ye have vincust us, the  
 “ dantouris of the warld: and, gif ye can nocht refrane your ire,  
 “ than sla us all, as we have weill deservit. Nochtheles, sen ye,  
 “ quhilkis ar heir in the farrest nuik of the warld, precellis all pe-  
 “ pill in manheid and virtew; understand, that na thing may schaw  
 “ your humanite mair than to be mercifull eftir sa huge victory.  
 “ We know now the hatrent of Goddis; we know your chevalry;  
 “ and desiris peace, under quhat conditionis ye pleis.”

Than Galdus maid answeire to thame, and said, The Scottis and  
 Pichtis, the last pepill of the warld, sen thair first beginning, desirit  
 na landis bot thaim onlie that wer gevin to thaim be benivolence of  
 Goddis, and faucht nevir bot in thair pure defence. The Romanis  
 wer knawin to thaim first as cursit revaris of realmes, be insaciabill  
 avarice. Eftir that thay had maid weir on Britonis ane hundredth  
 and fifty yeris, with sindry chancis of fortoun; and quhen thay had  
 subdewit the warld, and the maist part of Albion, to the gret dam-  
 mage of pepil thairof; thay ar vincust be the pepill quhome thay  
 held maist rude and febill; and, finalie, drevin, but-esperance of  
 better fortoun, to thair last refuge within thair tentis; to be ane  
 notabill exempill, in times cumming, how unsicker bene the stait of  
 man be chance of fortoun. And thocht sindry nobill men in his  
 army counsallit, this victory to be usit on thaim with maist rigour,  
 traisting thair injuris na othirwayis to be eschewit; yit he wald be  
 more propiciant, thinkand sufficient, baith for the time present and  
 to cum, that the ambassatouris of Romanis, dantouris of the warld,  
 wer dejeckit at his feit, humilie desiring mercy. Nochtheles, it  
 plesit him weill, be consent of his confiderat bruthir the King of  
 Pichtis, to gif peace under thir conditionis: The Romanis sal pas  
 out of all boundis pertenant to Scottis and Pichtis; and rander all



munionis and pledgis, with the guddis reft fra thaim during the weris; and sall gif thair gret aith, nevir to invaid Scottis nor Pichtis, bot evir to stand thair gud freindis in times cumming.

The Romanis ressavit peace in this maner, and departit but ony forthir injure

### Chap. Twenty-first.

*How all the strenthis of Scotland war recoverit fra the Romanis, be conditioun of peace; and of the deith of Galdus.*



**B**E Gneus Tribellius, the Romane army was nowmerit, quhen Agricola left it, to lx thousand men; bot at this time, throw frequent victoryis maid on thaim, thay war skarsly xx thousand left on live. Efter thair departing, all the boundis of Scotland quhilkis war garnist afore be Romanis, war randerit to Scottis and Pichtis. Efter this, Galdus skailit his army, and went to Epiak, quhilk was the principal eiete of Scotland, and began to institute his pepill in civill maneris. And, to the fine, that na man of his realme, be occasion of sleuth, sall use reiffis on the cuntre, he send all superflew pepil to be wageouris to the Britonis; sine rewardit his nobillis, ilk ane efter thair vassalage provin in his weiris. Than Galdus went throw all boundis of his realme; and, at his entres in ilk town, the pepill met him with sound of trampat and clarioun, to his honour and loving.

Quhill the pepill war gevin to laude and magnifie thair prince on this maner, rais gret contentioun betwix the Scottis and Pichtis, for certane debaitabill landis, that lay betwix thair realmes. This contentioun rais be evill-dedy men, that nicht suffer na peace, bot socht occasioun to breke the cuntre. Nochtheles, the two confiderat kingis met finaly togidder in the wod of Calidon, and pecifyit all debaitis amang thaimself.

Galdus ragne mony yeris efter in gret felicite, and occupyit his pepill in virtewis laubouris and exercition; and deceissit at Epiak, the xxxv yeir of his regne, maist vailyeant prince that evir rang



above the Scottis: fra the incarnation of God, c.iii yeris; fra the beginning of the world, v.m.ccc.ii yeris. His body was buryit beside Epiak, with funerall pompe, and gret lament of pepill. To quhome ane maist precius sepulture was rasit: in quhilk was ingrain, how he recoverit his realme, be soverane manheid, fra the Romanis. Mony huge pillaris war rasit about his sepulture, to testify his precellent virtew, and glore of chevalry; and, that his memory sall nevir peris, be decreit of Parliament was commandit, that the landis namit afore Brigance, sal be callit, in time cumming, Galdia; becaus this nobil prince maid ane end of all his weris in thay partis. In our dayes, that region is callit Galvidia, be corruption of langage; that is to say, Galloway.

This history, in sa far as we have schawin of Caratak, Corbreid and Galdus, Kingis of Scottis, is drawin, sum part fra vulgar Croniklis, sum part fra Cornelius Tacitus. For we have nocht onely writtin his sentence, bot als his wordis; that the redaris, baith of Romane story and Scottis, may understand ilk history concordant with othir, and knaw, be testimoniall of oure ennime, how vailyeantly our nobil elderis hes fochtin, for this realme, aganis Romanis. And, to the mair pruffe heirop, we have inserit the eloquent orisonis of Galdus and Agricola, word in word as Cornelius Tacitus reherschis thaim, in this our quhatsumevir werkis.

And sa endis heir the Fourt Buke of thir Croniklis.

# The Fift Buke.

---

## HEIR BEGINNIS THE FIFT BUKE OF THE CRONIKLIS OF SCOTLAND.

---

### Chap. First.

*Of the vicious King Lugtak; and how he was slane for his unhappy life and tyranny.*



HE vailyeant prince Galdus endit, in maner afore rchersit; succedit his sonne, Lugtak, ane odius and mischevus tyrane. He was als far haitit with the pepill for his vice, as his fader was luffit for his virtew. He was far different fra his fader, baith in maneris and ingine; gevin to his eis and lust. He slew mony of all the riche men in his cuntre, for na othir caus bot allanerly to confiske thair guddis. He gaif the ministration of justice to maist wrangus and avaricius men; specially sic men, that war gevin to conques guddis to him but ony reason, or sicht to justice. Followit, continewall reiffis, in al partis of his realme, but punitioun: gretest schrewis maist autorist, and virtuous personis maist ouirthrawin. This odius tyrane persewit his nobillis be

vane causis; sum of thaim banist, and othiris slew, that he micht conques thair landis and guddis. He had sic affectioun to reiffairis and oppressouris, that he namit thaim brethir and counsalouris in his writingis; and luffit nane sa weill as him that culd find ingine to reif his subdittis. The remanent dedis of his unhappy life ar sa detestabill, that thay ar mair worthy to be hid, than drevin in ony mannis eiris. For he, with unbridillit lust, fulyeit his anttis, his douchteris, his sisteris, and his sister douchteris; and was penitent of na thing, bot only that he micht nocht suffice to compleit his lust with thaim all.

His horribill dedis war sufferit twa yeris be his nobillis. Bot na thing movit thaim sa mekil, as his scornfull detractioun; be quhilk he callit thaim auld dotand fulis. He had nane sa familiar to him as fidlaris, bordellaris, makerellis, and gestouris, and siclike men of vile estimatioun; and cled thaim with publik auctorite, beleving all thingis to succede weil be thair governance. Bot his cruelteis and foly micht nocht be lang unpunist. For, sone eftir, ane counsal was set be him at Dounstafage, to punis sindry men that reprevit his vice: in the mene time, rais sic debait betwix him and his nobillis, that he was slane, with all his cursit cumpany, in quhome he gaif baith the governance of his body and realme, in the thrid yeir of his regne. He was buryit with riche pompe in Dounstafage; bot the bodyis of his unhappy counsalouris war left on the feildis, to be devorit be the houndis.

## Chap. Second.

*Of King Mogallus ; and how he come with ane Army aganis the Romanis. Of his Orisone maid to the Sepulture of Galdus.*



LU<sup>TAK</sup>, the tyrane, endit in this maner, Mogallus was maid king ; for he was nepote to Galdus, gottin of his douchter. This Mogallus, efter his coronation, set him to follow the wisdome and maneris of Galdus, his gud-schir ; and to kepe the faith and promis to Romanis and Britonis, be the peace afore contrackit. And, that his pepil nicht leif in quiete but ony seditioun, he reparit every thing that was afore misgidit be the tyrane Lugtak ; and restorit the religioun of Goddis, with the samin cerimonis as thay war first institute : traisting, fra he had gottin the benivolence of his Goddis, quhilkis war ennimes to his pepil for the abhominabil life of Lugtak, that al thingis suld succede the better. The Scottis began to rise ilk day in esperance of better fortoun, seing thair king follow the behavingis of his gud-schir, Galdus, and redde to reforme al enormiteis of his realm.

Nocht lang efter, come ambassatouris fra Pichtis to Mogallus, desiring support aganis the Romanis and Britonis ; quhilkis war laitly cumin, with fire and swerd, in Pentland, and slane ane gret nowmer of pepill, in defence of thair awin guddis. Siclike, the men of Galloway and Annandale complanit, that ane huge pray of guddis war tane be Romanis out of thair landis.

Mogallus, havand ingine na les gevin to chevalry than werkis of peace, rejosit to have occasioun of battall ; that he nicht, be sum notabill vassalage, be comparit to his vailyeant antecessouris : nocht theles, he send his ambassatouris, desiring redres of the dammage be thaim done. Thir ambassatouris gat nocht bot ane answer full of hie contemptioun and skorne. Than Mogallus tuke the Goddis in witnes, that baith the faith promittit to him be Romanis was brokin, and his message contemptit. And, sone efter, he rasit his army, and come in Galloway : quhare he visyit the sepulture of Galdus,

his gudschir ; and, quhen he had maid certane cerimonis, efter the custome of thay dayis, he fel on kneis, and said : “ O vailyeant and “ invincibill prince, quhilk, efter sa gret adversite of fortoun, did “ recovir the realmes of Scottis and Pichtis with huge difficulte ; “ and dang thy pissant and riche ennimes, be favoure of Goddis, “ out of thir boundis, with na les honoure than manheid ; we, thy “ native pepill, quhilkis wirschippit the, on live, with mair reverence “ and lufe than may be tauld, fallis now on kneis, with lamentabill “ voce, before this thy eternall sepulture, the last refuge to us in “ extreme neid, beseking humly thy funerall goist to be our helper “ aganis our ennimes, quhom thou sumtime maist vailyeantly vincust in thir boundis ; and prayis the, gif thou hes ony auctorite afore the Goddis, for thy singulare virtew schawin to us in the erd, to suffer nocht us, thy posterite, to be ourthrowin with dispitfull ennimes, quhilkis invadis us but titill of battall. Suffer nocht thy fame, O vailyeant campiou, to decay now amang us, be victory of thy injust ennimes ; sen thay ben sa oft vincust be the in thir boundis, and drevin, be thy singulare manheid, to implore thy mercy in thair last refuge : quhairthrow, thy name emparing sall na wayis bot evir indure in terroure of thy fais.”

Als sone as Mogallus had maid his prayer to Galdus in this maner, all the army began to enbras his image ; and maid thair prayer thairto, for happy passage, and returning in thair jurnay. The woden weinen, sic as war inflammit with divine spreit, skurgit thameself, to make thaim seme the mair religious ; and, be advise of Druides, the solempne preistis afore rehersit, thay maid solempne cursinis on the Romanis, for violation of thair faith and band, afore contrackit.



## Chap. Third.

*How the confederat Kingis come with their Armyis aganis the Romanis. Of the Orison maid be Mogallus and Lucius Anthonius to their Armyis ; and how the Romanis war discomfist.*



OGALLUS come, not lang eftir, in Annandale, to meit Unipane, King of Pichtis ; for he abaid his cumming, with ane weil arrayit ost of Pichtis. Als sone as baith their armyis was assemblit togidder, thay went baith in Westmurland and Cumbir, quhilkis war, as than, provinces of Romanis. And, first, thay brocht ane huge pray of men and guddis fra the samin ; and the residew, that micht nocht be tursit, put in fire. The inhabitantis, for feir of thir injuris, fled to York ; and complanit to Lucius Anthonius, Romane capitane, of the crueleis done be Scottis and Pichtis. Lucius than assemblit ane strang army, and went forthwart, with greit ordinance, to dant his ennimes.

Mogallus, seing his ennimes in sicht, callit his men to the standart, and said in this maner : “ I find na thing, vailyeant campionis, “ that bringis nobill men soner to loving and glore, than to resist “ the injure of ennimes, fechtand for thair realme and liberte to the “ deith, that thay be nocht subdewit to schamfull servitude ; as “ may be weill provin, baith be example of uncouth pepill, and be “ singulare virtew of our vailyeant antecessouris. Remember be “ quhat manheid and wisdom King Edere supportit Cassibilane, “ King of Britonis, quhen Julius, the Romane consull, was doungin “ out of Albion ; be quhilk he conquest na les honour to himself, “ than to his posterite. Siclike, the nobill Caratak was na les de- “ corit be his virtew in merit of loving, quhen he, fechtand sa oft- “ times be sindry chancis of fortoun, micht nevir be vincust. And “ thocht he had ane hard fortune, and brocht as presoneir to Rome, “ be treasoun of Cartumandia, yit he had invincibill spreit, defend- “ ing ay his realme to his last dayis : and was haldin, thairfore, in “ sic reverence and dredour amang his ennimes, that he was finaly

“ restorit baith to his realme and honouris; to be exampill to all  
 “ othir efter him, to have excellent fortitude aganis all trubil. Sik-  
 “ like, Corbreid, his bruthir, in defence of his liberte, faucht sa  
 “ cruelly aganis the proude Romanis, and brocht thaim to sic irre-  
 “ coverabill afflictioun and slauchter, that thay nicht nevir invade  
 “ this realme during his liffe. Remember, alsua, my gudschir,  
 “ Galdus, maist vailyeant prince that evir was afore his dayis: how-  
 “ beit, he was invadit with perpetuall trubill, fechtand nocht only  
 “ aganis Romanis, bot aganis Fortoun: sa oft vincust and chasit;  
 “ his army brokin; ilk calamite incressing above othir: yit, with  
 “ mighty curage, he perseverit ay in hope of better fortoun: quhill,  
 “ at last, be lang battall of virtew aganis his unhappy infortuniteis,  
 “ he ouirthrow Fortoun, and conquest, be merciall prowes and man-  
 “ heid, sa interminabil victory and glore, that he vincust his en-  
 “ nimes with III sindry battallis; and brocht thaim, be fleing to  
 “ thair tentis, to sic subjectioun and mesiry, that quhare thay culd  
 “ nocht be content afore of the haill boundis of the warld, thay nicht  
 “ nocht weill defende thaimself within thair sorowfull tentis: throw  
 “ quhilk he gat the excellent glore, that nevir afore succedit to levand  
 “ creature; havand the ambassatouris of Romanis, be quhome al  
 “ kingis and realmis be subdewit, deheckit at his feit, desiring grace.  
 “ In mair witnes heiroyf, the place quhare thir Romanis war defeat,  
 “ is callit Galloway; that the fame of his illuster werkis sall nevir  
 “ evanis, bot ay remane in recent memorie. Forthir, the mair  
 “ strang, the mair pissant that his fais war, the mair glore succedit  
 “ to him, and his pepill. Heirfore ye, my gud cumpanyeonis,  
 “ quhilkis ar the posterite of thay forcy campyonis that sumtime  
 “ faucht aganis the Romanis with the said Galdus, remember that  
 “ your battall is, this day, only aganis thame quhilkis hes afore sa  
 “ oftymes bene vincust be your chevelry, and remanis only on live  
 “ be your mercy. Consider weill quhat ye ar: for ye ar victouris,  
 “ unbrokin of curage, and defendouris of your realme, liberteis,  
 “ wiffis, barnis, and native Goddis; and ar to fecht for na ambu-  
 “ tioun nor avarice, bot allanerly be constant virtew. Consider als,  
 “ quhat schame it is to thinke that Romanis may nocht be vincust;  
 “ sen thay have bene sa oft before defeat. Traist fermely, the same

“virtew and fortoun is into youre handis, as was in youre eldaris. “Pas forthwart, vailyeant campionis, for victory is present in your handis; and put your vincust fais to flicht: for all thingis sal fol. “low as ye pleis, gif ye have curage.” Mogallus, be thir wordis, inflammit the mindis of his army to battall.

On the tothir side, Lucius Anthonius was na les diligent perswading the Romanis, be vehement orison, to do vailyeantly, be exemple and imitation of thair forebearis; and to remember thaim, be quhat diffieill laubouris thay led battallis, and vincust thair forey and strang ennimes. Remembring thaim als, how thay war than to fecht aganis ane barbar pepill, but virtew, and movit to battall be wodnes and fury; be quhilk baith thair manheid and reason was confundit, and movand thaim to battall be fuliche hardiment: and, thairfore, quhen maist dangeir occurrit, thay war sone discomfist and brokin. He desirit thame als, to have confidence in the Romane virtew, and take na feir of thair bludy, cruell, and unarmit ennimes, devidit amang thaimself be perpetual sedition; and nocht assemblit for luf and weill of thairself, bot onely for hatrent of thair fais. “Take youre “wappinnis,” said he, “with sicker esperance of victory, and ye “sall conques infinite glore but straik, and recovir the landis tint “afore be sleuth of Gneus Tribellius.”

Skarsly war thir wordis said, quhen baith the armyis junit, with mair ardent ire than may be tauld. The Romanis schot thair dartis, and the confiderat pepil thair arowis, ganyeis, and stanis. Quhen the wemen, of quhilkis gret nowmer was in this army, had cassin incredibill multitude of stanis, thay tuke thair awful wappinnis, and faucht above the cruelte of men; ruscheand on thair fais but ony feir of woundis or deith. The strenth of the ground was na les support to oure folkis than impediment to oure fais; for thay knew nocht the ground, and fell sometimes in swardis of mosis, and sum time in well-eyes, throw quhilk thay war oft times devidit in thair fechtng. Yit the battall was cruelly fochtin in all partis; specially in the middis, quhare the capitannis inflammit the curage of thair army: the Romanis contending to saif thaim fra thirlage of barbar pepill; and the Scottis, to keip the victory gottin be manheid of thair eldaris. Efter lang and lauborius battall, thay left thair swerdis, and faucht with schort dageris. And, becaus sa innowmerabill slauch-

ter was on all sidis, and nane of the armyis appering to geif place to othir, the capitanis on athir side war penitent that thair army junit that day. At last the Scottis and Pichtis, be innative ferocite, began to put thair ennimes abak; nocht as thay war discomfist, bot eschewing sum thing the fury of battall, becaus thay nicht na forthir resist the multitude of thair ennimes. Quhill Lucius beheld sa hie dangeir appering to his folkis, and was exhorting thaim to renew battall, he gat sic ane straik with ane arow, that he nicht na mair tary, bot fled out of the feild. Incontinent, all his army fled to the nixt woddis. Ane cumpany of thaim war stoppit to cum to thair fallowis; and, nocht knawing quhare to fle, war slane be Scottis, becaus thay wald nocht be takin prisoneris.

### Chap. Fourth.

*How Adriane, Emprioure, come in Britane; and biggit ane strang wall, to saif the Britonis and Romanis fra Scottis and Pichtis. How he returnit in France, and left Victorine to be Capitane of Britane.*



Ow was the sonne fast tending to his occasion, quhen the confiderat pepill, be sound of trumpat, colleckit the residew of thair folkis fra the chace, and passit the remanent of that nicht with incredibill blithnes, singing, dansing, and karoling. At the spring of the day, thay gaderit the riche spulyeis of slane men.

And in the mene time, quhen the two kingis war takand consultatioun for the weill of thair army, was schawin that ane cumpany of Romanis quhilkis war eschapid fra this last battal, war within twa milis to thair army, gangand will, and nocht knawand be quhat cuntre or partis thay nicht maist esaly fle. Incontinent, ane band of Scottis went to thaim, and left none of thaim on liffe; for thay refusit to be takin. On the morow, the confiderat kingis maid sacrifice, as the gise was in thay dayis, to thair Goddis, for the victory falling to thame: sine tuke diligent examinatioun quhat personis



did maist vassalage in this last battall, and rewardit thaim thair-  
after.

Lucius Anthonius, vincust in this maner, send to the Emprioure Adriane, schawing quhat trubill was laitly fallin in Britane be weris of Scottis and Pichtis, and desiring him to send, haistely, support in Britane; otherwayes the Romanis sal be shamefully dounge out of all boundis thair of, or ellis subdewit to servitude of barbar peple. Adriane, Empriour, to dant this rebelloun, come with ane huge army in Albioun. Eftir his cuming, he wes advertist how the Scottis, with more cruelte than afore, wer cuming in the Romane landis, ceissing fra na maner of cruelte that nicht be devisit on the inhabitantis thair of. Adriane, astonist, and richt desirus to revenge thir offencis, come to York; quhare he remanit, with the remanent army of Britonis, quhill he wes providit with twa monethis vittallis, to pas on the Scottis and Pichtis. Sone eftir, he rasis his campe, and, with gret difficulte, brocht the samin our Tyne; and on the fourt day eftir, he come in the landis quhilkis wer waistit be the Scottis. And becaus he fand every thing that nicht nuris his army, distroyit, he began to inquire, of quhat life and condition thir pepill bene, that maid sic extorsionis in the Romane landis. It wes schawin, thay wer ane rude and undantit pepill, and lay thairfurth all winter, nochtwithstanding the cauld frostis and stormis; and lay at sic strenthis and mossis, that thay nicht not be persewit but extreme danger to thair invasouris. For thir causis, he left purpos to pas ony forthir: and to keip thaim fra all incursionis of ennimes in times cuming, he beildit ane huge wall of fail and devait, richt braid and hie in maner of ane hill, fra the mouth of Tyne, fornens the Almane seis, to the flude of Esk, fornens the Ireland seis. This wal was LXXX milis of lenth. It is said in our croniklis, that this dike wes begun be Adriane, and endit be Severus, the Romane Emprioure; and callit The Wal of Seveir. Bot we, following Veremond, callis it The Wal of Adriane, fra the first foundoure.

Sone eftir, Adriane past in Westmureland and Walis, quhare he wes advertist of new rebelloun maid aganis him be the inhabitantis of the said land: nochttheles, he behavit him sa prudently in this mater, that the principall movaris thair of wer punist, and the cuntre restorit to his opinioun. Eftir this, he come to London and Kent,



and rewardit the nobillis of Britane, for thair faith and obedience kept to Romanis. Sic thingis done, he returnit in France, with Lucius Anthonius, quhilk wes than trublit with gret infirmite; and left Victorine in his place. This Victorine, eftir the departing of Adriane, stuffit all the castellis and strenthis of Britane with new munition and wageouris, to resist the violence of Scottis and Pichtis. Followit, mony yeris eftir, gret tranquillite amang the Britonis.

### Chap. Fifth.

*How Scottis and Pichtis partit the landis beyond the Wall of Adriane.*

*How King Mogallus was degenerit in corrupt lif; and slane, for his tyranny.*



HE Scottis and Pichtis partit amang thaim al the landis of Britane lyand beyound the wal of Adriane, in this maner: All the landis fornens the Ireland seis wer gevin to Scottis; and the landis fornens the Almane seis, to Pichtis. The strenthis lyand nixt the wal of Adrian war garnist with gret munitionis, to keip the countre fra injure of Romanis. Bot we returne to our historie.

The residew of Mogallus liffe was in quiete, but ony uncouth or domestik weiris: nochtheles, this huge victory of Romanis maid him degenerit fra virtew in maist detestabill vicis; for he was sa gevin to avarice and lust in his eild, that he eschamit of na maner of vice nor oppressioun done aganis his liegis; defloring the wiffis of his nobillis and commonis, but ony schame, or respect to thair estait; and nocht onely deforsit virginis and matronis, bot annullit all constitutionis and lawis maid for punitioun of sic horribill dedis. Atour, to aggrege his tyranny, he gave licence to theiffis and revaris to take the gudis of thair nichtbouris, gif thay wantit, but punitioun; and slew all the riche men of his cuntre be vane causis, and confiscat thair gudis. He was the first king that statute, the gudis of banist or condampnit personis to be confiscat to the kingis use, but ony respect to thair wiffis, children, or dettouris. Afore that

time, the gudis, landis, and possessionis of all condampnit personis come, but ony pley, to fre dispositioun of thair wiffis and children. This law, quhilkis schawis weill the cursit avarice of Mogallus, is yit observat, but ony revocatioun, in this regioun. And yit the horribil dedis of this tyrane nicht nocht be lang unpunist: for the nobillis and commonis, impacient to suffer sic tyrannyis, conspिरit aganis him, and instruckit certane men to wait ganand place and time for his slauchter.

Mogallus, knowing the nobillis conspिरit aganis him on this manner, tuke consultatioun of certane juglouris, quhilkis war richt frequent in thay dayis, to fle in the Illis; and to dissimill his passage, he went to his bed sonar than he was wont, as he had bene strikin with suddane infirmite. Sone efter, he armit him with his halkrig, bow, and arowis; and fled, with two servandis, to the nixt wod: and left behind him the residew of his cursit cumpany, as ane tyrane dois, that confidis in no creature. The nobillis that war conspिरit aganis him, beand advertist of his fleing, followit on him sa scharply, that he was finaly comprehendit and slane; the xxvi yeir of his regne; fra the incarnation, cxlviii yeris: Anthonius Pius beand Emprioure, and Phiacus Albus regnand above the Pichtis.

The heid of Mogallus was borne on ane staik to the nixt towne, quhare ane multitude of pepill war gaderit, to his perpetuall schame. It was devisit be the pepil, that his body suld be cassin to the houndis and revanus beistis; nochtheles, the nobillis, movit be the worthy dedis of Galdus, his gudschir, commandit his heid and body to be buryit amang the kingly sepulturis of his progenitouris. This schameful and unhappy end maid Mogallus, degenerat fra the virtue of his antecessouris.

## Chap. Sixth.

*Of sindry nobill Clerkis. Of the vicius King Conarus; and how he was degradit of all auctorite, and his servandis hingit for their wickit counsal.*



RA the deith of Dardannus to thir days, war mony excellent clerkis in sindry partis of the warld: as Quintiliane, oratoure; Serapio, medcinar; Philo Jow, philosophour and oratour; Caius Plenius, secundus, that wrait the History Naturall, in xxxviii bukis, with na les treuth than eloquence; Cornelius Tacitus, writar of historyis, quhom we have followit in this werke; Cecilius Plenius, secundus, oratoure; Suetonius Tranquillus; Ptolomeus, maist excellent in mathematik, quhilk brocht the cosmography of Ptolomy, afore rehersit, to ane better knowlage, with mony new additionis; L. Apuleus, oratour; Aulus Gellius; Plutercus Cheronius, philosophour. And in thay dayis war excellent poetis: as Juvenale, Sillius Italicus, Mercialis, with mony otheris.

About this time the Romane princis persewit Cristen pepill with gret cruelte, and brocht gret nowmer of thaim to marterdome, nocht knowing quhat constance was in the religioun of Cristin faith; quhilk inecessit ay the more strently, that it wes persewit be tyranny; and agmentit with na thing sa mekle as be scharp persecutioun. Bot we will return, quhare we left, to our historie.

Mogallus micht weill have bene noumerit, in the beginning of his empire, amang maist nobill princis: bot, in the end, he wes nothir worthy to be king, nor yit ane levand creature, and deservit weil the end that he gat. Forthir, his sonne Conarus, quhilk succedit eftir him, had litil better fortoun or maneris; for he instrukit his men, with hid waching, to sla his fader, and so be unnaturall cruelte he succedit to the crown. In the beginning of his empire, he dissimilit the vices to quhilkis he wes naturally inclinait. Als sone as the realme wes stabillit to him in sicker peace, he waistit al the pub-

lik rentis pertenand to the crown, in his infamit lust; and gave braid landis and riches to maist vile and diffamit creaturis, becaus thay lovit his corruptit maneris and vice: and be counsall of thir wickit schrewis he governit his realme, detesting all nobill and virtewis men of his realme; and set him to induce his peple to superflue and riatus bankettis, contrar the temperance of his antecessouris. At last, quhen he had waistit all his treasour and substance in mony schamful wayis, he convenit his nobillis to ane counsal; in the quhilk he schew, be lang orison, the honest and triumphant cheir of his hous, as na litill glore suld be gevin thairto. And becaus his rentis and treasour wes nocht sufficient to sustene the samin as he usit, he desirit ane generall stent to be tane throw the realme, of ilk person eftir his faculte, to sustene his hous and servandis according to his estait riall and honouris. It wes answerit be his nobillis, that thay micht nocht gif ane haisty deliverance in sa gret ane mater; becaus he desirit certane thingis, quhilkis wer nevir desirit be ony othir prince afore: and for that cause, thay suld degestlie avise, and schaw to him thair mind concerning the same, on the morow. Thir nobillis, in the nicht following, convenit to thair secreit counsall. And becaus thay fand the king of evill governance, thay concludit to degraid him of his auctorite and kingdome. On the morow, thay convenit with thair king in counsall, and said to him, that thay had na litill wonder, that the rentis pertenand to the crown micht nocht suffice als weil to him, havand his realme but ony trubill, in peace, as it did to othir maist nobill princis, his progenitouris, afore, baith in weir and peace. The nobill Galdus, that recoverit his realme, desirit nevir stent of thaim, for na maner of chargis that he sustentit aganis his ennimes; knowing weil how odious it was to the pepil, to seik ony new exactionis on thaim. And yit the governance of Conarus was unlike to the nobill Galdus. For Galdus, be counsall of prudent men, removit all provocation of lustis fra his army, with all othir thingis that micht maik thaim effeminate; gevand his lauboure to defend his subdittis, and to resist his ennimes. Be contrar, Conarus was drownit in lust, passing his life amang maist vile and abhominabill creaturis; pretending ay to governe the realme, quhen he cast besines occurrit, be thair unhappy counsall; disherising the nobillis of the realme, to



maik up his mischevous limmaris. And finaly, efter sa mony importabill wrangis done be him, he had socht ane thing richt uncouth and odius to thaim, to be ane preparative to othir kingis, his successouris, in times cuming, to seik new exactionis on thaim, that all thair riches and guddis nicht cum finaly in his handis. Bot his unhappy counsalouris, and misgidaris of the realme, sall nocht onely be frustrate of thair intentionis, bot brocht to sic estait, that thay sall mister litill reward or riches fra him in times cuming. For thay war profoundlie resolvit, baith to degraid him of his kingdome and honouris, and to punis his wickit consalouris to the deith; that all pepil of vile and obscure linnage may take exempill to abuse realmes and kingis, and that kingis may understand quhat dangeir is to thaim to be injurius tyrannis to thair subdittis.

Conarus, heirand thir wourdis, said, "How dar ye, mischant fulis, pretend sic thingis aganis me and my servandis? This treason, that ye have devisit aganis me, sall turne in dammage of yourself; and ye sall be punist in maist cruell maner that may be devisit." The nobillis answerit, that he was unworthy to be thair king; for he sufferit the realme to be distroyit be insolence of vicious limmers. Incontinent rais ane huge nois and clamour amang thaim; and in the mene time, certane wicht and rank men tuke him be the middill, and bure him, perforce, to ane quiet chalmer: quhare he remanit, the residew of his dayis, in miserie. His servandis, that wer occasioun of his corruptit life, nurisand him in vice, wer tane and hinggit on jebaittis, as thay deservit.

### Chap. Seventh.

*How Argadus was maid Governour of Scotland, during the time of Conarus in presoun. And of his life and governance.*



ONARUS beand degradit in this maner, the nobillis chesit Argadus, capitane of Argyle, to be governour of the realme, sa lang as Conarus wes in presoun. This Argadus, in the beginning of his auctorite, tuke gret



labour for ornament of commoun weill; and stanchit thift, reif, and slauchter, and all othir sic exorbitant crimes, with mervellus craft and prudence: havand sic moderatioun, that he semit nothir to slaw, nor yit to cruell, in administratioun of justice: throwe quhilk, he wes traistit to be ane mirrour of virtew to all nobill princis. And yit, as oft occurris, gud forton turnit his mind fra justice: For he set aside al gud maneris, and governit his realme, quhen hieast chargis occurrit, be domistik counsall, and nurist seditionis intestine betwix the gret princis of his realme, to cause thaim have the may erandis with him. He maryit the Prince of Fiffis douchter, and be affinite thair of drew the Pichtis to his freindschip, that he micht be the more strang amang his awin pepill. The nobillis, impacient to suffer his viciis, callit him to ane counsall: quhare he wes scharly preveit, that he, chosin governour be thair auctorite, for the virtew than appering in him, suld make him nocht onelie to follow the vicious tyranny of Conarus, quhom thay deprivit for his detestabil dedis, bot als to mary with uncouth blude but thair avise; and giding the realme be privat counsall, to the gret dammage of the common weil; and hes tint schamefully the gud name that he conquest afore, in the beginning of his auctorite.

Argadus, heirand him reprochit in this wise, set furth mony teris, and desirit his nobillis to have him excusit for that time be thair benivolence, and nocht to punis him according to his demeritis: for he promittit to amend al enormiteis done be him, in quhat sort thay plesit. The nobillis, movit be his humill wourdis, continewit him still in auctorite, and kest al his counsalouris in presoun.

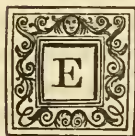
Argadus, correckit be his nobillis in this maner, governit the realme in gud justice, and did na thing, in times cumming, concerning publik materis, without consultatioun of his nobillis. And becaus divers townis and cieteis of the realme had ouir large privilege in administratioun of justice, he minist mony of thair prerogativis, and commandit thaim to punis na thing bot small crimes; all hie offencis to be replegit to his gret justice. He maid extreme deligence to serche thevis, revaris, and oppressouris; speciallie thaim that maid heirschippis in Argyle, ilis, and othir partis adjacent: And ay, quhare thay wer apprehendit, thay wer hingit, but ony mercy, on jebaittis. He commandit all personis, that had ony office or aucto.

rite of him, to abstene fra sic thingis as nicht mak thaim inebriat or dronkin, to cause thaim have sum preeminence and wisdome above the commonis. He commandit al seudlaris, tavernaris, dronkartis, and othir siclike vile pepill, devisit more for lust than ony necessar sustenance of men, to be exilit within ane certane day. The day beand run, he commandit thair guddis to be confiscat, quhare evir thay nicht be apprehendit.

Finalie, the commoun pepil, sum part be benivolence of Argadus, and sum part be thir institutionis, wer reformat in gudde maneris. Quhill at last Conarus, be lang seiknes and malancoly, quhilk he tuke for his incarceration, deceissit the xiv yeir of his regne; Anthonius Aurelius beand than Empriour.

### Chap. Eighth.

*Of King Ethodius the First, and how he pecifyit the Ilis. How the Scottis and Pichtis brak down the wall of Adriane; and faucht aganis the Romanis, with sindry chancis of victory.*



**E**FTIR deith of Conarus, the nobillis, be generall convention, maid Ethodius king: for he wes nepot to Mogallus, gottin on his sister. Ethodius, eftir his coronation, rewardit Argadus, governour, with landis and riches, for his gud ministration of justice during his time; and maid him generall lieutenant of his realme.

This nobill prince past in Ilis, and pecifyit the same of all debaitis. At his returning in Albion, he wes advertist that the Romanis had brokin down the wal of Adrian, and in place thair of hes beildit gret strenthis of treis, stanis, and devaitis; and be the samin, maid mony heirschippis in the landis of Scottis and Pichtis, of quhom ane gret nowmer wer slane, in defence of thair awin guddis, and the remanent discomfist.

Als sone as Ethodius hard thir novellis, he send ane herald to Victorine, desiring redres to be maid within xv dayis; with certificatioun, gif the samin wer nocht done within the said time, he suld

recovir the samin be force of battal. It was answerit be Victorine, that this last pray of guddis was takin be Romanis, to recompens sindry othir heirschippis maid afore be Scotis and Pichtis; for thay war ane seditious pepil, and confiderat only for dammage of thair nichtbouris; as apperit cleirly, becaus thay brak first the said wall of Adrian, and beildit sindry strenthis fornens the samin, to trubill the Romanis and Britonis, but ony sicht to peace afore contractit. Ethodius, movit be this answer, send his ambassatouris to the King of Pichtis, and desirit him to cum, with his folkis, agane ane certane day, to recover thair guddis, tane be Romanis. The King promittit to be reddy, as was desirit.

The Romanis, weil advertist of thir materis, providit ane huge ordinance of battall aganis thair ennimes. The confiderat pepil rasis thair armyis at the day prefixt, and brak down the wall of Adrian in mony partis, and enterit, with maist cruell heirschippis and slauchter, in the landis of Romanis. In the nicht following, the Romanis slippit by the tentis of Scottis and Pichtis, and come, baith in Mers and Berwik, to draw thaim out of the Romane landis. The confiderat kingis, weil advertist thairof, come, with gret diligence, on the morrow, to rescours thair landis. Incontinent, baith the armyis ruschit togidder, and faucht, with sindry chance of victory: for the richt wingis war victorius on ilk side, and the left wingis discomfist. The mid batallis faucht ithandly, quhil the nicht bereft thaim thair sicht. And sa baith the said battallis severit, on thair awin will, but ony victory. On the morow, al the wemen that followit the Scottis and Pichtis to this battal, seing the feild desert, gaderit the spulyeis of slane men, and returnit with the samin in Scotland.

This battall was sa sorowful, that the yeir nixt following was in quiet, but ony motioun of weiris.

## Chap. Ninth.

*How Victorine was deprivit of auctorite, and Calphurnius Agricola send in his place. How Calphurnius reparit the wal of Adrian, and returnit to Rome.*



ICTORINE, seing his army brokin in this maner, wrait to Aurelius, Emprioure, and schew all this trubill that fell to Romanis be this last battall, with every circumstance afore rehersit.

The Emprioure, traisting this trubill fallin to Romanis be febill curage of Victorine, deprivit him of all auctorite, and send Calphurnius Agricola, quhilk was nepot to Julius Agricola, afore rehersit, in his place.

Calphurnius, at his cuming in Britane, assemblit ane large power of Britonis and Romanis at York, to invade the confiderat pepill: and first maid sacrifice to the goddis, to have victory on his ennimes; sine rasit his camp, and come beyond the wall of Adrian: quhare he fand, be frequent weiris, al the landis waist, but ony cornis or frutis; all the townis brint be Scottis, that na lugeing suld remane to thair ennimes. Calphurnius, nochtwithstanding thir direptionis, went forthwart with his army, and invadit baith Mers and Pentland with irrecoverabil skaithis, and slew the inhabitantis thairof, in al partis, but ony mercy or ranson. Sic thingis done, he returnit to York, and remanit thair, the winter following, with the residew of his army; makand provision to invade the Scottis and Pichtis agane the nixt simer.

In the mene time, he gat letteris, that Welchemen, with sindry othir pepill of Britane, wer rebellit; and, be the said rebelloun, mony cieteis and townis that stude at the opinioun of Romanis, brint and heryit, and the inhabitantis thairof cruelly slane. Calphurnius, dreidand to tine the landis conquest afore be sa huge difficulte, in persewt of new rowmis; left the Scottis and Pichtis, and maid him, with all diligence, to renew the wall of Adrian, that the



samin nicht be ane targe, in times cumming, aganis the violence of Scottis and Pichtis. Sone efter, he gat sindry craftismen to clenge the fowseis, and to repair the said wall in all partis, with touris and bastailyeis rising in the strangest maner that nicht be devisit. And quhen the wal was reparit in all partis, he left ane band of weirmen to debait the samin fra violence of ennimes, and went with the residew of his army on the Welchemen: and thay, with na les diligence, met him in arrayit battal. Nochtheles, thay war finaly vincust and chasit.

Skarsly was this battall pecifyit, quhen haistely followit ane othir, be rebelloun of the Ile of Wicht. The inhabitantis thair of come with proude baner aganis the Romanis, and war vincust on the same maner as afore. The confiderat pepill, scand the Britonis dantit in this wise, held thaim in thair awin rowmes, but ony invasion of Romanis; dreidand the samin chance of victory, in this Calphurnius Agricola, that was afore with Julius Agricola, quhilk subdewit sa mony regionis of Scottis and Pichtis to Romane empire.

Calphurnius, heirand, be thir exploratouris, how the confiderat pepill war skalit, but ony molestatioun done to his pepil; maid him to meis al seditionis, gif ony war rising, amang the Britonis. And quhen he had pecifyit thaim on all debaittis, he returnit, be command of Anthonius Commodus, Empriour of Rome.

### Chap. Tenth.

*How Trebellius was send in Britane, and was vincust be the Scottis and Pichtis. Of the rebellion of Britonis aganis him; and of his message send to the Empriour.*



FTER the departing of Calphurnius, ane new capitane, namit P. Trebellius, was send in Britane be the Emprioure. This Trebellius governit Britane mair be benivolence and favoure, than ony auctorite. He usit the counsall of Britonis in his hie besines; and did gret honour to Lucius, King of Britonis, commending him oftimes, be his writingis,



to the Emprioure, that he was baith luffer of the commoun weil of Rome, and ennime to all thaim that hatit the empire thairof. Trebellius come in sic favour to Lucius, King of Britonis, be thir commendationis, that he belevit na thing nicht succede to his dammage in Britane: and began, thairfore, to schaw his fenyeit mind, as man of insaciabill avarice; for he slew mony riche men in Britane, only to confisk thair gudis, and otheris banist, to the same effect.. Thir cruelteis maid him sa odius, that he had bene oftymes invadit and slane, war nocht he was ithandly supportit be the said Lucius.

The confiderat pepil, knowing the hatrent of Britonis aganis Trebellius, thocht the time expedient to revenge auld injuris. And efter that thay had gaderit ane army, with all provisioun that nicht be devisit, thay brak down the wall of Adriane, quhilk was reparit afor be Calphurnius, and wrocht intollerabil cruelteis on the Britonis that obeit to Romanis. Trebellius, movit be thir displesouris, went with ane army of horsmen and futemen aganis the Scottis and Pichtis. At his first juning, the Britonis and Frenchemen, quhilkis wer ane gret part of his army, left him: throw quhilk he was esaly vincust, and all his army put to flicht. And thocht the victory succedit to Scottis and Pichtis in this battall, yit innowmerabil slauchter was maid on thaim, als well as of Romanis. Trebellius, discomfist on this maner, colleckit the residew of his army, and returnit to York.

The Scottis and Pichtis become richt insolent efter this victory: And to revenge the slauchter sa mony yeris maid on thaim, thay slew al the presoneris quhilkis war takin in this last feild; and come with new army on the pepil that dwelt in Westmureland and Kendale, and invadit thame with sic cruelte, that thay war disparit, but refuge. Howbeit Trebellius was gretumly commovit at thir offenscis, he durst nocht assailye his ennimes with battall; for he had na les suspicion aganis the Britonis than aganis the Scottis and Pichtis. Nochtheles, be frequent jeoperdyis, he slew his ennimes, ay quhare he nicht apprehend thaim, but ony miseration.

In the samin time rais mekill trubill in Britane: For the commonis, seing thaim ilk day mair injurit be the Scottis and Pichtis, but ony esperance of redres; chesit Caldorus, ane vailyeant knight of Pichtis blude, to be thair capitane in thair rebellion: for he was

mony yeris accustomit with thair maneris, havand na thing in mair hatrent than tyranny of Romanis. Trebellius, knowing the gret dangeir appering be this trubill, tuke lang consultation, be quhat industry and laubour he nicht best resist thairto. Efter degeist advisement, he tuke purpos to fecht with Britonis; for gif thair power war midlit with Scottis and Pichtis, the samin nicht not be dantit but gret slauchter of Romanis. The Britonis, becaus thair army was collekit of commonis, wer astonist be his cumming: nochthcles, be impulsion of Caldorus, thair capitane, thay junit with thair ennimes in gret ferocite and spreit. Followit ane bludy and terribill battall, fochtin with doutsum victory: bot at last the Britonis war vincust. Caldorus eschapid out of this battal with certane his freindis, and returnit in Pentland, rejosing in his mind that sa mony Romanis and Britonis wer slane be his industry. Mony nobillis of Britane wer in this feild aganis the Romanis, howbeit thay wer cloithit under landwart habit; and quhen thay saw the Romanis be rageand fury sla sa mony of the commonis, thay discoverit thameself to Romanis, traisting, becaus thay wer nobillis, to be the erar saiffit, and tane presoneris. Quhen Trebellius wes advertist how thay dissimulit thair habit, and wer the caus of this rebellion, he gart hing thame, in presens of al the pepill, on jebaitis. This cruelte maid Trebellius richt odious to the Britonis: for on the morrow thay tuke als mony Romanis, and hangit thaim on the samin maner.

Trebellius, dreding gret dangeir appering in al partis, complanit to the Emprioure of the treason of Britonis, and injuris done be Scottis and Pichtis; and desirit support to be send haistely, or ellis the Romanis suld be doung shamefully out of Britane.

Commodus Anthonius, Empriour, to dant this rebellion of Britonis, Scottis, and Pichtis, send ane vailyeaunt knight, namit Pertenax, in Britane; quhilk, eftir his cuming, dantit the ennimes of Romane Empire mair be benivolence than ony preis of armis: howbeit, ane certane of thaim, that wer of smal reputatioun, wer punist to the deith. Eftir this, he rasit his camp, and com beyond the wall of Adriane, quhare he invadit the Scottis and Pichtis with heirschippis and slauchter. Bot quhen he suld have procedit forwart, he gat writingis, that Commodus, Emprioure, wes slane be treason of his

familiaris; and, sone eftir, he returnit to Rome, quhare he wes chosin Emprioure. And eftir his coronatioun, Trebellius wes send agane in Britane.

### Chap. Eleventh.

*How Argadus, Licutenand to King Ethodius, was slane, and his Army discomfist, in the Ilis. Of sindry lawis and actis maid be Ethodius; and of his slauchter.*



UHIL sic thingis wer done in Britane, succedit gret trubill to Ethodius in Scotland. For sindry gret Clannis of the Ilis, to revenge the slauchter of thair freindis, quhilkis wer slane be Argadus, quhen he wes gouvour, arrivit, with ane gret power, in Argyle; and maid slauchter and heirschippis in all partis thair of, but ony miseratioun of estait. Ethodius, to punis thir attemptatis, send Argadus, his lieutenant, with ane cumpany of chosin men, in Argyle; and come with ane army, baith of Scottis and Pichtis, to the wall of Adriane, to fecht with Romans and Britonis, gif thay wald invaid him. The Clannis of the Ilis, knawing the cuming of Argadus, convenit suddanlie with thair capitane to meit him; and left MM Irelandmen, quhilkis come with thaim for spulye, hid under craggis and covis of that land, to take Argadus, gif thay nicht, at sum avantage. Als sone as thir Irelandmen persavit Argadus cuming by thaim, thay ruschit al at anis apon him with ane schout. Argadus, seing him invadit on athir side, turnit all dredour in maist fury, and faucht with incredibill manheid to the deith; and wes finalie slane, with II thousand men of his army, and the residew put to flicht.

King Ethodius become richt displesant to the Clannis of the Ilis for this offence; for he come, sone efter, with xx thousand men, in Argyle. The Clannis of the Ilis, advertist of his cuming, pullit up salis, to have fled in the Ilis; nochtheles, thay wer drevin agane in Argyle, with contrarius windis. King Ethodius, knawing thaim disparit men, and nocht abill to be vincust but hie dammage and

slauchter of his pepil; brak thaim mair be wisdome than ony violence of battall, and brocht thaim to sic necessite, that thay wer constrainit, for falt of vittallis, to seik peace; quhilk wes grantit to thaim, under thir conditionis: The principall capitane, and twa hundreth, quhom the king wald cheis of thair cumpany, sal be deliverit, to underly the wil of him and his nobillis; and the remanent to return hame, but thair swerdis, in the Ilis. Thir Clannis, and men of the Ilis, seing na refuge, tuke peace on the samin condition, and deliverit sa mony as the king plesit; quhilkis wer justifyit, and put to deith. The residew, seing thair capitane and thair freindis slane, come with ane huge nowmer of stanis, becaus thay wantit thair swerdis, on the kingis army, as rammist and wod creaturis, to have revengit the slauchter of thair freindis; nochtheles, ane gret end of thaim, with litill lauboure, wes slane, and the remanent put to flicht.

The Ilis dantit on this maner, and the Britonis levand in servitude under Romanis, Ethodius had his realme in peace, but ony uncouth or domistik weiris, mony yeris eftir. And, eftir that he had visit all boundis thair of, he chesit sindry prudent men to be jugis, for administratioun of justice to his subdittis. And, that he suld nocht dull, be approching of age, in sleuth, he gave his ingine to hunting, as he wes lernit in his youth; and commandit the lawis, maid afore be his nobill antecessouris concerning hunting, to be observit. And, first, he commandit, that na haris be slane, quhen thay ar lyand, with clubbis, arowis, dartis, or ony siclik instrumentis; nor yit tane be nettis or gurnis: becaus haris wer oftimes murdrist be sic maner, but ony game. He commandit als, gif the haris had forrun the hundis be lang renk, to be na forthir persewit: siclike, that na man sla ane baggit hind, nor yit thair calffis. It wes defendit als, to sla ane hair with ony othir ingine than chace of hundis: and na hunting to be usit during the season of winter and weir; for, in that season, the erd is so ouir coverit with snawis, that the deir ar constrainit to discend fra the montanis to the planis to serche thair fude, and oftimes murdrist but ony game. Thir lawis wer maid be Ethodius; for he detestit na thing mair, than the honorabill game of hunting, quhilk wes ordanit for his nobillis and gentill men, to be destroyit be sic febill slichtis, but solace. Attoure, quhen this



prince vakit fra his hunting, he wes gevin to honest pleseiris; and nurist with him crafty menstralis of all sortis. Bot, at last, he wes treasonably slane, under nicht, be ane menstrale of the Ilis, quhome he had in gret delite. This menstrale wes finalie tane be the kingis gard; and, quhen he wes accusit, quhy he slew his native prince, that wes so familiar and tendir with him, he answerit, that he slew the king, becaus the king slew mony of his freindis afore in Argyle; and, sen he had so condingly revengit the slauchter of his freindis, quhilk he wes determit mony dayis afore to do, and his vehement affectioun satisfyt be his vailyeant deid, he desirit to leif na langar: and bad thaim use quhat cruelte thay list for his offence; for his curage was na les reddy to sustene the deith, than it was to sla the king: attoure, thair was na kind of deith sa cruell to be devisit on him, that nicht cause him to repent the kingis slauchter, sen he, be the samin, hes so condinglie revengit the slauchter of his deir freindis. Skarsly wer thir wourdis said be the said menstrale, quhen his body wes drawin sindry with wild hors.

Ethodius wes slane, the xxxiii yeir of his regne; and beryit in Dunstafage, amang the sepulturis of his progenitouris. His regne come to the empire of Severus, Emprioure.

### Chap. Twelfth.

*Of mony nobill Clerkis. How Britane tuke the faith of Crist. Of the vicious King Satrahell; and of his deith.*



Bout this time flurist mony nobill Clerkis, in sindry partis of the warld: as, Galiane and Ipocrates, medcinaris; Appollonius, oratoure, quhilk wes martyrit be Gentilis, for making of ane orisone in loving of the glorious Virgin Mary.

Mony pepill began, in this time, to detest the errouris of Gentilis, and tuke the sicker faith of Crist. Lucius, King of Britonis, heir-and, be the Romanis under Trebellius, of the miracis and religion of Cristin faith, send writingis to Elethurius, quhilk wes the xiv



Paip fra Sanct Peter, to gif the Cristin faith to him and his pepill. Sone efter come in Britane, two haly men, Fugatius and Damanius; quhilkis brocht the said Lucius and his pepill to the sacrament of baptime, and put doun al vane superstitionis and idolitris. The yeir that Britane tuke the faith of Crist, wes, fra his incarnatioun, ane hundreth LXXXVII yeris. Bot we wil return to our history.

Eftir deth of Ethodius, his sonnis wer of so tender age, that thay nicht nocht succed; and, thairfore, Satrahell, his brothir, wes maid king. This Satrahell wes ane man of sle and fals ingine; and gevin to sic cruelte and treason, that he slew, be fenyeit causis, mony of all the freindis of Ethodius, to defraude his airis of the crown. He wes so unmerciful to the commonis and nobillis, that he spulyeit thaim baith of thair guddis and landis; and mony of thame, for vane causis, put to deith. Thus grew he ilk day richt odius, baith to his commonis and nobillis. Sone eftir, followit' discord, dissension, and domistik weris, amang freindis and nichtbouris, to the gret damage of the common weil. Thir, and mony othir damagis, appering in plane exterminioune of the pepill, come throw sleuth and imprudence of this unhappy tyrane: for he durst nocht cum to licht, to punis trespassouris; becaus the pepill had him in extreme hatrent for his cursit tyranny. Quhil, at last, he wes slane be ane of his familiaris, within the nicht; the fourt yeir of his regne.

### Chap. Thirtenth.

*Of King Donald the First. How the Britonis wer inhibit be the Romanis to have ony King of thair blude. And how thay solistit the Scottis and Pichtis to assist to thair rebellion.*



ATRAHELL slane in this maner, Donald, brothir to Ethodius the First, wes maid king; ane just and humil prince, richt far discordand fra the maneris of the last tyrane: nocht gevin to slichtis nor falset, bot settand his mind to meis all contentionis and truble amang his liegis. And quhen he had peacifyit his realme of all debaitis, he began to vesy

all boundis thairof; makand residence oftymes in his honorabil castellis with his nobillis, and doing justice to his subdittis but ony respect of the party; and punist all crimes, effering to the offence thairof: throwe quhilk the pepill, that wes wild and undantit afore, be negligence of evill princis, wes brocht to civill maneris, and abill to withstand thair ennimes quhen danger occurrit. This nobil prince had ane gard of chosin men, reddie for all chargis, baith in time of weir and peace.

About this time, Lucius, King of Britonis, deceissit. The Romanis, eftir his deith, knowing the kingis of Britane wes occasioun of sa frequent seditioun in times bygane, inhibit, that ony of thair blude suld regne in times cuming: throw quhilk gret trubill succedit in Britane. For Fulgencius, quhilk wes descendit of the blude riall of Britane, richt commovit that the noblis thairof suld be disherist of the crown, convenit mony of the nobillis thairof to ane counsall; and complenit the gret tyrannyis done be Romanis, in plane eversioun of thair native lawis and liberte; thair virginis, wedowis, and matronis, fulycit be insaciabill lust of Romanis; thair guddis escheitit; new tribute and exactionis ilk day desirit, beside mony othir infinite oppressionis; and, last of all, the nobill blude disherist of the crown: and, thairfore, gif the samin wer nocht haisely reparit, na nobill blude, but onlie commonis, suld be left in Britane. The Britonis, movit with thir reasonis, set ane day to meit him in thair best maner, to invade the Romanis.

Sone eftir, Fulgencius send ane herald to Donald, King of Scotis, schawing the rebellioun of Britonis aganis the Romanis, and desiring support to expell thaim out of Albioun; for the samin micht be done that time with les truble than ony time afore: for the empriour wes agit, and brokin with sa mony calamiteis, that he wist nocht quhat wes to be done; attoure, sa mony pepill wer rebellit aganis him in France, Almanye, and the eist partis of the warld, that na help micht be send fra him in Britane. King Donald, rejosing of thir tithingis, and glaid to have occasioun of battall, becaus his pepill micht nocht leif but civil weris amang thaimself, quhen thay have na externe weris on othir pepil; promittit to cum, at ane prefixit day, with his power, to invaid the Romanis. The Pichtis promittit thair support in the samin maner.

Fulgentius, knowing the punitioun of Scottis and Pichtis maid to the effect foresaid, come, with ane army of Britonis, to the wal of Adriane, fornens the Ireland seis; and brak doun ane gret part thairof, agane the cuming of Scottis and Pichtis: and thay, with na les deligence, met the Britonis. Als sone as the Albanis had mengit thair armyis togiddir, thay come forthwart to York, traisting to have found Trebellius, with othir sindry Romane capitanis, in it. At last, quhen thay had line lang time at the sege of this town, and understude the principal Romanis, quhom thay desirit maist, fled in Kent, thay left the sege; and maid incursionis, with heirschippis and slauchter, on all pepill that obeit to Romanis.

The commonis, astonist be thir cruelteis, and nocht of power to resist, past to the confiderat kingis in thair plesand maner; and resavit thaim within the portis of thair town. Thair armyis wer lugit utouth the town so lang, as ony thing micht be gottin to thair sustentation; and than thay went to othir placis, ay makand sic like heirschippis as afore, nocht ceissing fra thair cruell fury: quhill the intollerable and cald stormis of winter constranit thaim to skaill and returne hame.

### Chap. Fourteenth.

*How Severus, Emprioure, come in Britane, to revenge the oppressionis done to Romanis. How the Britonis fled in Scotland. How the Scottis and Pichtis, fechtand in support of Britonis, war discomfist.*



REBELLIOUS, impacient to suffir thir offencis, wrait to Severus, Emprioure, how the Britonis nocht onlie wer rebellit, bot als hes invadit the Romane landis with sic crueltie and heirschippis, that it wes necessar othir to send ane new army, or ellis to cum himself in Britane.

Severus, Emprioure, glaid to have occasioun of battall, that he micht conques siclik honour in subdewing of Britonis as he had won afore in subdewing of baith the eist and north partis of the

warld, tuke his wayage on ane hors litter; and come finalie, with gret lauboure and diligence, howbeit he was agit, and pinit with the gout, in Britane: and brocht with him baith his sonnys, Anthonius and Getas; to that fine, that he nicht draw thaim fra corruptit and sensuall plesouris, to merciall werkis. At his cuning in Britane, he gaderit the residew of Romanis, with his new army, to invaid the Britonis.

Fulgentius, and the remanent Britonis of his opinion, astonist be suddane cumming of the Emprioure with ane huge power, send oratouris to excuse thaim, and desirit peace. The Empriour dipeschit thir oratouris with plane repuls. Than Fulgentius, frustrat of his desiris, convenit the nobillis to ane counsall: perswading thaim, be lang orisoun, to recover thair liberte, and to restore the blude royall of Britane to the crown; revengeing the intollerable outragis sa mony yeris done be Romanis: and declarit how na thing nicht move him to take this maist dangerus mater on hand, bot onlie to recover the liberte of Britane, and to banis uncouth blude fra the croun. And thocht he persuadit thaim sumtime to battall, sayng, the Romanis wer ane army gaderit of divers opinionis and mindis, and nicht thairfore be the soner vincust, fra Scottis and Pichtis, quhilkis wer maist ennimes to Romanis, wer cumin to thair support: yit he thocht mair profitable to brek the Romanis with smal incursionis, than ony set battal; traisting, gif the goddis wer propiciant, that Britane nicht be perpetuallie deliverit of Romane servitude. The Britonis, movit be thir wourdis, come out of Britane, with thair wiffis, children, and guddis, to the montanis beyond the wall of Adriane.

In the mene time, Fulgentius gaderit ane cumpany of the noblest Britonis of his opinion, with purpos erar to defend thaimself than to invaid thair ennimes: and sone eftir, the Scottis and Pichtis come to him, reddy to assailye all maner of jeoperdeis for thair common weill.

Severus, Empriour, knowing all the wayis of the Albanis, left na thing undone that nicht pertene to the provisioun of his ordinance: and quhen al thingis wer providit as he desirit, he left his yongest son, namit Getas, to governe the Britonis under Romane lawis; and come with al his ordinance to York, quhair he wes res-



savit with gret honour and triumpe. Eftir his intres, he went to the templeis, and maid his salutationis to the goddis; sine past to the castell, quhair Trebellius wes, with sindry Romane sodjouris, and tuke lang avisement how the barbar pepill micht be best dantit. Nocht lang eftir, he rasis his campe, and come forthwart with displayit baner.

The Britonis quhilkis wer of Fulgentius opinioun, seing na refuge, tuk purpos to fecht aganis the Romanis, and othir to de maist vailyeantly, or ellis to leif with victory and honour: yit quhen thay saw thair ennimes, with sic multitude of pepill, in sicht, thay changit purpos. Nochtheles, thay junit with maist fury, and faucht lang time with uncertane victory; quhill at last thay wer vincust, and the Scottis and Pichtis put to flicht on the samin maner. Fulgentius wes brocht out of the feild be his freindis, in esperance of better fortun.

The Scottis and Pichtis, eftir this discomfitour, gaderit the residew of thair army, and returnit hame. In this unhappie battall wer slane of Scottis, Pichtis, and Britonis, xxx thousand.

### Chap. Fifteenth.

*Of gret cruelleis done be Severus, Emprioure, aganis the nobillis of Britane. Of his weris aganis the Scottis and Pichtis. How Antonius reparit the Wall of Adriane: and of the Empriouris deith.*



HE Scottis and Pichtis, brokin with this calamitie, send in Ireland, Norway, and Denmerk, for support of freindis, to resist the Romanis; and Fulgentius, on the tothir side, ceissit not to hire all pepill that he micht get for money.

Eftir this battall, the Empriour Severus past throw all boundis of Britane, and slew all the nobillis thair of, quhom he micht apprehend; havand miseratioun onelie on the commonis, for thay did no offence, bot followit thair maisteris. Als sone as he had reparit



all dammagis done be negligence of febill captanis, he retournit to York; and left his army in thair winter schelis.

In the nixt simer, the Scottis and Pichtis, seand na support come fra Ireland, set thaim erar to defend thair awin, than to invade thair ennimes. Fulgentius, with the Britonis that stude at his opinioun, in esperance of better fortoun, fled to the Scottis and Pichtis.

Sone efter, Severus, Emprioure, rasit his campe, and come beyonde the wall of Adriane: throw quhilk followit ithand incursionis, be sindry chanceis of fortoun; sumtime the Scottis, sumtime the Romanis victorius: for the strait montanis and mossis of the cuntre war gret defence to the Scottis and Pichtis, fleand thairto in time of dangeir, and invading thair ennimes quhen thay saw occasioun. Thus war the Romanis lang taryit fra battall.

In the mene time, the Empriour fell in sic infirmite, that he was constrainit to returne hame, with Getas, his youngest son, and to leif Anthonius, his eldest son, to governe Britane, with all chargis pertenant thairto.

Anthonius, litill astonist of his ennimes, maid his residence, with his campe, nocht far fra Tyne; and commandit the wall of Adriane, quhilk was than brokin down, to be beildit agane, with mony strang touris and bastailyeis rising in it: ilk toure na farrar fra uthir than the sound of trumpat micht be hard. He put, als, trumpatouris in ilk toure, that, be the sound of trumpat, the cuntre suld be warnit to withstand thair ennimes, quhen dangeir occurrit.

Als sone as this wall was reparit with sindry ingine of craftismen, Anthonius set his besines to governe the Romane army in sic maner, that thay micht knaw him, and nocht his brothir Getas, as lord and senyeoure above thaim. Bot Getas was sa sorrowfull, be compassion of his faderis infirmiteis, that he tuke litil sollicitude of the empire; and seand his fader increis ilk day with mair pine, he solistit the medcinaris to haist his fader to the deith. Quhill at last his fadir, the Emprioure, brokin mair with dolour than ony lang yeris, deceissit; maist vailyeant Emprioure in glore of merciall dedes, that was afore his dayis.

## Chap. Sixteenth.

*How Anthonius slew his brothir Getas, to make himself Empriour.  
How Scotland tuke the faith of Crist, and cunyeit money. Of  
mony nobill Clerkis in sindry partis of the Warld, and of King  
Donaldis deith.*



EVERUS deceissit on this wise, Anthonius, his eldest sonne, solistit the capitanis of Romane army to give onely the empire to him, that he micht succede but ony colleig. Howbeit he culd nocht purches the samin; for thay had baith him and his bruthir in equall affectioun and honouris.

Anthonius, frustrat of his desiris, maid confideratioun with Scottis, Pichtis, and remanent Britonis of Fulgentius opinioun; sine returnit to his moder and brother at London. The moder, desiring to bring hir sonnis to concord, tuke freindis to intercommone on thir debaitis: and efter that scho had aggreit thaim, mair be violence than ony gud luf, scho devidit the empire, with equal honouris, betwix thaim; and departit out of Britane to Rome: berand with hir the powder of thair fader, in ane goldin poke, with mony aromatik odouris. Efter thair cumming to Rome, Anthonius, impatient to have ane fallow equall to him in dominioun, slew his brothir Getas in presence of his moder; and succedit, be his slauchter, to the haill empire. Bot we will returne to our history.

Quhen Donald had reparit all faltis in his realme, and brocht the samin in better estait, he passit the remanent of his dayis in gud peace, be inspiratioun of Crist, our Salviour, Prince, and Lord of peace. For in the time of the said Severus, Emprioure, King Donald send his oratouris to Sanct Victore, the xv Paip fra Sanct Petir, and purchest certane devoit and religius personis to cum in Scotland, to instruct him, his wif and barnis, in the Cristin faith; and to geif thaim the sacrament of baptisme. Than King Donald ressavit the Cristin faith, and all the Scottis on the same maner. The

yeir that Scottis tuke the faith of Crist, our Salvioire, God and Man, was fra his incarnatioun ccciii yeris; fra the beginning of the realme of Scotland, d.xxxiiii yeris; fra the beginning of the world, v.m.cccxcix yeris. And thocht the Britonis tuke the faith of Crist afore us, yit thair has bene ay ane braid difference betwix us and thaim: for efter that thay tuke the faith, thay have sindry times left the samin, be persecutioun of Gentilis; bot we bene evir sicker, but ony roust of heresy, sen oure first beginning thairin, to thir dayis.

King Donald was the first King of Scottis that prentit ane penny of gold or silver. On the ta side of this money was prentit ane croce, and his face on the tothir. The Scottis usit na money, bot marchandice, quhen thay interchangeit with Britonis and Romanis, afore thir dayis; except it war money of the said Romanis or Britonis: as may be previt be sindry auld hurdis and treasouris, found in divers partis of Scotland, with uncouth cunye. For in the yeir of God m.dxix yeris, in Fiffe, nocht far fra Levin, war certane penneis found, in ane brasin veschell, with uncouth cunye: sum of thaim war prentit with doubill visage of Janus; otheris with the stam of ane schip; otheris had the figure of Mars, Venus, Mercurius, and siclike idolis; on otheris war prentit Romulus and Remus sowkand ane wolf; and on the tothir side war prentit S.P.Q.R., quhilk signifyis, Senatus populusque Romanus; that is to say, the senat and pepil of Rome. Siclike, in Murray-land, beside the see, in the ground of ane auld castell, the yeir of God m.cccclx yeris, was found ane veschell of merbill, full of uncouth money; on quhilkis war prentit the image of ane ganar fechtand with edderis: this veschell of merbill was in na les admiratioun to the pepill than the uncouth cunye. Be thir exempillis may be provin that uncouth money hes bene amang us.

At last King Donald, richt illuster in civil and religious werkis, deceissit, the xxi yeir of his regne; and wes buryit be religious men and preistis in ane kirk, efter the maner of Cristin princis, with devoit cerimonyis. His regne come to the time of Alexander Severus, Romane Emprioure.

In the time of King Donald war mony nobill clerkis; as, Ulpianus, the floure of legistis in his dayis; Origenes, ane singular man

of piete and doctrine, with sa properant ingine, that he wald dite fastar than sevin practicianis nicht suffice to write. This Origenes wes efter brocht out of Antiochia, be instance of Mammea, moder to Alexander, Emprioure; and turnit hir efter to the Cristin faith: throw quhilk the Empriour began, nocht allanerly to favoure the Cristin pepill, bot als inhibit ony persecutioun to be maid on thaim; and keptit the crucifix in the maist secret partis of his chalmer. In the samin time was Plotinus, with mony othir clerkis of singular eruditioun, sum Gentilis, and sum of thaim Cristin pepill. This was the first time that the Scottis began to leir theologe and haly writ, be clerkis quhilkis war send be Victor, the Pape, for thair eruditioun, in Albion.

### Chap. Seventeenth.

*Of King Ethodius the Secund; and how the nobillis, finding him unabill to gide the realme, governit the samin be thair auctorite, in gret justice.*



ONALD deceissit in this maner, Ethodius, the secund of that name, sonne to Ethodius the First, was maid king. He was nurist in the Ile of Man, under the wise preceptouris thair of: howbeit, it was uncertane in quhat maneris he wald increse, quhen he was put to liberte; for quhen he was declarit king, and frely deliverit of his preceptouris, he apperit of dull ingine, mair abill to gadder riches be his insaciabill avarice, than to governe ane realme. And becaus the nobillis persavit him of evill governance, thay gidit the realme be thair prudent constitutionis. Gude justice followit; and prudent men put in every schire, baith to punis criminall personis, and to kepe the pepill but ony extorsionis. Sic diligence was maid, that misdoaris war punist, and na man punist bot according to the lawis. It was defendit be the samin, to speke for ony criminall personis in jugement; and he that spake for the said personis war reput as participant with thair crime.

Attoure, quhare ony trubill apperit be seditioun, the samin was haistely mesit.

The Britonis levit al this time in gude peace, under tribute of Romanis; and durst pretend na rebelloun aganis thaim: for Severus, Emprioure, tuke sic pleggis of thaim afore his deith, that thay war constranit to leif in peace. Siclike, the Scottis and Pichtis, during the time of Ethodius, nothir did nor tuke injure of Romanis nor Britonis. Quhill at last King Ethodius was slane be his gard, the xvi yeir of his regne, becaus he was our mekill gevin to avaricious gadering.

And sa endis heir the Fift Buke of thir Croniklis.



# The Sext Buke.

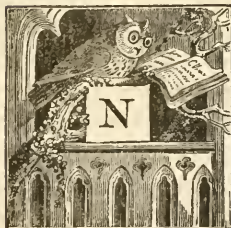
---

## HEIR BEGINNIS THE SEXT BUKE OF THE CRONIKLIS OF SCOTLAND.

---

### Chap. First.

*How Athirco was maid King of Scottis. How the nobillis conspirt aganis him, for his cursit tyrannyis ; and how he slew himself be disperation.*



Ocrr lang efter the slauchter of Ethodius, the nobillis convenit to publik counsall, and maid Athirco, sonne of Ethodius afore deceissit, king : and thocht he was young, yit he was dispensit be the nobillis, notwithstanding his age. He apperit, in the beginning of his empire, prudent and gratius to his subdittis; deliting in doctrine of letterit men, sic as knew the haly writ, or the history of his progenitouris. He was weill exercit in wersling, and all othir corporall exercition cuming be ingine or strenth of body ; and sa liberal, that he tyistit the pepill to his favoure : and yit he grew nocht in virtew as he grew in age ; for efter that

he had rounge viii yeris, he become ilk day mair unplesand, and ay the mair vicious, that he procedit in yeris; like ane monsture, degenerat fra al honest exercitionis; gevin to unsaciabill avarice; and doing ilk thing mair be ire or dredur, than be benivolence or gud counsal. Thus tint he, be avarice, al the freindis that he conquest afore be his liberalite: and nocht onely was he involvit with thir crimes, bot with all kind of corruppit vice and lust that micht make him effeminat; and tuk sic delite in singaris, sportouris, and menstralis, that he eschamit nocht to pas in sicht of al the pepill, playing on ane flute.

The nobillis thought unworthy to be governit be sic ane monsture, that desirit erar to schaw him ane fidlar than ane virtuous prince: and war commovit, eik, that young men, be his wikit exemplar, war ilk day mair drownit in lust, to the dammage of thair commoun weill, and laik of justice; seand thair king sa involvit with every kind of vice, that he tuke na solicitude of the governance of his realme, bot gaif occasioun ilk day mair and mair aganis him.

Than was in Argyle ane man of gret auctorite, namit Nathalak, quhilk had two douchteris of excellent beawte. Athirco, advertist of thaim be his corruppit rutouris, ceissit nocht quhill he had deflorit thaim baith; and quhen his lust was saciat, he causit his mischevous rebaldis to fulye thaim on the samin maner. Nathalak, herand thir cruelteis done to his dochteris, seirchit his ingine be quhat way he micht best revenge the samin: and in the mene time he maid consolatioun to his douchteris, knawing weill thair bodyis mair violat than thair mindis. On the morrow, he convenit his freindis to ane counsal, and complanit hevily the defloration of his dochteris: incontinent, all his allia and freindis ruschit to harnes, and maid solempne votis to punis this tyrane for his demeritis. On the morrow, mony of al the nobillis assistit to thair opinion; and com to Dounstafage, quhare this vicious king remanit for the time. The nois and ratling of armit men maid na litil effray amang the commonis, at thair first cuming: nochtheles, fra the caus wes manifest of thair assemblance, the pepil gaderit fast out of all partis to assist to thaim. Few was than in that army, that thocht nocht baith this tyrane worthy to be degradit of auctorite, and punist to the deith.

Athirco, advertist of this conspiracy, was sa astonist, that he wist nocht quhat was to be done: yit he gaderit the pepill, that he nicht rais for that time, and went forthwart with displayit baner; traisting that his nobillis, fra his baner war displayit, suld geif bakkis: and quhen he fand thaim lital affrayit, and his awin company havand him in contemptioun for his unhappy dedis, he raif of his coit armour, and maid him with all diligence to fle in the Ilis, to eschew the dangeir appering. Incontinent, the pepill, that was arrayit to fecht in his opinioun, war randerit to Nathalak, becaus he left thaim in that extreme dangeir.

Athirco, in this maner discomfist, gat ane bait to pas in the Ilis; bot he was drevin agane, be contrarius windis, to the land, quhare his ennimes war: and quhen he saw na way to eschaip, he slew himself, the xii yeir of his regne, in the iv yeir of Valeriane, Empriour. This Valeriane maid ane miserabil end, howbeit he had na les experience in morall doctrine than chevelry: for he was tane be Sapore, King of Pers, and his army discomfist; and eildit in sa miserabill servitude, that Sapore maid ane stule of his bak, to leip on his hors.

## Chap. Second.

*How Nathalak usurpit the crown, and persewit all the linnage of Athirco with gret cruelteis; and finaly, was slane be his familiar servand.*



ATHIRCO slane in this maner, his brothir Doorus, havand litill confidence in the nobillis, fled with Findok, Carance, and Donald, the sonnys of Athirco, in Pentland; dredand to be invadit be Nathalak. And as he dred, sa followit: for Nathalak send his traist servitouris in Pentland, baith to sla Doorus, and thir thre sonnys of Athirco. Thir men, that war send to this effect, slew ane man nocht unlik, in habit, visage, and yeris, to Doorus. Nathalak, traisting Doorus, as he belevit, slane, convenit his nobillis to ane counsall; and efter that he had brocht

ane buschement of armit men to fortify his desiris, he said on this maner: “ I am rejosit, gud freindis, of the recent slauchter of “ Athirco, quhilk he maid be just punitioun on himself. Nane is, “ I beleif, amang yow, nocht knowing the motive and just occasion “ of our rebellious aganis him. Now sall it be your part to concurre “ with me, erar to revenge the cruelteis be him done, than to suffer “ the samin proceid ony forthir. Howbeit his slauchter be schame- “ ful and odious, ye ar innocent thair of; and hes victory but ony “ blude. The treason wrocht be this odious tyrane was na les re- “ pugnant to your singular than common weill: nochtheles, the “ samin is punist condignely, as he deservit, sen he was burio to “ himself mair shamefully than we might devise. Necessar it is “ to punis the invasour of the common weill; for our eldaris pu- “ nist the treason of Durstus and Ewin, efferring to thair demeritis: “ siclik, the cruelteis of Lugtak war nocht lang unpunist. Mony “ otheris wicket princis hes bene amang us, and ay put down, fra “ thay war injurius to the common weill. Now suld ye nocht “ only geif thankis to the Eternal God, that hes deliverit yow, youre “ wiffis and barnis, fra tyranne of Athirco; bot to take degeist “ advisement, be quhat way al otheris tyrannis, in times cuming, “ may be maist esalie eschewit. Bewar, I pray yow, to suffer ony “ of Athircois linnage to regne above yow: othirwayis ye sal be “ uterly destroyit, for the hatrent thay bere aganis yow; or ellis “ constrainit to seik a new habitatioun, your guddis confiscat, and “ de in misire.”

Thir wourdis movit mony of the nobillis to his opinioun; otheris understude his dissait, and war richt sorrowfull that the sonnis of Athirco suld be disherist: for thocht thay war gottin be ane wekit fader, thay maid na offence; and sen thay war just heritouris, outhir suld the crown be gevin to thaim or sum of thair blude, that it might remane haill to thaim at thair perfite age. Utheris, that war corruppit be Nathalak, thocht expedient nane of Athircois linnage to succede, for causis afore rehersit; and declarit all his sonnis rebellis, and ennimes to the common weill: syne ordanit Nathalak to be king. The residew of the nobillis, constrainit mair be force than ony kindnes, assentit thairto.



Nathalak, maid king in this maner, tuke the aithis of fidelite fra his nobillis, in presence of the messe; and went to Dounstafage. And to stabill the realme in mair securite, he gaif his guddis, with gret liberalite, amang thaim that he suspekkit. And efter that he had conquest thair benivolence, he began to do sindry thingis pertenand to ane gud prince. He schew, eik, how he tuke the charge of the empire for na proffet to himself, bot onely to make the nobillis of the realme different fra the commonis in honour and riches; and that men of vile and obscure linnage may knaw thaimself thirllit to servitude of the nobillis. Always, sa lang as he governit the realme in honest constitutionis, few war repugnant to him: nochtheles, unstabill fortoun brocht all his felicite unto ane drery fine; for within ane schort time efter, he tuke ane woman be adventure, quhilk usit to pas betwix the nobillis and Athircois sonnis; and fand sic writingis with hir, that he understude perfittly Doorus, quhome he traist slane, on live, with all the sonnis of Athirco: throw quhilk he wox sa tene, that he gart drown this woman nocht far fra the place quhare scho was takin, and kepit the writingis secret, quhil he saw his time; and finallie, slew all the nobillis quhom he suspekkit be thir letteris.

The freindis of thir nobillis, quhilkis war slane in this wise, ruschit haistely to harnes, to revenge thair slauchter: and sa this Nathalak, traisting to make the crown sicker to him and his airis be slauchter and tyranny, maid it maist unsicker.

Als sone as he understude his nobillis conspirit aganis him; be counsall of his familiaris, he fled in the north partis, to gader ane army out of Murray and Ros, to dant this rebellion. At last, seand himself frustrat of support, he turnit him to wichis, divinouris, and spaymen, to inquire quhat suld be the end of his life; or gif ony dangeir war approcheand to him be occult hatrent of his familiaris. To dres this mater with mair diligence, he send ane of his maist tender and secret servandis, namit Murray, to Comkill, quhare ane crafty wiche was dwelland for that time. This Murray, efter his cumming, demandit the wiche of every point in ordour, as he was commandit: and scho, be craft of necromanchy, gat knowlege of all his petitionis, and said, "The empire of King Nathalak sall have ane "haisty and miserabill end, be ane of his maist familiaris." This



Murray, nocht content of sa general responce, prayit hir to schaw his name in speciall, that suld sla the king: scho answerit, “Thou “sall sla him.” Than this Murray began to chide with the wiche, saying, “Thow can devine nocht, bot sayis as thow pleis, be flattery “or malice. Thow sall be fals; for I sall refuse na kind of deith, “or I attempt sa odious cruelte.”

This Murray, havand na othir answer, was richt astonist, and maid him to return to the king. Yit afore his cuming to the king, he changit purpos; oft revolving in his mind quhat danger micht follow, gif he revelit the answer, as the wiche schew, to the king; oft musand the gud and the evil thair of, and knowing weill in quhat danger he stude, gif the king tuke ony suspitioun of him. Efter lang musing, he was fully resolvit erar to sla the king, as the wiche schew, than ay to leif in danger of his life. At last, quhen he was cumin to the kingis secrete chalmer allone with the king, he began, be lang circumstance, to schaw the wondrous slichtis and operation of this wiche. In the mene time, the king was sa trublit be flux of wambe, that he was constrainit haistely to pas to his eis. Als sone as this Murray saw the king at quiet, he pullit furth his dageir, and drave the king to the hart, suspekand na thing les than sic treason, and kest his body down in the closet; sine stall away be ane private postrome, and was the first man that schew the deith of the king to his conspiratouris.

This end maid Nathalak, the xi yeir of his regne; fra the incarnation, cc.lii yeris: in the time of Galienus, the maist febil Empriour that was afore him; for in his time, xxx tyrannis invadit the commoun weill of Rome with gret afflictionis, but ony resistance in the contrar.

## Chap. Third.

*Of King Fyndok ; and how he dantit the Ilis, and was slane be twa men thairof.*



ATHALAK, the tyrane, slane on this maner, the nobillis send this Murray in Pentland, to bring the thre sonnis of Athirco to Dounstafage ; and the eldest of thaim, namit Fyndok, ane lusty and vailycant prince, was maid king. He kepit gud peace with his nichtbouris, the Romanis and Britonis ; and conquest freindis mair be benivolence, than ony feir of minassing. Bot, as oft fallis amang us, lang peace intertenit with uncouth pepill, generis civill contentionis amang ourself.

Donald of the Ilis, to revenge the slauchter of Nathalak, come with ane gret power in Murray and Ros, to the gret heirschippis and slauchter of the pepill ; becaus thay favorit the slaaris of Nathalak, his freind. Fyndok, to punis thir attemptatis, come haistely in the Ilis, and faucht with Donald, and put him to flicht. Donald, discomfist in this maner, fled to the sees, quhare he fand ane bait ; and enterit with sic multitude of folkis, that scho sank within ane mile to land, and all the pepil in hir perist. Howbeit the men of the Ilis war brokin be this chance of battal, thay ceissit nocht fra thair undantit malice ; bot chesit Donald, quhilk was sonne to Donald afore perist, to be thair capitane ; and invadit the cuntre with mair trubil than afore.

Fyndok, to punis thir conspiratouris, returnit in the Ilis, and slew all that war apprehendit of thair opinioun ; syne kest down the strenthis of the cuntre, that na refuge sall remane at thair returning. Donald, afore the kingis cuming, fled in Ireland ; and efter the kingis departing, returnit in the Ilis : and seand the cuntre heryit, and his freindis slane, he kest him to do the thing be slicht, that he nicht nocht do be force ; and send ane messingeir, as he had bene penitent of all offence, to Fyndok, and desirit grace. The king, movit of piete, condescendit to thir desiris : sa the said Donald

come, with the principal movaris of this rebellion, but wappinnis, to Dounstafage, to underly his will.

Donald, nocht content to have peace in this maner, chesit erar to underly the chance of fortun, than the kingis will : and thairfore, to complet the treasonabil purpos be him devisit, he send two men of subtile ingine to Dounstafage, to await sum ganand time to sla the king. Thir two men fenyeit thaim gentillmen of the Ilis, and ennimes to Donald : and at thair first cumming, thay gat litill credence ; bot at last, be menis of Carance, the kingis brothir, thay war admittit to the kingis presence, and maid sa familiar, that thay war deput be the king to sit baith on his privat and publik materis. At last, quhen thay persavit Carance set in slauchter of the king, to conques the crown, thay opinnit thair mind to him ; and he na thing suspendit thair purpos, bot with large promes tyistit thaim mair to the samin.

Within schort time efter, the king went to ane hunting, beside Dounstafage, to sla ane wolf ; and sat down on ane mote, nocht knowing how thir limmaris war set for his slauchter. At last, quhen the faid had brocht in the wolf afore the houndis, the skry arais, and ilk man went to his gam. Thus wes the king left his alone, but ony cumpany except thir two Ilis men. Than ane of thaim began to hald the king in talk, quhill the tothir tratourusly come behind him, and drave him throw the body with ane hounting staffe. Als sone as thir tratouris had slane the king, thay left the staf stikand throw his body. The huntaris returning fra thair game, and finding the king slane, followit sa fast on his slaaris, that thay war baith takin, and demandit, be scharp punitioun, for quhat occasioun thay slew the king. Thir tratouris, with spreit litill affrayit, confessit pertly the crime, schawing how thay war instruckit be Donald of the Ilis, and Carance, to sla the king. And quhen thay had discoverit the treason, as said is, thay war baith put to maist terribill deith.

King Fyndok was slane, the x yeir of his regne, quhillk was in the time of Floriane, Empriour. His body was buryit efter the use of Cristin princes, with gret lament of pepil, in ane riche sepulture, nocht far fra Dounstafage.

## Chap. Fourth.

*How Carance was banist for his brotheris slauchter ; and Donald the Secund maid King. Of his deith ; and of sindry nobill Clerkis.*



ARANCE, the secund sonne of Athirco, herand the treason sa manifestly confessit be the slaaris of Fyndok, fled in Italy, quhair he wan gret fame and honouris in the weris of Diocesiane and Aurelius, Empriouris : as we sall eftir schaw. Fyndok, slane in this maner, his brothir Donald, the secund of that name, and thrid sonne to Athirco, wes maid king. This prince wes takand avisement of his nobillis, be quhat maner he micht maist esalie revenge the slauchter of his brothir Fyndok : quhen suddanlie come tithingis, that the said Donald of the Ilis wes cumin in Ros, and invading the pepil thairof with heir-schippis and crueltis.

King Donald movit for thir attemptatis, come haistelie in Murray with ane certane chosin men : and commandit be generall proclamatioun, under pane of deith, al fensabill men to follow him, but ony tary. At his cumin in Murray, becaus he wes bot ane few nowmer, he partit his army at ane gret strenth, to abide the cuming of the remanent army.

Donald of the Ilis seing the king of small power, tuke purpos to jeoperd him to the chance of fortoun : and, but more tary, he come with sa scharp battall on the king, that the king micht nocht use his ordinance of bowis and speris, bot constranit haistelic to fecht with swerdis. Followit, ane terribill and scharp bargane. Quhil at last, King Donald, ourset with gret multitude of pepill fechtand aganis him, wes tane, with xx men of his army, and iii thousand slane. King Donald finalie tuke sic malancoly, that he deceissit ; the thrid day eftir that he wes tane, in the first yeir of his regne.

In thir dayis wer mony clerkis of singulare eruditoun : as, Quintus Tertulianus, that wrait mekil aganis the errouris of Gentilis : Pylocratis, Bischop of Ephesei ; in quhais time wes gret contentioun

concerning the cerimonis of Pasche : Cipriane, oratoure, quhilk renuncit the errouris of gentilis, and become Cristin ; and eftir, wrait sindry bukis for the eruditoun of Cristin pepill.

### Chap. Fifth.

*How mony haly men war martyrit for the faith of Crist. How Donald of the Ilis, the thrid of that name, usurpit the Crown, and was slane be Craithlint.*



HE Cristin faith sufferit gret persecutioun at this time. Mony haly men and wemen martyrit : as, Cipriane, Sextus, Laurence, Hipolitus, Barbara, Cecilia, Agatha, with mony otheris, throw tyranny of Decius, Empriour. And in this time the Scottis began to be richt profound in theologie and haly writ, be doctrine of certane monkis quhilkis wer callit, in thay dayis, Culdei ; that is to say, the honoraris of God : for than al priestis that honorit God war callit Culdei. Thir prestis, be general vocis, chesit ane bischop, to have auctorite and jurisdiction above thaim ; and he wes callit the Bischop of Scotland. Bot we will return to our historie.

Eftir deith of King Donald, gret truble followit in the realme ; for Donald of the Ilis had sa mony nobillis tane in this last battall, and held thaim in sic captivite, that nothir thay, nor thair freindis, durst attempt ony thing aganis his desiris : throw quhilk he tuke the crown, and nocht onlie habandonit all the cuntre, bot thirllit the nobillis to his assistance. Howbeit, thay lay ay in wait to sla him, quhen time and place nicht appeir. Donald, knawin thair hatrent aganis him, tuke sic feir of his life, that he gaif na man credit ; bot, as the use of tyrannis is, had every man in suspitioun and dredour. Thus grew he, ilk day, more terribill and odius to his pepill, and governit the realme with na better yeil than he gat it. At last, his dredour procedit sa far, that he durst cum in na opin place but gard of armit men about him, with halbertis and axis ; and inhibit, that ony othir man beir wappinnis saiffing his awin gard. Finalie, he



culd nocht be satisfyit in his minde, quhill he had slane all thaim that he suspekkit, and confiscat thair guddis, in favour of thame that assistit to him ; intending, as ane bludy monstoure, to conserve the crown with siclike cruelte as he gat it. He slew als mony othir nobillis, be vane causis, to promove men of vile and obscure linnage to riches and honouris, but ony sicht to virtew : and rejosit in na thing sa mekill as to gener frequent seditionis amang his subdittis ; traisting, be thair seditioun, to have felicite ; and, be thair concord, to have trubill in his crown.

It wes said, this cruell tyrane leuch nevir bot quhen he hard discord and slauchter of his nobillis : and als sone as he hard the same, he confiscat all thair guddis, but ony sicht to wrang or reason : and said oftimes, amang his familiaris, Na sicht micht be mair plesand to him, than to se men murdir othir ; attour, the slauchter of nobillis and riche men ar richt necessar to the tranquillite of all realmes, becaus thay ar ennimes baith to the king and commoun weil.

And quhen this tyrane had rounge xii yeris in maist cruelte above the pepill, but ony titill, he come to Enverlochte, with purpos to pas in the Ilis ; bot he wes slane, the first nicht he come thair, be Craithlint, sonne to King Fyndok, afore reheirsit, the xii yeir of his regne. Craithlint, eftir the slauchter of this tyrane, schew to the nobillis how he had put down the tyrane, Donald of the Ilis : restit, thairfore, ganand occasioun to revenge the gret oppression and crueltis done so mony yeris be his unhappy counsalouris. The nobillis, glaid of this tyrannis slauchter, ruscht haistely to harnes, and slew, that samyn nicht, cc of the principall assistaris to his opinioun, and the remanent chasit in Athole ; quhilkis wer all slane sone eftir, be the pepill, quhen thay wer advertist of Donaldis slauchter.

## Chap. Sixth.

*Of King Craithlint ; and how the Scottis and Pichtis fell in contention be thair hunting, and faucht with gret slauchter on all sidis.*



ONALD, the tyrane, slane in this maner, the crown wes restorit to the blude of Athirco ; for Craithlint, son to Findok, becaus he slew this last tyrane sa vailyeantlie, wes maid king. Craithlint, glaid of this felicite, gaif thankis to his subdittis ; and detestit, be lang orison afore the counsal, the tyranny of Donald of the Ilis, usurpar of the crown, but ony titill ; and giding the samin with treason, falset, reif, and slauchter of nobillis : and exhortit the pepill, sen this tyrane, be his prudence, wes distroyit, to rejoyse, and to suffir nane of the said Donaldis blude on live, in aventure thay nuris sic displeour to thaimself, be thair non advertence, as sum time did King Donald, fechtand unwarly with the said Donald of the Ilis : quhairthrow, the nobilite of Scotland was oppressit XII yeris with sic tyrannys, that na man micht resist the samin. And for thir reasonis, he desirit thaim to assist to him to repare all oppressionis done be cruelte of the said Donald of the Ilis : quhilk thingis beand done, all materis micht succede, within schort time, as thay desirit.

The nobillis, na les movit be his excellent beawte, and lustines of péron, than be his wordis, swore to take his part in al materis. Nocht lang efter, al the linnage of Donald Ilis was socht in all partis, and slane, but ony difference of thair estait.

Sic thingis done, Craithlint chesit wise and prudent men to do justice throw al boundis of his realme ; syne past, with ane certane his nobillis, to the montanis of Granyebene, to pas his time in hunting. In the mene time, come to him, the ambassatouris of Thelargus, King of Pichtis, schawing him rejosit, that the tyrane Donald of the Ilis was slane, and the crown restorit to the native blude ; and desirit, thairfore, the auld band of peace to be renewit, for the

weill of baith thair realmes. Thir desiris war plesandly grantit, and the ambassatouris honorably depeschit.

Nocht lang efter, certane nobillis of Pichtis come to hunt with the king in Granyebene. The Pichtis, in thair hunting, stentit strang nettis on lesuris and medois, and drave the hertis apone the nettis with thair hun'lis: and quhen the beistis eschapid, thay cloithit thaim with branchis and levis of treis, like stalkaris; sine slew the deir with braid arrowis and dartis, quhen thay war lyand wery. The Scottis, na thing content of this game, becaus it was contrar thair lawis; gart remove thair nettis, and hunt on thair maner, takand the pray be swift houndis allanerly. The Pichtis, seand thair houndis of les reputatioun than the Scottis, baith in bewte, swiftnes, lang renk, and hardiment; desirit ane certane of every kind of houndis to be gevin to thaim, that the samin micht be bred amang thaimself. And quhen thay had gottin every kind thairof gevin to thaim, as thay desirit, thay stale ane certane houndis, and went hame with the samin, but ony advise of Scottis. Amang thir houndis tane, as said is, be thir Pichtis, was ane quhite hound, plesand, and mair spedy than ony othir, quhom Craithlint had in maist delite. The maister of huntis, astonist throw the wanting of this hound, follow-it sa scharply, that he fand the samin; and was sa fervent in recovering thairof, that he was finaly slane.

The skry arrais efter this slauchter, and maid the nobillis and commonis of Scotland to returne in maist fury to revenge the same. The Pichtis, on the samin maner, gaderit on the tothir side, with na les fury to resist: throw quhilk followit ane haisty and mischevus battall, with gret slauchter on ilk side; nane of thaim knawing the motive nor occasion thairof. In this unhappy bergane wer slane, LX Scottis gentilmen, with gret nowmer of commonis; and of Pichtis mo than ane hundreth.

The fame of this unhappy battall, divulgat in the cuntre, movit the freindis of thaim that war slane, to seik vengeance with mair hatrent than afore. Thus gaderit thay agane on al sidis, and faucht, but capitane, baner, or ordour of chevelry, neir to the uter distruction of thaim baith. Always the Scottis war discomfist, MMM of thaim slane, and MM Pichtis.

Be this slauchter, thir two pepill, that was sa lang confiderat to-gidder, fra the time of Fergus, the first King of Scottis, to thir dayis, ay rising under ane blude, amite and kindnes; grew in maist hatrent aganis otheris, for ane sponk of small occasioun of unkindnes; throw quhilk nane of thame apperit to ceis fra uter extremioun of othir. Followit, sa mony bludy incursionis, day and nicht, that na houssis, nor respect of age, nicht be defence or refuge contrar thair cruelte and slauchter on athir side.

### Chap. Seventh.

*How Carance, brothir to Findok, returnit out of Italy, with gret riches, in Albion. How he conquest Westmureland, and maid peace betwix Scottis and Pichtis.*



HELARGUS, King of Pichtis, richt agit, and nere consumit be yeris, was sorowfull for this contention falling betwix the two pepill sa lang confiderat, cumin be sud-dane pertinacite of undantit personis: and send his oratouris to Craithlint, schawand him na les displesit for the slauchter and trubill falling to Scottis, than to his awin pepil; for the same tendit to the dammage of baith thair commoun welis: attoure, na crime nicht be impute to him; for he nevir consentit thairto. And sen the said trubill was cumin mair be privat than publict auctorite, he thought that pepill sa lang confiderat, suld put end to thair weris, and have peace with othir: for, gif thay perseverit with ire and hatrent aganis othir, nocht sal follow bot uter ruine of baith thair realmes, and the samin to fall in pray to Romanis. Forthir, he was reddy to repair al offence and injuris done be his pepil to Scottis; and desirit to have peace, that baith the pepil nicht erar returne to concord, for defence of thair realmes, than to perseveir in battallis, to the finall eversion of thaim baith.

The Scottis war sa impacient for the recent slauchter maid on thaim be Pichtis, that thir oratouris nicht skarsly purches licence to schaw



thair message. Nochtheles, thay gat finaly presence, and schew thair desiris to Craithlint, in maner afore rehersit.

It was answerit be King Craithlint, that na thing nicht cum sa displesand to him, as suddane trubill falling amang thay pepil, quhilkis hes bene so lang confiderat togidder in amite and blude. And thought peace war mair plesand to his pepill than battall, yit, the recent slauchter is sa deip ingravin in thair breistis, that thay refuse to gif peace. Nochtwithstanding, he wald gif, of his awin auctorite, thre monethis trewis; that the nobillis of baith thair realmis may be profoundly resolvit to pas and repas, to decerne quhat is to be done.

The trewis, tane in this maner, war plesant to the King of Pichtis, beleving thairthrow to put ane end to thir debaittis, and to all displesouris following be the same. Yit, nochtwithstanding thir trewis, sindry incursionis war maid on athir side.

Qubill sic thingis occurrit betwix Scottis and Pichtis, Carance, the second brothir to Findok, quhome we schew banist afore for his slauchter, wan gret honouris in Italy. This Carance, efter his proscriptioun, was ane man of armis in the Romane weris, howbeit nane knew his nobil blude; and wan sic fame be his manheid and proues, that na capitane was repute mair worthy to haif chargis be the Empriour.

Nocht long efter this, Carance was send be Dioclesiane, Empriour, with ane flote of schippis, to defende the costis of Normandy and Picardy fra injure of Saxonis, Franchemen, and othir pirattis, quhilkis invadit the samin with frequent injuris. At his cuming, he wald nocht jeopard him aganis his ennimes, quhil thay war ladin ful of riches and guddis; to that fine, that fra the pray war tane, he nicht be enricht thairwith. Yit, becaus he nothir deliverit the pray thairof to the Empriour nor his capitanis, he was haldin suspect, and persewit to the deith. Als sone as Carance understude the Empriour movit with sic hatrent aganis him, he pullit up salis, and come, with his weirmen and riches, be the Ireland seis, in Westmureland, ane part of Britane nocht far fra the landis of Scottis and Pichtis, traisting to have sum rescours of thaim aganis the Romanis. Sone efter, he set his army on land, and with smal difficulte gat all the pepil thairof randerit to him. Sic thingis done, he send his ora-



touris to Craithlint, his nepot, schawand, thought he was banist for suspitioun of the slauchter of his brothir Findok, be invy of wikit personis, and brocht in gret misery and trubil thairthrow ; yit he was innocent thairof, and had governit him sa wisly, efter sindry chargis gevin to him be the Empriour, that he was send with ane flote of schippis to pecify the occiane seis ; and, be the samin, hes won gret honour and riches. Yit, becaus the Empriour was movit aganis him be invy of detractouris, he was cuming with sic army and riches in Westmureland, that he hes brocht the inhabitantis thairof to his opinion. Thus had he ferme esperance, gif the Scottis and Pichtis wald concur with him, to ding the Romanis out of Albion : for the power of Romanis was daily wastit in Britane ; and sa gret rebellion maid aganis thaim in all partis, that thay micht send na support in Britane. Thus micht the Scottis and Pichtis have ane ganand time to ding the Romanis out of Britane, and to kepe him, thair native blude, in the empire thairof ; swa thay wald remove all hatrent and sedition risin amang thaim, and have peace with othir.

Craithlint thocht the kindnes of his eme Carance nocht to be refusit, seand him cuming in Britane with sa gret pissance, and reddy to support him in all dangeris ; and thairfore answerit to thir oratouris, that he, mony yeris gone, had foryet all offence, gif ony was maid to his fader, and rejosit nocht litill of the present felicite falling to his eme Carance ; and wald fulfil his desiris, sa far as he micht, at al pointis, aganis the Britonis, gif he micht have peace of Pichtis. And thocht he micht have nane, he suld send in his support, ane cumpany of chosin men ; bot his self behuvit to abide at hame, for defence of his realme aganis the said Pichtis.

Carance, glaid of this answer, stuffit al the strenthis of Westmureland ; and come, with ane cumpany of weil accuterit men, to the wattr of Esk, nocht far fra the wall of Adriane, quhare he met Craithlint, and fell on kneis at his first meting ; declaring him, be mony evident reasonis, innocent of Findokis slauchter : and desirit the king to have him in na suspitioun ; for thocht he was bannist, be invy and hatrent, among uncouth pepell, yit he behavit himself in sic maner, that he wes returnit in Albion, baith to the honour of himself and his freindis. Craithlint embrassit his eme Carance maist

tenderly, and prayit him to stand gud freinde, as he suld do to him ; and to leif na thing of his purpose, sen gret honour and proffet, gif fortoun war propiciant, nicht succede be the samin : and promittit, gif the Pichtis weris war nocht impediment to him, he suld nocht faill to support him with his uter pissance. Carance, rejosing of the kingis benivolence, said, he had sufficient army to expell the Romanis out of Britane, and to transfer the crown thair of in the linage of Scottis, gif Scottis and Pichtis wald assist to him.

Finally, be prudent industry of Carance, baith thir two kingis war brocht togidder, accompanyit with ane few nowmer on ilk sid. And to bring thaim to the mair sicker concord, Carance began to remembir thaim, how the auld affinite betwix thaim was commodius : be contrar the violatioun thair of, full of dammage to thaim baith. And rememberit thaim of thair frequent chevelryis, sa lang continewing aganis the fury of Romanis and Britonis, in defence of thair realmis and liberteis, with sic amite and kindnes, that injuris done to ony ane of thaim war repute equale to thame baith. For thir reasonis, it was necessar to thaim othir to haif peace with othir for thair common weill, or ellis to perseveir in battall, to the distruction of thaim baith. Be thir and siclike wourdis, the two kingis war persuadit to haif peace, and to repair injuris on athir side.

Sone efter, VIII newtral personis, of gret prudence, war chosin with baith thair consentis, be quhome the peace was finally roborat, and al injuris plesandly redressit.

## Chap. Eighth.

*How Carance, be support of Scottis and Pichtis, slew Bassiane, Capitane of Britane, and tuke the crown thairof; and of his deith. And how the crown of Britane was restorit to Romanis.*



NOCH lang eftir, Quintus Bassianus, capitane of Britane, rasis his camp to invade the said Carance: for he was cummin to York with thre gret buschements of Scottis, Pichtis, and otheris, his freindis, and gottin the samin randerit to him but ony offence of the inhabitantis. Bassianus, nochtwithstanding the frequent rebellion maid aganis the Romanis in all partis, yit, to revenge the attemptatis done be Carance, rasis his army, and parkit the samin within the nicht, betwix two mossis, on ane strait ground. Carance, nocht x milis fra him, and weil advertist of his doings, come forthwart in the samin maner to gif him battall. On the morrow, Bassianus arrayit his folkis, and exhortit thaim to remembir how thay war to fecht for defence of equite aganis certane fals conspiratouris; specially aganis the treasonabil muredresar, Carance, maist odious creatour to God for his detestabil offence. And forthir, prayit thaim to have respect to the Romane virtew, quhilk hes ben ay of sa gret estimatioun, baith afore immortall goddis and men; that thay might have, be reward of victory, nocht only infinite riches, bot perpetuall loving be thair posterite.

On this othir side, Carance was na les diligent, exhorting his army to battall: saing, Thair ennimes had gret disavantage to fecht with thaim, becaus the maist part of thame wer Britonis, havand na les hatrent aganis Romanis than he hes, and wald leif thame quhen thay saw ony dangeir occurring: and thairfore, victory wes present in thair handis, gif thay, with manheid and prudence, ferslie ruschit on thair ennimes.

Als sone as baith the armyis, be blast of trumpat, junit, the Britonis left the Romanis, and went, as thay had bene fleand, in gud array to the nixt hill. The Romanis, seing thair sidis nakit be

fleing of Britonis, wer astonist, and more mindfull of thair singular weill, than ony glore of victory. Finalie, thay wer sa dejeckit of thair curage, that thay wer put to flicht : on quhom followit Carance, with all his army, in maist hatrent ; and slew thame ay, quhare thay wer tane, but ony miseratioun. Carance, seand sa huge slauchter maid be the chace, callit his folkis, be sound of trumpat, to the standart.

In this battall wer slane, Quintus Bassianus, capitane of Britane, and Hircius, procuratour, with mony othir nobillis and commonis of thair blude. The residew of Britonis, quhilkis wer eschapit fra this battall, wer randerit to Carance ; and gaif pledgis of the noblest that wer in thair realme, nocht within xx yeris, nor above lx yeris, to be his trew subdittis in times cuming. Als sone as the praye of guddis falling be chance of battall wes devidit amang the victorius pepill, Carance past to London : quhair he wes ressavit with gret reverence, and tuke the sceptour and diademe of Britane, contrar the empire of Romanis. Eftir that, it wes maid tributar to Julius, ccc.xlvi yeris.

Carance, crownit in this maner, held mm Scottis and Pichtis continewally about him, in maner of ane gard. The remanent Scottis and Pichtis returnit hame, richit with the spulye of this last battall. Than Carance, in more princely reward of thair laubouris, gaif all the landis lyand betwix the wall of Adriane and Yorke, namit Westmureland and Cumber, to thair perpetuall dominioun. And throw this liberalite, he come in gret hatrent, baith to Romanis and Britonis. And howbeit he wes oftymes assailycit be thaim with scharp battallis, yit he wes victorius at all jornays, and brukit the crown of Britane be crafty prudence ; quhil at last he wes slane, the vii yeir of his regne, be Alectus, Romane capitane. This Alectus, eftir the slauchter of Carance, set his extreme besines, to bring the Britonis agane to Romane lawis. And quhen he saw thay nicht na wayis be brocht thairto, for the cruell hatrent thay had aganis Romanis, he maid laubouris to have thair benivolence, and finalie applaudit to thair opinioun, and tuk the crown of Britane contrar the auctorite of Romanis. And yit he rang with na better fortoun than did Carance ; for he wes slane in the samin maner, be Asclepiadotus, the thrid yeir of his regne : eftir quhais deith, the crown of Britane wes restorit, as it wes afore, to the Romanis.



## Chap. Ninth.

*Of gret cruelte done be Dioclesian, Empriouré, aganis Cristin pepill. How Coell vincust the Romanis, and conquest the crown of Britonis. How he was alliat with Constantius, Empriour; and of the nativite of gret Constantine.*



DIOCLESIANE, Emprioure at this time, be vassalage of Constantius, Maximianus, and Galerius, dantit the world with sindry chances of battall, and wes the first Romane Emprioure that wes adorit with kingly reverence; for, afore thay dayis, the Emprioure usit nocht bot salutationis. This Emprioure causit riche perle and precious stanis to be set in his schone, in mair taikin of insolence than ony ornament. Afore that time, wes na difference betwix Empriouris and uthir pepil, except the rob rial. This Dioclesiane wes sa odious and bludy tyrane, that xviii. men and women wer martyrit be him, for defence of Cristin faith. This cruelte nocht onlie enragit in the eist and west partis of the world, bot als in Britane. And, above thir cruelteis, infinite nowmer of thame wer condampnit to the galionis, winning of querrellis and minis. Be him also wer brint, innoumerable bukis of Cristin faith, contenand the evangellis of Crist, with the actis and epistillis of his appostollis; traisting thairthrow, that the faith of Crist suld all uterlie expire. Throw quhilk, the Cristin faith, ourthrowin with new scurgis and perseverand cruelte, wes neir perist. Mony haly and relligious men, for feir of thir cruelteis, fled in desertis and elraige placis; quhair thay wer exonerit of all truble, and leiffit ane haly life.

This dispitfull tyrane, Dioclesiane, eftir sindry his triumphis maid in Rome, for victoryis of divers pepill of the world, wes trublit, be punishment of God, with mony uncouth infirmiteis, and for slauchter of sa mony innocent pepill. He become furious at Salonas, and slew himself be drink of vennomé, the xx yeir of his regne; to be



exampill, that na man put confidence of felicity and eternall live in vane favour and assentatioun of pepil. Quhil sic thingis wer done be Dioclesian, Coel, discending of the anciant and nobill blude of Britonis, wes solistit be thaim to rebel aganis the Romanis. Asclepiadotus, advertist heirof, met him with the army of Romanis, and othir that stude at his opinioun. Followit, ane aufull and dangerus battall, lang foctin with doutsum victory : bot at last the Romanis wer discomfist, and Asclepiadotus, thair capitane, slane.

Coel, eftir this victory, wes maid king : and to stabill the realme to him in sicker peace, he commandit, be generall edict, all Romanis, and otheris of thair opinioun, to be slane, quhare ever thay might be apprehendit. Constantius, Emprioure, to meit this rebelloun, come in Britane with mony Romane legionis. Aganis quhome went King Coel, with ane army of Britonis, to defend his realme and liberte : nochtheles, he wes vincust, and his army put to flicht. On the morrow, Constantius wes informit be the Britonis, that King Coel wes native prince of Britane, and discending be lang progressioun of the blude riall thairof : and thairfore, be commiseratioun, he send ane herald to him, schawing, gif he wald be randerit, as othir Briton kingis wer afore, to Romanis, he suld be sufferit to remane in his auctorite. King Coel wes this time trubillit with gret infirmite, cumin be surfet cauld and walking, in his weris aganis the Romanis. Constantius, heirand of his infirmite, past to mak him consolatioun. Eftir maist tender embrasing, the said Constantius continewit King Coell in his auctorite ; and tuke his douchter Helene, ane virgine of maist excellent bewte, in mariage. This affinite maid Romanis and Britonis to beleve ane finall end to al thair weris. Sic thingis done, Constantius went to vesy the Romane strenthis in Britane ; and nocht onlic reparit thame quhare thay wer ruinus, bot stuffit thaim with new provisioun of men and vittallis : syne commandit the cieteyanis of every town quhare he come, to be obeisant to King Coell during his life, becaus he wes freind of the senat and pepill of Rome. Schort time eftir, Constantius had ane sonne, gottin be this new affinite, namit Constantine ; quhilk, for his singulare manheid and prudence, succedit, eftir his faderis deith, to the diademe imperiall, and wes the first Empriour that gaif peace to the Catholike kirk ; and dotat it with mony riche templis, landis, and jowellis, be horta-

tioun of the haly Paip, Silvester. Bot we will returne to the marciall dedis that Constantius did afore this time in Britane.

Constantius, eftir the deith of Dioclesiane, havand Britane, France, and Spayne, peacifyit to his empire; gaderit ane army to expell the Scottis and Pichtis out of Westmureland and Cumber, quhilkis wer gevin to thaim afore be King Carance. Eftir his cumming to York, he wes advertist, that Scottis and Pichtis wer stronglie gaderit to resist him. And becaus he knew thay nicht not abid lang togidder, he thoct best to brek thaim be lang tary. And, to the samin effecte, he abaid still with sindry Romanis at York, and commandit the Britonis to pas hame, and be reddey to return quhen thay wer chargit. Finalie, quhen he had remanit certane dayis in York, gevand his extreme deligence to brek the Pichtis fra the Scottis, he tuke sic malancholy, becaus he nicht nocht bring his purpos to gude fine, that he fel in ane hait fever, and, the vii day eftir, deceissit. Quhais powder wes gaderit in ane goldin veschell, with mony smell-and odouris, and brocht with funerall triumphe to Rome.

This Constantius, as we have schawin, wes richt thankfull to Cristin pepil. Nochtheles, sindry Britonis, traisting him to persew the faith of Crist with sic cruelte as Dioclesiane did afore, come in Scotland: quhare thay wer plesandly ressavit be Craithlint, and ordanit to maik thair residence in the Ile of Man, with kirkis ereckit to thaim in Catholik maner, for devine service. Thus wer the auld ritis and cerimonis of Gentilis, quhilkis indurit to thay dayis, abrogat. The first bischop that wes amang thaim in this Ile, wes ane Briton namit Amphibolus: quhilk prechit the evangellis throw all the boundis of Scottis and Pichtis; and nocht onlie removit al vane superstitionis, bot laid the sickir foundement of the Cristin faith. Craithlint, King of Scottis, dotat this kirk, be his singular devotion, with mony jowellis and precious ornamentis of gold and silver; and maid ane alter of copper, craftely closit with lökkis, in quhilk wer gaderit, the rentis and malis of sindry landis, quhilkis wer gevin be the king for sustentatioun of divine service. This wes the first kirk that wes dedicat amang us in Catholik maner; and first sait of bischoppis callit Sodoren, howbeit the reason thairof be tint be roust of yeris, quhilk distroyis every thing. Craithlint, passing his time in this maner, with religious and civil materis, wes ane nobill

prince ; and finalie deceissit, the xxiv yeir of his regne : the first yeir of the empire of gret Constantine, Empriour ; fra the incarnatioun, cccxxii yeris ; fra the beginning of the warld, v.m.ccccx yeris ; fra the beginning of the realme of Scottis, dclv yeris.

### Chap. Tenth.

*How Fincormak was maid King of Scottis ; and Octavius, King of Britonis. How Hercules, Romane Capitane, was slane be Octavius ; and the Romanis vincust. How the Scottis and Pichtis come in support of Octavius, and chasit Traherus in France.*



RAITHLINT deceissit on this wise, succedit, his cosing, Fincormak ; for thay wer brethir sonnys. This Fincormake wes crownit in the first yere of gret Constantine. In quhais time rais gret trubil in Albion : for the commonis of Britane, havand extreme hatrent aganis the tyranny of Caius Hercules, capitane of Britane, chesit Octavius, Prince of Walis, to be thair king. Caius Hercules, to dant this rebellion, rasis his camp aganis Octavius ; bot at last he wes slane, and his army discomfist. Octavius, traisting na thing sa gud as to use his victory with maist rigoure, come to London ; and eftir that he had gottin all the strentthis thair of randerit to him, he slew sindry nobill men of Britane, for thair assistance to Romanis : syne persewit the Romanis to the deith, quhair evir thay nicht be apprehendit.

Constantine, Empriour, to punis this rebellion, send ane vailyeant capitane, namit Traherus, with mony legionis, in Britane ; be quhom Octavius wes put to flicht, and chasit amang the Scottis. Traherus, insolent eftir this victory, chargit Fincormak to send Octavius, the invasour of Romane province, bound to him, to be punist for his rebellion ; uthirwayis he suld be repute ennime to the senat and pepil of Rome. It wes answerit be Fincormak, that he resset nocht Octavius to be injurious to Romanis ; bot allanerlie, for the auld amite betwix Scottis and Britonis. Attoure, it nicht obscure his honour and majeste to condescend to sa manifest prodicion, and ran-

dir the man to his ennimes that socht refuge at him. Forthir, gif Traherus invadit him onelie for that cause, he suld resist the best way he micht; bot yit gud wer, afore he movit weir, to degeistely avise, quhiddir Romanis hes gottin mair schame or honour, mair proffet or skaith, in thair weris aganis Scottis in al times bygane.

Traherus, na thing satisfyit be this answer, come with al his ordinance to York; quhair he wes advertist that Fincormak wes gaderit, with lxx.M Scottis, Pichtis, and Britonis, in support of Octavius: nochtheles, he went forwart, quhill he come in sicht of ennimes. Fincormak, quhen baith the armyis wer arrayit in otheris sicht, send ane herald, inquiring Traherus, quhat movit him, but occasioun of injuris, to invaid the confiderat pepil, as thay wer ennimes to Romanis. Traherus maid litill answer thairto, bot comandit the Scottis and Pichtis to pas haistely out of all landis pertenand to Romanis, and to pay ane yeirly tribute to thair procuratour, as the senat and pepill of Rome thocht expedient; and, but ony more tary, deliver Octavius, to be punist for his conspiration: othirwayis, thay suld have sone experience, quhat foly is to contempne the empire of Romanis.

Fincormak, havand thir chargis at diffiance, come forthwart with his army. Followit sone, ane dangerus battall. Always the Romanis had bene victorius, wer nocht ane multitude of landwart men hapnit to come rinnand doun ane hil, drivand away thair bestial fra dangeir of ennimes; and apperit to the Romanis as thay wer cumin on thair bakkis: and so the Romanis wer finalie discomfist. In this battal wer slane xv.M Albianis, and xvi.M Romanis. The chace continewit be Fincormak and Octavius on the Romanis, quhill thay come to York; quhair the two kingis wer plesandly ressavit be the nobillis of Britane, and Octavius restorit to the crown thairof.

The nobillis of Britane gaif to Fincormak, for his assistance to Octavius in the said feild, all the landis of Westmureland and Cumbe, with clame and kindnes thairof perpetually, and sweir nevir to cum in the contrar thairof.

Traherus, knawing na place sicker to remane in Britane eftir this victory, fled in France.



## Chap. Eleventh.

*How Octavius was put fra the crown of Britane be Traherus, Romane Capitane. How the said Traherus was slane, and Octavius restorit to the crown; and of Fincormakis deith.*



THE Romanis vincust on this wise, ane counsal wes set at York, in the quhilk the nobillis of Britane concludit to defend thair realme and libertie fra injure of Romanis, and to suffir na uncouth blude to beir auctorite, in times cuning, above thaim. Attoure, it wes concludit to extend the marchis of Britane to the wal of Adriane; and to expell the Scottis out of Westmureland and Cumber, nochtwithstanding the aith and promise maid to thaim afore.

Quhil sic thingis wer done in Britane, Octavius come, with x.m Britonis, on the Scottis and Pichtis dwelling in Westmurland; bot at last he wes discomfist, and his army put to flicht.

In the mene time, Traherus, Capitane of Britane, quhilk wes chasit, as we schew afore, in France; returnit, with two Romane legionis and xx.m wageouris, in Britane: be quhome Octavius wes discomfist, and destitute of all support and freindis. Finalie, this Octavius, havand na confidence in the Scottis nor Pichtis, for violatioun of his faith; come to the mouth of Humber, quhair he pullit up salis, and went in Norroway.

Traherus, eftir this victory, ilk day incressit in sic pissance, that the Britonis wer randerit to him: nottheles, he exercit gret cruelties on al the nobillis and commonis of Britan; and finalie, restorit the crown thairof to Romane empire. And quhen he had stablit the realme in this maner; throw corruppit insolence efter sa hie felicite, he become the maist vicious tyrane that evir had ony charge afore in Britane; and invadit the nobillis and commonis thairof with ithand heirschippis and slauchter. Throw thir tyrannis, followit sic rebellioun aganis him in al partis, that he wes finalie slane.



Octavius, heirand the slauchter of Traherus, returnit fra Denmark in Britane; and persewit the Romanis with sic cruelte, that na kirkis nor sanctuaries nicht be refuge to thaim: and maid distribution of his officis and auctoriteis to his freindis and nobillis, as he thocht maist expedient to keip his subdittis in justice, and to defend thaim fra injure of Romanis. And thought seindil ar found men but insolence, quhen thay find felicite efter trubill; yit Octavius was alterit in sic maner, that quhare he was sumtime maist fals and treasonabill in his werkis, he become maist faithfull and nobill prince. And sone efter, he send ambassatouris to King Fincormak, with sindry jowellis, desiring him to have na respect to the offence maid be him aganis the Scottis and Pichtis in times bygane, bot to leif in amite and freindschip with him and Britonis in times cuming: and to haif his sicker kindnes, he was content that Westmureland and Cumber war perpetually annixit to the empire of Scottis and Pichtis, on the samin maner as Carance gave thaim afore to King Craithlint. Mony yeris efter, Octavius governit Britane in gud justice. Quhill at last he was sa brokin with frequent weris, that he randerit all the strenthis of his realme, to have peace with Romanis in his eld; and was content to pay the auld tribute.

Followit sicker peace mony yeris efter, amang the Scottis, Pichtis, and Britonis in Albioun: in quhilk time, Fincormak, richt illuster in glore of chevelry and civill materis, be lang infirmite generit of catare, deceissit, the XLVII yeir of his regne; fra the incarnatioun, CCCLVIII yeris.

## Chap. Twelfth.

*How the heresyis of Arrius wes condemnit. How Ireland tuke the faith of Crist. How Romak, Fethelmak, and Angusiane contendit for the crowne. How Romak was maid King; and slane efter, for his tyranny.*



URING this time, the Cristin faith apperit to rise in gret dignite: nochtheles, the cursit heretik Arrius began to poison it with vennimus doctrine; saying, Crist was nocht the verray Sonne of God, coequall and coeternall to the Fader, bot different fra him in substance. Efter degeist consultatioun, all his opinionis war condemnit in Counsall of Nicia, with mony othir vane errouris, quhilkis I wil not rehers at this time: for I have maid this translation mair for pleseir of lawit men, than ony vane curius clerkis, be quhom all heresyis beginnis.

Ireland, about this time, tuke the faith of Crist, be ane woman of the Pichtis blude, quhilk instruckit the Quene of Ireland in the faith; and scho instruckit hir prince, the king: and sa within schort time, all the regioun thair of tuke the faith. Mony othir pepill, in the eist and west partis of the warld, tuke the faith in the samin maner. Bot we will returne to our history.

Fincormak left behind him two sonnys, Eugenius, of xviii yeris of age, and Ethodius, nocht ane yeir of age. Thir sonnys of Fincormak, for the lawis afore rehersit, micht nocht immediatly succede to the crown; and thairfore ane counsall was set in Argyle, to cheis the king: quhilk day, comperit Romak, Fethelmak, and Angusiane, contending for the crown; for thay war nepottis to Craithlint, gottin on sindry his brethir; al thre nere equal in yeris, freindis, and gudis. Romak clamit the crown as maist nobil; for he was not only cumin of the blude rial of Scottis, bot als of Pichtis, and had thairfore mony of the nobillis assisting to his opinion. Angusiane clamit the crown with consent of Fethelmak, and alledgit he

wes ane man of more reason, experience, and wisdome, than wes Romak; and wes abillar, thairfore, for the ministratioun of the realme.

In the mene time, Romak gaderit ane band of armit men, to sla his two cousingis, traisting the more esalie to succed to the crown. Thus rais na thing bot ire and hatrent amang the thre cosingis; every ane of thaim cruellie set in otheris slauchter, and lauboring to draw moniast of the nobillis to thair opinioun. Alwayis the maist nowmer of nobillis assentit to Angusiane: for Romak wes ane man of mair ferocite than wisdome; be contrar, Angusiane wes more reasonable, havand nocht sa mony subtel and fals slichtis as Romak had. The nobillis, seing thaim abil na wayis to be brocht to concord, tuke final purpos to devide the realme betwix thaim. Yit otheris, more prudent men, thocht the samin unprofitable; for it micht rais perpetual seditioun, in dammage of thair commoun weill.

Finalie, Romak, impatient of lang tary, be birmand desire to have the crown, gaderit ane army of Pichtis; and come with arrayit battall aganis Angusiane, and his othir cosing, Fethelmak. Than Angusiane send his oratouris to the King of Pichtis, praying him to foster na seditioun amang the Scottis and Pichtis, and to solist his cosing Romak erar to concord than battall, sen he micht have all thing according to reason, but ony plee. The King of Pichtis, thinkand thir desiris reasonabil, tuk purpos to returne hame: nochtheles, be evill counsall of freindis, he abaid, and gaif unpleasand answeire. This unplesand answer wes nocht onlie occasioun to the nobillis of Scotland to assist to Angusiane aganis Romak, bot als to have the Pichtis at extreme hatrent. Sone eftir, Angusiane, advertist that Romak lay in wait of his slauchter, gaderit ane army, with purpos erar to end the mater be swerd, than ay to leif in danger of his life. Romak, impatient of lang tary, met him on the same maner. Followit ane sorowfull battall. Nochtheles, Angusiane wes discomfist, and baith himself and his cosing Fethelmak chasit in the Ilis; and finding na securite thair, thay fled in Ireland.

Angusiane dounge out of Albioun in this sort, mony of the nobillis assistit to Romak; and declarit him king. Yit, as the custom

of tyrannis is, he conquest the realme wekitlie, and governit it on the same maner; and had nane familiar with him, bot sa mony as wer ennimes to Fincormak and his sonnys. Sic thingis done, he maid him to vesy all boundis of his realme, doing justice in his maner. This tyranny of Romak beand divulgat throw the cuntre, causit Eugenius and Ethodius, the sonnys of Fincormak, to fle in Westmureland; and thair finding na securite, thay fled to the Ile of Man. Than followit gret truble in Scotland; as proscriptioun, slauchter, and oppressioun on all the nobillis that favorit Angusi-ane, but ony difference of age.

The nobillis, impacient to suffer sic cruell tyrannys, convenit togidder, be secret writingis, to redres al oppressionis and wrangis done be him; syne gaderit ane army with sic diligence, that this tyrane Romak knew nocht of thair assemblance, quhill thay wer cuming on him in ane arrayit battall, within x milis.

Romak, astonist be thair cumming, fled in Pentland: nochtthel-les, he was sa ferslie invadit be ane buschement of Scottis that followit on him, that he was slane, with sindry otheris Scottis of his opinion, the thrid yeir of his regne; his heid borne on ane staik throw al the army.

Mony gentillmen of Pichtis war slane at this time with Romak, sic as favorit his governance, and causit him to rage with gret crueltye on the Scottis.

## Chap. Thirteenth.

*How Angusiane was maid King of Scottis. How Maximus subdewit the Britonis be sindry victoryis. How Scottis and Pichtis invadit othir with set battall. How baith their Kingis war slane, and the Scottis discomfist.*



OMAK, the tyrane, slane in this maner, Angusiane returnit in Albion, and was maid king. Quhill sic thingis war done in Scotland, the Britonis grew insolent be slauchter of Traherus, Romane capitane, and restorit the crowne of Britane to Octavius, quhilk was than far run in aige: throw quhilk thay recoverit baith their munitionis, landis, and liberteis.

Constantius, Emprioure, and sonne to the gret Constantine, send ane vailyeant knight, namit Maximus, in Britane, to dant the Britonis. This Maximus, sone efter his cuming, faucht aganis the Britonis, and put thaim to flicht. Be this victory he was put in esperance to subdew the Britonis, as thay war afore, to servitude.

Octavius, King of Britonis, heirand thir tithingis, tuke sic malancoly, that he deceissit, the thrid day efter; and efter his deith, Octavius, his sonne, fled in the Ile of Man: quhare he remanit with Ethodius and Eugenius, unknowin quhat he was. The Britonis, nocht mekill astonist be this discomfitoure, gaderit ane new army, with mair pissance than afore: nochttheles, thay war vincust, and chasit on the same maner. Maximus, efter thir victoryis, past throw sindry boundis of Britane, and gat mony of the pepill randerit to his opinioun: otheris, quhilkis war repugnant, war put to wraik, and thair strenthis cassin down.

Quhill sic thingis was done in Britane, rais gret trubil in Scotland: for Nectanus, King of Pichtis, to revenge the slauchter of his cosing Romak, wastit the landis of Scotland be sindry incursionis. The Scottis, to resist this violent dereptionis, war constranit to rise in battall aganis the Pichtis. Nochtheles, the Pichtis drew ane gret



nowmer of Scottis, quhilkis war movit for slauchter of Romak, to thair opinioun, and provokit the residew of Scottis, ilk day, to battal. Nochtheles, Angusiane send his ambassatouris to thaim, schawing him desirus of peace, and gevin to the weill of baith the realmes; and desirit thaim to devoid all injuris, and concour togidder in amite, as thair faderis did afore, for defence of thair realmis. At last, quhen Angusiane saw his desiris repellit, that his sleuth suld nocht be occasioun of insolence to his ennimes, he gaderit his folkis, and went furthwart in gud array. Efter mony singulare battallis of vailyeant men, baith the armyis junit, and faucht with gret ire and hatreat on athir side. At last, the Pichtis war discomfist, and mony of all thair nobillis slane. King Nectanus was chasit, quhill he come to Camelon; and sone efter his cumming thairto, he convenit the residew of his nobillis to ane counsall, and complanit, be lang orison, baith the slauchter of his cusing Romak, and the noblis of his realme that war slane with him; and desirit ane new army, to revenge the schameful injuris done laitly be Scottis. The Pichtis, mair set for the kingis foly and plesour, than for thair common weill, concludit ane new army to be rasit aganis the Scottis, out of all boundis under thair empire; and sone efter, thay come with the said army to the wod of Calidon.

Angusiane, richt provident in all his doings, and knowing the Pichtis sa awfully gaderit aganis him, assemblit his folkis out of all boundis of his realme, erar to draw the Pichtis to concord, than to have battall with thaim; for he dred the Britonis, be perswasion of Romanis, to cum in support of Pichtis. And for that caus he send his plesand letteris to the King of Pichtis, praying him to remember the anciant amite and kindnes sa lang continewing betwix the two pepill; and to put end to thair weris, and to geif peace to Scottis, but ony battal, on that samin maner as he war victorius above thaim, sen peace was necessar to baith thair armyis; for Maximus, 'Romane Capitane, was wirkand, ilk day, new attemptatis in Britane, and purposit, als sone as he hes subdewit Britane, to conques baith the realmes of Scottis and Pichtis, efter that thay have distroyit othir with civil weris.

The King of Pichtis, contempning this profitabil counsal, and havand na thing in les estimatioun than peace, rasit his army aganis

Angusiane. On the tothir side, Angusiane arrayit his army: and becaus it was necessar othir to jeopardde him to the chance of fortoun, or ellis to geif backis to his ennimes, with irrecoverable schame; he exhortit his men to have curage, and set asid al dredour, gif thay had ony; remembring the gret spreit and manheid of thair eldaris, that thay may acquite thair deith; and thocht thay faucht with unfortunat chance of battal, that thay de nocht unrevengit of thair ennimes. Attoure, he prayit thaim to be nocht movit, thought thay be now to fecht aganis the pepill that was sa lang confederat with thaim in amite and blude; sen thay gave na occasioun of battal, and hes left na thing undone, that micht have recounsalit thaim to concord: for quhilk thay suld beleve, that God, the luffer of peace, suld favour thaim in thair just defence. On the tothir side, the King of Pichtis ceissit nocht to solist his army to battal. Incontinent, the archearis schot on all sidis; and efter thaim followit men with licht harnes, and schot incredibill nowmer of stanis and ganyeis, with corsbowis and slongis: incontinent, thay junit with speris, axis, and swerdis. Followit ane terribill battall, fouchtin lang time with doutsum victory. At last, Angusiane, seand the victory incline to Pichtis, raif of his coit armoure, and come amang the commonis, quhare he faucht with perseverant hatrent to the deith. The Scottis, traisting thair king erar fled than slane, gaif bakkis; otheris, perseverant with mair obstinat mind, faucht quhill thay war slane: and thocht the victory succedit to the Pichtis, yit it was unplesand to thaim; for baith the kingis war slane in this feild, with infinite nowmer of nobillis and commonis slane on ilk side.

The residew of Scottis and Pichtis, quhilkis war eschapit out of this feild, returnit hame, and waryit thaim that was the first occasioun and motive of battall betwix the two pepill sa lang afore confederit togidder in blude, amite, and freindschip.

### Chap. Fourteenth.

*How Fethelmak was maid King of Scottis; and how he slew Nectane, King of Pichtis; and was slane efter be thair treason. And of mony nobil Clerkis.*



NGUSIANE slane in this maner, Fethelmak, the third nepot of Craithlint, was maid king. He gaderit the residew of Scottis togidder, with litill better fortun than his two cosingis did afore: and in the secund yeir of his regne, he rasit his army to revenge the injuris done be Pichtis; and come in Angus, invading the inhabitantis thair of with gret heirschippis and cruelteis. The Pichtis, rageand in hatrent for thir extorsionis, ruschit in thair maist fury to harnes; and the Scottis, nocht abasit thair of, met thaim in the samin maner, and put baith thair wingis to flicht; sone efter, discomfist the middillward in the samin maner, with gret murdir maid on thaim in al partis. Nectanus, King of Pichtis, brothir to King Nectanus afore rehersit, was brocht out of the feild; and deceissit, the thrid day efter, be wound of ane arrow.


The Scottis, insolent efter this victory, waistit Angus and Fiffe with ithand incursionis. The Pichtis, brokin be this last discomfitoure, set thaim erar to stop the Scottis fra taking of thair munitionis and strenthis be licht berganis, than ony set battal: and to do al thingis with mair prudence, thay chesit Hergestus, ane man of sle and fals ingine, to be thair king. This Hergestus, knawing his pepill sa brokin with continewal weris that he nicht nocht revenge the injuris of Scottis, kest him to do the thing be slicht, that he nicht nocht do be force; and conduit two men of Pichtis to dissimil and fenye thaim Scottis, that thay nicht mair esaly wait ane ganand time to sla the Kinge of Scottis. Thir Pichtis war crafty in casting of dartis; and becaus the King of Scottis tuke delectatioun in that game, thay war maid the mair familiar to him: nocht theles, thay socht ay ane ganand time and place for his slaughter.

King Fethelmak hapnit to pas to Carrik, quhare he was in gret sollicitude all that day. At evin he went to his bed, and commandit ane harpar to sing ane soft sang, to draw him out of hevy materis on sleip. Als sone as he was fallin on sleip, the two Pichtis afore rehersit was convoyit be the harpar quhare he lay, and slew him sleipand in his bed, the thrid yeir of his regne. The wache herand the granis of ane deand man, enterit haistely in the chalmer quhare the king was liand bullerand in his blude: incontinent, thay followit on his slayaris sa scharly, that thay war all tane; and quhen thay had confessit all the maner and circumstance of this treasonabill slauchter, thay war all punist maist cruelly to the deith, and drawin sindry with wild hors. This slauchter of Fethelmak hapnit in the fift yeir of Constantius, Emprioure.

About this time, war mony clerkis profound in every science: as, Victorine, oratoure; Donatus, gramariour, and preceptour to Sanct Jerome; Alcinus and Delphidinis, philosophouris; with mony otheris, quhilkis war our prolixit to rehers.

### Chap. Fifteenth.

*How Sanct Reule brocht Sanct Androwis arme in Scotland; and how the Kirk of Sanct Androwis was dotat be Hergest, King of Pichtis; and of the loving thairof.*

 ANCT REULE, the haly abbot, arrivit about this time in Albion, with Sanct Androwis arme. This Reule was ane monk of Grece, borne in Achaia, and abbot in the town of Patras, quhare mony religious men war obeisant under his cure. He was ane of thaim that was send be Constantius, Empriour, to vesy the blissit reliquies of Sanct Andro. And quhen the said Reule had done his devotioun with maist reverence, he was commandit, be ane hevinly visioun, to take the arme of Sanct Andro, with III fingeris, and III tayis of his fut; and to pas with the samin in the far nuke of the warld, namit Albion. Reule, monist be this visioun, come, with the said reliquies, throw the seis Mediterrane to Portingale; and with huge pine and trubil,



he come throw the Spanye, Franche, and Almane seis, and arrivit in the town quhilk is now callit Sanct Androwis: quhare thay war schipbrokin, and na thing savit except ane few nowmer of haly men, quhilkis come with the said reliquies. Thir tithingis divulgat in the cuntre, causit the King of Pichtis and his pepill to cum with riche offerandis out of all partis, to adore the reliquies of the haly appostill, Sanct Andro. The King of Pichtis with his pepil war ressavit be Sanct Reule and his fallowis, in thair religious habitis, with sangis and ymynis, and othir divine cerimonyis, as afferit. Than Hergestus fell on kneis, and with maist reverence kist thir blissit reliquies, and gaif his palice riall, richely biggit efter the use of thay dayis, to Sanct Andro, Sanct Reule, and otheris his fallowis; and biggit ane kirk, nocht far fra the said palice, dedicat in the honour of Sanct Andro. Men sayis, it is the samin kirk that standis yit in the common kirk yard of the abbay, and was callit, in auld times, the kirk of Sanct Reule; bot it is now callit the auld kirk of Sanct Andro. Hergest dotat this kirk with cowpis, chaliceis, basingis, lawaris, and sindry othir riche jowellis of gold and silver, to remane thair perpetually in the honour of devine service. The posterite of King Hergestus succeding efter him, and the Scottis, quhen the Pichtis was exilit of this realme, hes had Sanct Andro in maist reverence, as patroun of thair realme.

The abbay kirk was dotat efter be King Malcolne the madin, and King Robert Brus, with rentis, landis, and possessionis, mair largely. This abbay was in governance of ane nobil man, Johne Heburne, priour thairrof, in the time of the first compiling of thir croniklis. This priour was ane wise prelat, and decorit this kirk in with mony riche ornamentis. He biggit ane wall of square stanis about the kirk. This wall includis the kirk of Sanct Leonard, quhare the novicis of the said abbay, and uthir scolaris, lernis thair grammer, logik, theology, with mony othir science of naturall and morall philosophy; and hes sic continewal exercition, that mony resolute and profound clerkis risis daily in gret virtew throw the samin. In this kirk, war first preistis callit Culdeyis; bot now in it, ar Chanonis Regular efter the institutionis of Sanct Augustine, gevand thair ingine in continewall exercitioun of letteris, and professioun of thair religioun. Heirfore, gif thow wil have respect to letteral exercition, thow sall find thair generall study in every science: gif thow will



be contemplative, thow sal find thair maist honorabill service of God, with hevinly and delitious sang in maist crafty music: gif thow wil have sicht to magnificence and curious biggin, thow sal find nane of mair honestee nor admiration in Italy, France, or Almany, biggit curiously be this nobill man: quhilk deceissit the yeir afore the cuming of thir croniklis to licht, to na les dammage of commoun weill, than spreding of letteris in this realme. Amang mony othir his honorabill werkis, it is gretumly to be lovit, that afore his deith he maid his nepot Patrik, ane man of singular virtew and eruditoun, his successoure, to compleit the magnificent werkis that he afore began. The yeir that Sanct Reule come with the reliquies of Sanct Andro in Scotland, was fra the incarnation ccclxix.

### Chap. Sixteenth.

*How Eugenius was maid King of Scottis. How Hergest, King of Pichtis, was confiderat with Romanis for distruction of Scottis. How Maximus, Capitane of Britane, invadit the Scottis with gret cruelteis and slauchter.*



ETHELMAK, slane in maner afore rehersit, the nobillis brocht Eugenius and Ethodius, the sonnys of Fincormak, out of the Ile of Man, quhare thay abaid, eschewin the fury of Romak, Angusiane, and Fethelmak: and the eldest of thaim, namit Eugenius, the first of that name, was maid king. Maximus, capitane of Britane, knawing the hatrent betwix the Scottis and Pichtis, na les desirus to distroy thaim baith than to agment the glorie of Romane empire; devisit sic ane subtill slicht, that he micht first distroy the Scottis, and syne the Pichtis. And to wirk this mater with mair crafty slichtis, he send ambassatouris to Hergest, King of Pichtis, schawing him richt sorrowfull for the injuris done to him be Scottis; and desirit, thairfor, to be confiderat with the said King of Pichtis aganis the Scottis: quharethrow it micht happin, that his pepil micht rise in sic pissance, be support of Romanis and Britonis, that thay micht othir thirll the Scottis to

maist vile servitude, or ellis expell thaim, gif thay plesit, out of Albioun, and conquies thair landis and rowmes to thaim and thair posterite. King Hergest plesandly ressavit thir ambassatouris, and gave thankis to God, that send to him support, in sa extreme danger, aganis his cruell ennimes : and said, It plesit him weill to be confiderat with the Romanis, sa thay wald concurre with him and his pepill to revenge the injuris done be the Scottis. Maximus condescendit to thair desiris, traisting the samin to cum to hie felicite of Romane empire.

Nocht lang efter, it was concludit, be convention of Hergestus and Maximus at York, that Pichtis, Britonis, and Romanis, sal be confiderat togidder in tendir amite, and the Scottis to be haldin as ennimes to thaim all. Efter this conventioun, Maximus send ane herald to Eugenius, King of Scottis, chargeand him to redres all skaithis done to Pichtis, and deliver the misdoaris to King Hergest, to be punist at his plesour : uthirwayis, he and his pepill suld be reput as ennimes to the senat and pepill of Rome. Eugenius answerit, **He nevir offendit the Romanis nor Britonis be injuris ;** and thairfore, he belevit the Romanis wald nocht be sa wrangus, as to invade him with battall but reasonabill motive or occasioun. Forthir, he understude the Romanis has nocht gottin sic humanite and kindnes of Pichtis, to move ony weir aganis the Scottis than present, sen thay nevir offendit to Romanis. Always, he was content baith to geif and take redres with the Pichtis ; and thay quhilkis invadis uthir with injuris in times cuming, to be punist as the crime requirit. **Forthir, gif the Romanis, be advise of Pichtis, wald invade him but ony just occasion of battal, he nicht do na thing les, than commend his gud actioun to God, the punisar of wrangis, and do the best he nicht for defence of his realme and liberte : for the Romanis, as weill apperis, ar na les set for exterminioun of Pichtis, than of Scottis.**

Maximus, efter this answer, assemblit ane large army of Romanis, Britonis, and Franchemen, and enterit in Westmureland, ceissing fra na maner of cruelteis on the inhabitantis thairrof ; and garnist all the strenthis of that regioun with Romane sodjouris. And sone efter, he come in Annandale, Galloway, and sindry uthir boundis, exercising gret cruelteis on the same maner.

The Scottis, herand sa huge multitude of pepill assemblit aganis thaim, war affrayit. Nochtheles, seand na uthir remeid, thay come out of all partis of Scotland, be command of Eugenius, with na les manheid than ardent desire to resist thair ennimes, and faucht with Romanis beside the watter of Cree: quhare he was put to flicht, and his army discomfist. Sa gret slauchter was maid on the brayis of this rever, that the same was fillit full of deid bodyis. The Romanis followit sa fast on the chace of Scottis, quhill at last thay enterit in ane new bergane with the men of Argyle; for thay war cumin forthwart to support Eugenius army, knowing na thing of this discomfiture. And quhen thay saw the Romanis follow with sic cruelteis on the Scottis, thay ruschit with terribil vissage, noyis, and rummising, on the said Romanis; and maid sic undemus slauchter on thaim, that the residew of the Scottis, quhilkis war laity diffait, returnit to battall, and chasit the Romanis agane to thair tentis, invading thaim with continuall slauchter, quhill the nicht put end to thair laubour. Thus was the chance of battall variant, the first day, betwix the Scottis and thair ennimes. The Romanis, nocht knowing the counsall of Scottis, howbeit mony of thaim war slane, stud in hovor, nocht knowing quhidder thay wald renew battal in the samin nicht, or abide the day. Yit, to have thaim reddy aganis all chance that nicht follow, thay stuffit thair tentis with maist crafty ordinance. Eugenius seing, on the morrow, his pepill brokin with sic innoumerable slauchter, raisit his tentis within the nicht, and come to Carrik: quhair he tuk lang consultatioun, how he nicht arme him best aganis al chance of battal that nicht follow. Maximus, on the morow, intending to persew the Scottis with new battall, wes advertist of gret seditioun rising in Britane; speciallie amang thaim that dwelt within the Romane provincis. Thir novellis causit him to desist fra his purpos, and returne in Kent. Eftir that, he garnist all the strenhis of Galloway with men, munitionis, and vittallis. Thir wer the dedis of Maximus aganis Scottis in the first yeris.

## Chap. Seventeenth.

*How Maximus returnit in Galloway, to revenge the injuris done be Scottis aganis Pichtis. How Eugenius come with L.M. men, to resist the Romanis, Pichtis, and Britonis. How he was slane, his brothir tane, and his army discomfist.*



AXIMUS, in the yeir following, wes 'sa ithandlie occupyit with this trubill of Britonis, afore rehersit, that he nicht nocht returne to the weris of Scottis. Nochttheles, mony frequent incursionis continewit al the said time betwix his wageouris and the Scottis. At last, quhen the Scottis had assailyeit lang time, howbeit it wes in vane, to recover the strenthis of Galloway; thay past throwe Menteith, Striviling, and Fiffe, and sindry othir boundis of Pichtis, invading the same with sic cruelte, that thay wer left desert. Maximus apperit richt hevvy at thir offencis; howbeit na thing wes more plesand to him, than to heir the Scottis and Pichtis invading othir, to baith thair mischeiffis. Finalie, he come in Galloway, with purpos to pas throw all the remanent boundis of Scottis.

Than wes Eugenius nocht far fra the Romanis, abiding the cumming of his pepill: to quhom comperit, gret confluence of fensabil men and wemen, to the nowmer of fifty thousand pepil, richt desirus to fecht, and criand atanis with huge nois, othir to de, or ellis to have victory; for thay wer cruelly slane in al partis quhare thay nicht be apprehendit be Romanis, but ony mercy or ranson. And, nochtwithstanding thair gret curage, thay wer sumpart astonist, herand the Romanis cumming in thair landis, with more multitude and pissance of pepill, than evir wes sene in ony of thair boundis afore. Yet, otheris havand the Romane tyranny at dispite, wer rased in maist fury, regarding na thing thair life in defence of thair liberte. Than Eugenius, with gret curage, dissimulit his continuance, as he wer affrayit of na thing les than of the Romanis; and devidit his army in thre battalis: the richt wing wes gevin to his



brodir Ethodius; the left wing to Doalus, capitane of Argyle; and in the middilward, wes himself. Thir battallis wer arrayit in sic craft, that in the place quhair the battall wes set, he belevit nocht onlie to have the river of Munda, deip but ony furd, on the bakkis of his army, that thay suld fecht but refuge: bot als to have ye sonne gangand to siclik on thair bakkis, that thair ennimes nicht nocht hald up thair ein for reffixioun of contrar beimis in thair sicht. Sic thingis done, Eugenius went to ane hie mote, and callit his army to the standart, and said in this maner: “ Our eldaris, “ that began this realm with continewall laubour, and brocht the “ samin with honour to our days, forcy campionis, commandit thair “ posterite to defend thair realme and liberte, quhilk is maist dulce “ and hevinly treasure in the erd, aganis al invasouris; havand “ esperance of victory, quhen time wes to fecht aganis thair ennimes, in na thing more than in thair handis: and to be obeisant to the wise and nobill capitanis of this realme; quhais “ auctorite and prudence bene sicker targe, baith to thair guddis, “ landis, and liffis, aganis all preis and dangeir of ennimes. All “ our eldaris, that ar passit afore us, wer ay obedient to the command of thair nobillis; and thocht thay have fouchtin oftmes, “ with sindry chancis of battall, aganis the dantouris of the world, “ yit thay wer finalie victouris. Nowe, mon we fecht, maist vail- “ yeant campionis, with sic manheid and curage, as our eldaris “ faucht afore us; or ellis mon we tine oure realme and liberte, and “ be thirllit to maist vile servitude, at the will of oure ennimes. “ Now approachis Maximus, our cruell and unmercifull ennemy, to “ reif baith our landis and guddis, gif we support nocht oureself be “ grace of God and oure manheid. He is sa ful of fals ingine and “ slichtis, that he is now confiderat with Pichtis, als weill in perdition of thaim as of us; intending thairthrow to bring the haillempire of Albioun, howbeit the samin wes nevir hard afore, under “ Romane obeisance. The Pichtis, be mischant foly, passis to battall in support of thair profest ennimes, quhilkis ar richt desirus “ to reif fra thaim thair kingdome and honouris. Thay come “ aganis us, quhilkis wer ay thair protectouris, sen first thair realme “ beganne. It is uncertane be quhat mischeif thir Pichtis bene “ abusit, nocht knowing the irrecoverabill dammage that is to fall “ on thame, in eversioun of thair common weill and liberte: and



“ thought thay knaw the same, thay gif no attendance thairto. Yit,  
 “ sa far as pertenis to our actioun, consider that our ennimes ar to  
 “ fecht aganis us, quhome we nevir offendit with injuris: throw  
 “ quhilk, thair werkis sal be the more unchancy, and mair odious to  
 “ God. Be contrar, remember ye ar to resist thair invasioun; and  
 “ in your pure defence, ar to fecht for youre realme and liberte:  
 “ and ar the posteritie of thay forey campionis that suntime maist  
 “ gloriously chasit the Romanis out of thir boundis. Now it is  
 “ cumin to sic point, that we mon othir be vincust, and suffir ex-  
 “ treme miserie and servitude; or ellis to be victouris, and stabill  
 “ oure landis to us with glore, honoure, and permanent eis. I be-  
 “ seik yow, my gud companyeonis, for the unvincibill manheid,  
 “ faith, and virthew of your eldaris, and for thair pail goistis,  
 “ quhilkis defendit this youre realme in liberte to thir dayis; to suf-  
 “ fir nocht yow thair sonnis to be reft and spulyeit of your realme,  
 “ liberteis, and gudis; nor yit to be taikin, as cativis, to underly  
 “ thair tyrannyis. And gif it hapnis yow be advers chance, quhilkis  
 “ God defend, to de, than do, sa far as in yow, to acquit your deith;  
 “ and think, better is to de honestlie, than to leif in schame. Knaue  
 “ youreself dotat with incredibill manheid and virthew; and heri-  
 “ touris, be anciant linnage, als weil to your nobill faderis in wis-  
 “ dome and chevalrie, as in thair landis: nocht gaderit of divers  
 “ nationis, bot of ane pepill under ane mind: and servandis to the  
 “ Eternall God, that gevis victory to just pepill, in reward of thair  
 “ virthew; and to fals and wrangus pepil schame, discomfiture, and  
 “ slauchter. Belt yow, thairfore, lusty gallandis, with manheid and  
 “ wisdom, to have victory: quhilk sall nocht fail to succaid, gif ye,  
 “ with constant curage, have na thing bot schamful fleing in dre-  
 “ dour; and invaid your ennimes with siclik cruelte as thay in-  
 “ tend to invaid yow.”

Skarsly had Eugenius rasit the spreit of his army be this horta-  
 tioun, quhen Maximus apperit in sicht, with all his army; and come  
 forthwart with more deligence than wes belevit: for he come sone  
 eftir the sonne rising. The Scottis wer astonist be huge multitude  
 of ennimes: nochtheles, seand na refuge, thay determinit to assailye  
 the extreme jeoperde of armis. Sone eftir, thay arrayit thaim, with  
 thair bakkis to the sonne; that the glance and beimis thair of suld  
 nocht be impediment to thair fechtung: and skarslie wer thay weil

arrayit, quhen thay ruschit forthwart on thair ennimes. This feirs rinning wes impediment to Maximus to do his devore: nochtheles, seand the time sa schort, he exhortit his army to remember the Romane virtew, and to be not affrayit of barbar pepil, quhom thay recently discomfist. Incontinent, baith the armyis, be sound of trampat, junit, with huge nois and clamour on all sidis. At the first contering, it wes so cruelly fochtin, that it wes uncertane to quhat party maist danger succedit: than followit sindry chancis of fortun. For the Scottis that faucht in the richt wing under Ethodious, to win na les honour than glore, set on the Pichtis fornence thaim, and chasit thaim throw the watter of Dune; quhair mony of thame, ouirset with slik and glar thairof, wer slane: than, be proud and insolent glore, as thay had bene sicker of victory, thay stragulit fra thair fallowis, cassin to spulye; throw quhilk mony of thaim wer slane eftir, be ane Romane legioun that wes send be Maximus in support of the said Pichtis. In the last wing, quhair Doalus faucht, the Scottis met with Franchemen, Britonis, and Almanis: quhair thay wer slane, fechtand with perseverand manheid to the deith, for defence of thair realm. Than all the Romane army, be command of Maximus, ruschit on the middill warde, quhair Eugenius faucht with his nobillis, wery, and neir vincust be multitude of thair ennimes: howbeit, mony of thaim, feirsly repugnant quhil thay nicht, failyeit na thing that pertenit to forey campionis. The nobillis that faucht in Eugenius army, seing the victory incline to Romanis, desirit Eugenius to saif him be flicht to better fortun; and incontinent thay raif of his coit armoure par force, to mak him unknowin: nochtheles, he abaid, fechtand with perseverand malice aganis the Romanis; and wes slane, the thrid yeir of his regne.

Quhil sic terrible murdir wes maid in the army of Scottis, al thair careage men, that wer left to keip thair bestiall and vittallis, havand na armoure bot swerdis to defend thaim, and seing sa mony nobill men slane; be pietuous commiseratioun, ruschit on thair ennimes, and wer al slane, fechtand to the deith.

Quhill the Romanis wer following in the chace, be gret ire and hatrent, on this maner, thay fell in ane uncouth maner of bergane; for the agit and febill personis, that war left at hame as unfensabil

bodyis, richt desirus to heir quhat chance was fallin to thair sonniss, come to the place quhare the battall was: bot quhen thay saw sa pietuous and lamentabil slauchter maid on thair sonniss and freindis, thay ruschit on thair ennimes like furius creaturis, regarding nothir life, reason, nor aige. The wemen come efter, with terribill noyis, rummisching as wod rageand beistis, and set on the Romanis. Nochtheles, baith the aigit men and wemen war finalie slane. The Romanis passit the nicht following with sa huge feir and dredoure, that na trinchis nor walking micht be sufficient munitioun to thair army; for the hillis, valis, and lesuris resoundit all the nicht with maist terribil spraichis of yammering pepill in the deidthraw: for nocht was hard bot horribill murning of sobband and deand pepill, cryand ane vengeance on Romanis and Pichtis, be quhais treason-abill slichtis this huge murdir was maid on thaim. On the morrow, Maximus partit the spulye of the feild amang his army, and maid the deid bodyis to be buryit: and to schaw him nocht degenerat fra Romane mercy, he maid thaim that war left on liffe, and sair woundit, to be curit with maist crafty surrigianis: amang quhome was Ethodius, brothir to Eugenius, tane, and curit, be reuth of Maximus, of all his woundis.

### Chap. Eighteenth.

*How the Scottis, be gret cruelte of Pichtis, war exilit out of Albion.  
How the Abbay of Comkil was foundit.*



THE Scottis discomfist in this wise, King Eugenius was found slane; quhome Maximus gart bury with funerall obsequies: syne went with his victorius army throw sindry boundis of Scotland, and gat mony of the inhabitantis thair of randerit as he plesit. The Pichtis, desiring the uter exterminioune of Scottis, tuke hie displeseir, that the said Scottis war sufferit in this wise to leif in Albioun. Maximus maid him to meis thair indignatioun, saying, It pertenit to Romane majeste, to have na les mercy on thair subdittis, than ferocite above thair con-

spiratouris and rebellis. It was alsua propir to Romanis to conques pepill mair be benivolence than tyranny; for na thing micht degraid mair the Romane glore, than to use cruelteis on thair subdewit pepill: and becaus the Scottis war sufficiently punist for thair rebelloun, thair king slane, thair army discomfist, and thair strenthis tane; he wald invaid thaim with na forthir punitioun, les than thay conspirit with new rebelloun.

The King of Pichtis and his nobillis, na thing satisfyit of this answer, bot erar movit with mair indignatioun, desirit Maximus, be mony gret perswasionis, to sla all Scottis, in every part quhare thay micht be apprehendit; saying, Thay war thair profest ennimes, borne in thair uter exterminioun, and rejosing onelie in murdir of Romanis: othirways, the Romanis and thair confiderat freindis micht have na sicker felicite in Albioun.

The Pichtis seing thaim frustrat of thair desiris, began to convert thaim to mair slicht; and finalie, corruppit Maximus with large money, quhilk movis all mortall creaturis to maist terribill felonyis; and purchest all Scottis to be monist, under pane of deid, to pas out of Albioun at ane prefixt day, that thair landis and rowmes micht cum in pray to Romanis and Pichtis. The day byrunne, all Scottis war exilit, and commandit, under pane of maist cruell punitioun, nevir to returne in Albioun. Be this proscriptioun, sum of thaim went into the Ilis; otheris in Ireland, Orkney, France, Italy, Norroway, and Denmark.

Efter proscriptioun of the men, come sindry ladyis of Scotland, arrayit in thair dule habit, for doloure of thair husbandis, quhilkis war slane in this last battall; and desirit Maximus, with lamentabill regrait, to suffer thaim leif, as cativis, the residew of thair miserabill life within thair native land, to pray for thair husbandis, and finaly be buryit with thaim in graif. Bot thay couth purches noch with all thair dolorus teris, bot plane repuls: and sa the ladyis and gentillwemen war exilit on the samin maner as the men. Thir doingis war occasioun to Maximus to detest the inhumaniteis and cruell maneris of Pichtis. The Pichtis, rageand ilk day in mair cruelte; efter the day of generall proscription, murderit all Scottis, quhare thay micht be apprehendit, but ony piete, ransoun, or miseration of thair estatis.



Qubill sic diligent serching was maid in all partis, Cartandis, Quene of Scottis, with two madinnis and ane servand, was found at the sepulture of hir husband Eugenius, neir consumit with murning and teris: and becaus scho was the Prince of Walis douchter, scho was brocht to Maximus but ony displesoure. Maximus than remembring the unsicker stait of man, and havand compassioun of hir sorrowfull chance, met hir in his honest maner, and maid hir al the consolatioun he micht; and prayit hir to be of gud confort, for he suld treit hir as his sister in times cumming. Sone efter, he cloithit hir with honest and semely abulyements, and gaif hir the town of Carrik, with sindry rentis and possessionis, to sustene hir rial estait: nochtheles, Cartandis, nocht unknowand fra quhat hie felicite scho was dejeckit, plesandly ressavit the yok of servitude. And quhen scho was returnand to the said town of Carrik, scho was tane, be the gait, be ane cumpany of Romanis and Pichtis; and nocht onelie spulyeit of hir hors, clething, money, and jowellis, bot als hir servandis slane, and hir madinnis fulyeit.

Maximus advertist of this outrage, ceissit nocht qubill the misdoaris war punist, and hir guddis restorit; syne preservit hir, mony dayis efter, fra all injure of ennimes. On the morrow, the Pichtis come to Maximus, complaining hevaly that thair men war slane be perswasoun of ane cative woman, ennimy to thaim; and said thay deservit othir kindnes of Romanis, fechtand to the deith for ampliatioun of thair empire, aganis the pepil with quhilkis thay war confiderat to thay dayis: and desirit, thairfore, that Cartandis suld be exilit in Britane, amang hir freindis.

Cartandis heirand thir wourdis, said, Scho was bot ane miserabill creature, nakit of hir husband and freindis; and wald be mair miserabill, gif scho, beand dejeckit fra hie felicite, was repute sa unworthy, that scho micht nocht be sufferit to leif amang hir ennimes, bot commandit to leif in daily schame amang hir freindis: howbeit it war mair plesand to hir to be in Scotland, praying for the vailyeant pepil that was slane with hir husband, during hir sobir life, than to leif in honoure of ony princely estait. Finaly, quhen scho had desirit outhir to be put haistely to deith, or ellis to be sufferit to leif, as scho desirit, in Scotland; sic commiseratioun rais amang the Romanis, movit be hir comploratioun, that scho was licent, con-



trar the mind of Pichtis, to remane in Scotland, quhare scho list, with rentis and possessionis effering to hir estait.

Sic thingis done, all preistis, monkis, and religious personis of Scottis blude, war exilit on the same maner out of Scotland: throw quhilk mony of thaim come in Ilis, and biggit the abbay of Colmekill, quhare mony devoit personis remanis yit to oure dayis. Uncertane quhidder the samin be mair plentuous of haly wemen or men, quhilkis leiffis devoitly in thair secret housis. Quhare throw it happenit that this abbay, howbeit it began soberly, be devotioun of pepill, and princely rewardis, was maid the commoun sepulture, mony yeris efter, of all Scottis kingis.

And thocht Ethodius, brothir to Eugenius, with otheris presoneris of Scottis, war evill woundit in this battal; yit thay war exilit, efter thair curing, on the samin maner; and sworne nothir to pas in Ireland, Orkney, nor Ilis, and constranit thairfore to pas in Norrway.

The yeir that Scottis war exilit out of Albion be the weris of Romanis, was fra the beginning of the world, v.MDXLVII yeris; fra the incarnatioun of God, ccclxxix yeris; fra the beginning of Scottis in Albioun, dcccxi yeris: in the secund yeir of Juliane, Emprioure, quhilk was namit Appostita, becaus othir Empriouris afore him war Catholik princis, and he ane heretike,

### Chap. Nineteenth.

*Of sindry marvellis sene in Albioun. How the Scottis that fled in Ireland and the Ilis, returnit in Scotland with gret power; and how thay war discomfist and slane.*



IN the yeir that Eugenius faucht with Romanis, war sene mony uncouth mervellis in Albioun, to the gret terroure of the pepill. In the nicht, apperit mony swerdis and wappinnis birnand in the air; bot at last thay ran al togidder in ane gret bleis, and evanist out of sight. The watter of Dune ran full of blude, and the brais of it schane all nicht,

as it had bene full of ithand firis. Mony small foulis fell out of the aire, in maner of ane schoure; and incontinent come ane huge multitude of ravinnis, and devorit thaim all. Howbeit the devinouris and wod wemen schew that thir uncouth and wonderfull prodigies signifyit the exterminoun of Scottis; yit thay war haldin in derisoun to the pepill, and inhibit to geif faith to sic fretis.

Sic felicity succeding to Roinanis, and the Scottis beand exilit out of Albioun, Gillo, Capitane of Ilis, advertist of the proscription of Ethodius in Norroway, but esperance of his returning; had sic desire to recover his realme, that he come with ane gret power in Argyle. In the mene time, his folkis, wide skatterit at thair incursionis and spulyeis, hapnit, be adventure, to cum on ane army of Pichtis, laid for defence of the cuntre; be quhome thay war finally chasit and slane. All thair schippis and galyeonis war brocht to the nixt port, to resist the residew of Scottis, gif thay happinnit to returne with ony new army.

The men of Ilis, brokin on this wise with dowbill calamite, baith with slauchter and tinsall of thair schippis, had na pissance to persew thair ennimes with ony forthir battal. The residew of Scottis, to eschew the ire and hatrent of Romanis, fled in Ireland, and pietuisly complanit afore the King and Princis thair of, that thair King Eugenius was slane, and all thair freindis, sumtime maist vailyeant in marciall dedis, banist out of Albion, be tyranny of Romanis, Britonis, and Pichtis; quhais cruelteis war sa odiously schawin on thaim, that na estait nor aige war savit, bot drevin be preis of battall in uncouth realmis, to leif in povertie and servitude: Thus was thair nobill and anciant realme, sa lang defendit be vailyeant campionis to thay dayis, brocht to uter exterminoun be insaciabill avarice of Romanis, and gevin as pray to Britonis and Pichtis, in reward of thair falset and treason: And desirit, thairfore, for the luf and tendernes that Nature, the crafty modir of all creatouris, hes ordanit the parentis to haif to thair children, to support thaim aganis thair unmercifull ennimes; that the Scottis, sumtime descending of thair blude, and rejosing the realme of Scotland above oec yeris, be nocht brocht to uter confusioun be Romane weris; sen thay ar cuming to thaim as to thair sicker anker, and last refuge in that extreme neid.

The princis of Ireland, movit be commiseratioun of this sorrowfull chance falling to Scottis, thair native pepill, send x thousand Irelandmen with thaim in Albion, to recover thair realme. This army come in Carrik, Kyle, and Cunninghame, and ceissit fra na maner of cruelte on the Britonis and Pichtis that war found in thay boundis. Herdurstane, brothir to Hergest, King of Pichtis, afore rehersit, hering sa gret cruelteis done to Pichtis, come haistely, with ane army, to invaid the Scottis: nochtheles, he was put to flicht, and his army discomfist. Than the Scottis tuke advisement, quhat wes to be done. Sum allegit, howbeit victory succedit, to assailye nocht the chance of fortoun ony forthir: bot, efter this plesand victory, to returne in Ireland with the riche spulye of men and guddis, takin be thaim in the said battal; and erar to kepe thaim to ane better fortoun, than to abide, be manifest foly, the Romane pissance: quhilk had sa hie and singulare preeminence, baith in riches and chevalry, that na pepill micht resist thairto. Otheris said, Best was to follow fortoun, and recover the remanent landis reft fra thaim. Sen thair beginning succedit with sa happy chance, thair end suld follow with the mair prosperite; for it is oft times sene, that gret multitude of pepil bene vincust be few men: and, thairfore, in esperance of better fortoun, best was to rais thair curage, and outhir recovir thair native realme, or all atanis to de. This last opinioun was apprisit. Than the Scottis and Ireland men tuke full purpos to recovir all the remanent landis that pertenit to thaim be ony titill or law, in Albion. At last, quhen thay had fochtin with maist rageand fury aganis thair ennimes, na better fortoun succedit to thaim, than succedit afore to the men of Ilis; for few of thaim eschapid untakin, or slane with Romanis.

The princis and nobillis of Ireland, richt affrayit of thir tithingis, convenit to ane counsall, to have consultatioun how the Scottis micht be restorit to thair realme, and the Romanis best resistit. And quhen thay saw na sufficient remeid for the samin, thay set aside all othir materis; and concludit, to send thair oratouris to have peace of Romanis. The ambassatouris, that come to this effect, war reprovit be Maximus, quhy thay supportit the Scottis aganis the Romanis, considering na realmes in erd, saif Ireland, war fre of Romanes weris to thay dayis. Yit peace was grantit to thaim under

thir conditionis : The princis and nobillis of Ireland sall resset na ennimes of Romanis within thair realme, in timis cuming ; and thay sal make na support to thaim that movis ony weris aganis the Romanis or thair confiderat freindis. Na theiffis, nor limmaris of Ireland, sal cum to do erandis, in timis cumming, in Albioun. The peace ratifyit in this maner, followit na trubill efter in Albioun be Ireland.

And sa endis heir, the Sext Buke of thir Croniklis.

# The Sevint Buke.

---

## HEIR BEGINNIS THE SEVINT BUKE OF THE CRONIKLIS OF SCOTLAND.

---

### Chap. First.

*How Maximus conquest, be his liberalite, the crown of Britane.  
How he slew Gratiane, Emprioure, and was slane be Theodosius.*



AXIMUS, havand trubill of ennimes dantit in all partis, with sicker peace; to make his prudent maneris mair patent, schew him sa benivolus to the pepil, that na man was denyit his presence; and had with him, in daily fallowschip, mony of the gret nobillis of Britane; and tretit thaim sa plesandly, that sindry of thaim war drawin to his favoure. For quhen he ceissit fra publict materis, he gaif his ingine to tornamentis, warsling, and othir knightly exercitioun, with Britonis; and become sa liberall, that he gave, on ane day, amang thaim, mair than all the tribute of Britane might extend to for ane yeir. All the weirmen and knichtis in his campe, war perswadit to take his part, be his liberalite, aganis quhatsum-



evir jeoperdeis that nicht fall. Maximus, knawing the mindis of his army gevin with sic fervent amite to him, set ane conventioun at York, and partit all the landis partenand sumtime to Scottis, amang the Pichtis and Britonis. Sic thingis done, he garnist al the strenthis of Britane with men, munitionis, and vittallis: syne callit afore him all his freindis and men of armis, quhom he knew maist favorable to his desiris; and demandit thaim, be quhat ingine or wayis he nicht maist easely conquies the crown of Britane. The Britonis, knawing his imperial linnage and liberalite, with hie manheid, and craft of chevalrie, creat him king. Thocht Paulus Diaconus writtis, that he wes maid king contrar his will, I will follow my auctouris afore rehersit, erar than uncouth historicianis. Valentiniane, Empriour, knawing that Maximus had usurpit the crown of Britane, send divers capitanis and armyis, to dant his rebelloun. At last, quhen he persavit the said Maximus invincibill in battal, and mony of his capitanis and armyis discomfist and slane, he condiscendit lichtly to have peace with the said Maximus.

Thus wes Maximus sufferit, be the Empriour, to reiose the crown of Britane; quhilk he governit xvii yeris efter but truble, havand the hale empire of Albion under his dominion: quhilk hapnit never afore to levand creature. He had the Pichtis in sic familiarite, that the strangest of thaim wer chosin capitane in his army, and other maid sodjouris in sindry castellis of Britane. And quhen he come in thair landis, he cloithit him with mantil bordorit with gold and silkin flouris, eftir thair gise; and of thaim desirit nocht bot ane smal tribute, to be ane memorial that thay wer tributaris to him in name of Romanis. The Pichtis and Britonis, deliverit thus of al deidly feir of Scottis, had Maximus in na les luf than vehement affection; and rejosit, that the Scottis, thair auld ennimes, wer exilit out of Albion, and put to uter rewine. Quhen Maximus had governit the crown of Britane certane yeris with gret manheid and prudence, he began, be insaciabie avarice, to covate the haill empire of the world: and to conquer the samin, he went in France, eftir that he had stuffit all the strenthis of Britane with strang munition and wageouris. At his cuning in France, he wes tenderlie ressavit be certane legionis of Romanis, quhilkis wer ennimes to Graciane, Emprioure, and bure him in deidlie hatrent, becaus he

had uncouth and barbar pepill in more reverence than Romanis. Maximus, favorit, be this mene, be the Romanis in France, gaderit ane army, with al pissance that he nicht assemble; and be suddane incursionis, slew Graciane, Empriour, the xxix yeir of his empire. Eftir this slauchter, Maximus went throw Almany and Italie; and be feir of his onlie fame, he constranit the peple to pay him tribute: nochttheles, he wes finalie slane be Theodosius, Emprioure.

Als sone as the Romanis quhilkis wer left in France knew the slauchter of Maximus, thay tuke incontinent his sonne, namit Victour; and spulyeit him baith of his auctorite and life: as Paulus Diaconus writis at lenth, in the life of Graciane and Theodosius, Empriouris.

## Chap. Second.

*How Octavius was maid King of Britonis. How Mercius and Victorine wer send in Albioun, to dant the Britonis. How the Pichtis war thirllit to gret servitude; and how thair King slew himself.*



HE Romane princis beand devidit on this maner amang thaimself, Octavius, sonne to Octavius, King of Britane, afore rehersit, returnit in Britane; for he fled, as we schew, in France, to eschew the tyranny of Maximus, quhen he subdewit Britane to his opinion; and clomit the crown to pertene to him as just heritoure, discending of the blud riall thair of be lang progression: and promittit, gif thay condescendit to his opinion, to deliver thaim of Romane servitude, and to suffer nane bot thair native blud to regne above thaim in times cuming.

The Britonis, movit be his reasonis, and richt desirus to recover thair liberte, maid him king. The Romanis, quhilkis keptit the strenthis and munitionis of Britane, wer repugnant to thir doingis. Thus apperit gret contentioun: the Britonis set to defend Octa-

vius, and the Romanis to keip Britane under the empire of Theodosius, Empriour.

This rebellion of Britonis wes occasion to the Empriour to send new capitanis, with mony Romane legionis, to dant the Britonis: bot quhen he fand thay nicht nocht be ouirthrawin be force of armes, he gaif thaim peace under thir conditionis: Octavius sall remane King of Britane, during his life, and amite with Romanis; the munitionis and strenthis of Britane to be kept be the Romanis; the administratioun of justice to be at the will of Theodosius, quhome he list depute for the samin: paying siclike tribute to the Empriour as thay payit afore to Maximus. Thus wes Britane maid tributar, as afore, to Romanis.

Nocht lang eftir, two capitanis wer send, with mony legionis, in Britane: that ane, namit Marcius, to mak his residence at Londoun; and this othir, namit Victorine, to remane at York. Be governance of thir two capitanis, followit, mony yeris eftir, gret affliction to the Albianis; for Victorine convenit the Pichtis to ane counsal, and repruvit thame for using of thair awin lawis, in contemptioun of Romane auctorite, as thay had bene fre pepil, nocht astrickit to the Empriouris servitude. Efter sindry consultationis, he maid actis, That nane of Pichtis sall regne eftir Hergest; na ministration of justice to be maid be thair awin lawis, bot onlie be Romanis; and the said Romanis to have above thaim, in times cuming, the auctorite of life and deith: and gif thay wer found repugnant to thir constitutionis, to be punist to the deith.

Hergest, King of Pichtis, thirllit thus to vile servitude in his latter age, wes penitent of the weris maid afore aganis the Scottis; seing, eftir thair proscriptioun, sa intollerable calamiteis appering; baith to his peple than present, and to thair posterite: and becaus he couth nocht put remeid thairto, for vehement dolour, he slew himself.

Victorine, knowing this unhappy end of Hergest, commandit that na Pichtis blude usurpe the crown in times cuming; and that nane of thame beir office nor auctorite, under pane of deith; with all other chargis to be observat, quhilkis thay wer thirllit to be Maximus, quhen he exilit the Scottis. Thus wes the realme of Pichtis

spulyeit of thair native lawis, and subdewit to Romanis in maner of province, sidlik as the realme of Britonis.

The Pichtis, havand the chargis of Victorine in derisioun, wer richt impacient to suffir the crown be reft fra thair native blud; and maid Durstus, the son of Hergest, to be thair king. Victorine, movit for thair rebellion, thocht best to dant thame afore thay gaderit ony more pissance, and come haistely in Pentland with gret ordinance.

The Pichtis in Camelon, with thair new king, heirand the cuning of Victorine, began to garnis thair town with all provisioun: nochtheles, soner than thay traistit, the Romanis beltit thair town with strang seige, and tuke it finalie be force of armes. In this towne wes tane King Durstus, and send to Rome, to underly the jugement of Romane senatouris. The principal movaris of this rebellion wer scurgit with wandis throw the town of Camelon.

The Pichtis, dantit be Victorine in this maner, wer commandit to pay yeirlic to the Romane thesaurer, the fourt part of all the frutis growand on thair landis, with the feird part of thair bestial, under pane of deith; for he thocht the Pichtis sa insolent eftir the ejection of Scottis out of Albion, that, gif thay wer nocht dantit in time, mony hie offensic micht rise be thaim in Albion. And by all thir importable chargis, he thirllit thaim to maist vile servitude; and send thaim in Britane, and othir realmes, to win mettellis, querrellis, and to mak tild. And above all thir calamiteis, thair come to thaim ane mair insufferable injure, devisit in finall distruction of thair realme: for within schort time eftir, thay wer commandit to pas, with thair wiffis, children, and guddis, under pane of deith, beyond the watter of Forth; and leif behind thame Mers, Berwik, Pentland, Galloway, Striveling, Carrik, Kyle, and Cunninghame, and mekill of all the wod of Calidon; that the samin micht be perpetually inhabit, in times cumming, be Britonis. Attoure, thay wer commandit to big ane heich dike, fra Abircorne to Dunbriton, to devide thaim fra Britonis; and gif ony Pichtis transcendit this dike, to be punist na les than thay had offendit aganis the majeste of Romanis.

The Pichtis, grevit with thir and mony othir intollerabill injuris, began to lament thair sorowfull chance, fallin to thaim be thair



awin offence; and rasit thair ein to the hevin, humily praying the mercifull God to deliver thame of Romane tyranny.

### Chap. Third.

*Of Ethodius, brothir to Eugenius afore rehersit. Of his governance in Denmark; and of his successioun. How Rome was tane be Gothis; and how sindry spulyeis thairof fell to Fergus the Secund.*



UNTILL the Pichtis wer punist with thir and mony othir afflictionis, the Scottis wer vagabound, and banist in uncouth realmes, with thair wiffis and children; sum of thaim levand on the laubour of thair handis; otheris beand wageouris, and men of armis, under sindry princis and capitans of the warld.

Ethodius, brothir to Eugenius, banist, as we have schawin, with his wife, out of Albioun, wes plesandly tretit be the King of Denmark; and gat certane landis, quhair he remanit with his wife: on quhom he gat ane sonne, namit Erthus. This Erthus, eftir the deith of his fader Ethodius, maryit ane nobill lady, namit Rocha, douchter to Rorik, quhilke wes gretest prince of Danis, under the king; and gat on hir ane sonne, namit Fergus the Secund: quhilke recoverit the realme of Scotland, as we sall now schaw. This Fergus, in his flurisand youth, past, be command of the King of Danis, with ane cumpany of chosin and vailyeant men, to Alarike, King of Gothis; quhilke at that time wes passand, with huge army, to confound and distroy the empire of Romanis. Fergus wes richt glaid of this voyage; for he bure extreme hatrent aganis the Romanis, becaus thay slew his eldaris, or ellis banist thaim fra thair native realm in uncouth regionis. Finalie, eftir mony battallis, fochtin be sindry chancis of fortoun, betwix the Romanis and Gothis; Radagasus, principal Capitane of this army, beand slane, with infinite nowmer of pepill, and the Romanis siclike brokin, with thair army and pissance; ane strait seige wes laid about Rome, be the said



Alarik, King of Gothis. The Romanis debaitit the town lang time, be sindry jeoperdyis; quhil, at last, thay laikit vittallis: throw quhilk wes sic hunger amang thaim, that thay abhorrit nocht to eit the flesche of men, with othir sindry forbodin metis. "In deplo-  
 "ration of this calamite, my voce," sayis Sanct Jerome, "asto-  
 "nisis, and the sobbing cuttis my wourdis. The town is tane, that  
 "tuke al the warld, vincust more be hunger than sward; and few  
 "found on live within the samin. Sa far sprang the hungry raige,  
 "that it constranit the pepill to eit abhominable meitis: the moder  
 "sparit nocht to swelly the frute of hir awin bowellis."

Thus wes Rome finalie expugnant be Gothis, the first day of Aprile, fra the beginning of it be Romulus, MCLXIV yeris; fra the incarnation of God, ccccxii yeris.

Als sone as Rome wes tane, the Gothis ceissit fra slauchter of the pepill, and fra spulyeing of the tempillis of the Appostillis Peter and Paule: throw quhilk mony pepill that fled thairto, wer savit of thair guddis and livis.

Rome, sumtime the Lady of the Warld, wes spulyeit thus be cruelte of Gothis; and the spulyeis of it devidit, be rite of armes, amang the Gothis. It is said, that beside mony riche jowellis and precious geir that fell to Fergus the Secund be the said spulye, ane kist wes gevin to him, full of bukis; quhilkis he brocht out of Italy, with incredibill laubour and deligence, in Almanay; and send it to remane in Colmekill, with mony othir Cronikillis and Historyis of Scotland; uncertane be quhayis impulsoun this procedit. It is said that Eneas Silvius, quhilk wes send as legat fra Eugenius the Fourt, Paip, to King James the First, tuke purpos to pas in the Ilis of Scotland, to se gif he micht find any of the werkis of Titus Livius, quhilkis wer distroyit at this time be cruell weris of Italy; for ma notabill thingis bene distroyit be battall, than be roust of yeris. Nochtheles, fra the said Eneas knew the passage dangerus, becaus the king wes slane, he left his purpos. And we, of that samin maner, richt desirus to knaw quhat bukis thir bene, quhais fame wes sa divulgat in all partis; maid sic deligence, that at last five auld bukis, writtin in Romane letteris, war brocht to us at Abirdene, be industry of ane nobill man, Maister Johne Campbell, thesaurer to the King, the yeir of God ane thousand, v hundreth, xxv yeris: in

the quhilkis war nocht bot brokin leiffis, and few of thaim braider than the palme of ane mannis hand, writtin craftly on rude and hard parchment; bot thay wer sa blind, we nicht nocht reid ilk tent wourd. And quhiddir thir bukis wer ane part of thaim that wer distroyit be the said veris of Italie, or gif thay wer brocht to the said Abbay out of uncouth and strange placis, it is uncertane; yit, be testimoniall of thaim that red the samin, we find thay soundit mair to the eloquence of Salustius than of Livius. Forthir, at this same time, wes brocht to us, be the same messengeir, the werkis of Veremund, Archedene of Sanctandrowis; contenand the historie of this realme, fra the first beginning thairof, to King Macolme Canmores time: quhilkis authouris we have followit, with the maist wise Bischop William Elphinstoun, to the end of this our quhatsumevir werk. Bot we will retourn to our historie.

Fergus, the sonne of Erthus, departit out of Rome, with Alarik, thre dayis eftir it wes put to sakke; and went with him to the expugnation of sindry othir townis in Italie. Nocht lang eftir, he wes ordanit to pas, with certane schippis, in Sicil; and in the mene time, rais sa unmerciful tempest on him, that he wes drevin, be force of contrarius windis, agane in Italie, and narrowly eschapid of his life.

At his retourning, Alarike wes deceissit, and Athalphas maid King of Gothis, and generall capitane of thair army: with quhome Fergus become sa beluffit for his singular manheid and virtew, that als sone as Italie wes dantit be the Gothis, he wes sufferit to returne hame, with mony Danis, in Denmark; full of riches and treasoure, gottin the said veris.

## Chap. Fourth.

*Of sindry Clerkis and Sanctis flurising in the warld. Of the first message send be Pichtis to Scottis.*



ONY nobil clerkis flurist at this time in the warld: as, Claudian, poete, writtar in sum part of our historie; Apollinaris, confoundar of the heritikis that wer empo-  
sionit be Porphirius; Martin, Bischop of Turuin, in France; with mony resolute and haly men. Amang us wes in thay dayis, Sanct Niniane, the first Bischop of Galloway; quhair he biggit ane kirk in the honour of Sanct Martine, his eime. In thay dayis wes als Sanct Ambrose, Bischop of Millane, quhilk brocht Sanct Augustine to the faith and sacrament of baptisme. This Augustine was the first beginnar of Channownis Regular, of quohom ar now mony abbayis erekit in the warld be magnificence of sindry princis. Of this ordour bene xxx Papis, beside mony biscoppis and nobill prelati, quhaiis nowmer may not be comprehendit. Be imitation of this ordour, rais the Eremitanis; quhilkis ar incessit to so incredibil nowmer, howbeit thay sufferit gret afflictioun of Gentilis, that thair is of thaim this day in Europe above two thousand and iii hundreth abbayis, beside thaim that ar in Affrik and Egypt. This Augustine was nocht onely commendabill in his institutioun of religious maneris, bot als for his singulare eruditioun in every kind of science: for he had skars xx yeris in age, quhen he red rethorik in Cartage; and lernit baith his philosophie and mathemathik but ony preceptoure. Efter this, he come to Millane, quhare he, be preching of Sanct Ambrose, ressavit the Cristin faith; and was sa profitabill thairto, that he vincust and put down ane c sindry opinionis of herisis, and wrait sa huge nowmer of bukis, that na age of man may suffice to reid thame: and deceissit, the lxxx yeir of his age. And in thir dayis was als Basilius, the first beginnar of monkis; Cyrillus, Bischop of Jerusalem; and Sanct Jerome, the Pape, quhilk translatit the Bibill out of Ebrew in Latine, with

mony othir volomes in that samin maner. His werkis was haldin in sic reverence be the Pape Damasus, that thay war commandit to be red amang othir devine service. Bot we wil returne to our history.

The Pichtis, seing thaim ilk day mair tormentit with Romane injuris, and irkit with importabil servitude, send thair secret messengeris to the Scottis quhilkis war exilit in the Ilis, Ireland, and Norway; desiring thaim to returne in Albion, to recover thair realme: and promittit, be thair gret aithis, othir to restore the Scottis to thair realme and landis, or ellis to fecht in thair support to the deith, aganis the Romanis and Britonis.

Quhen Fergus had hard thir desiris of Pichtis, he send, be advise of the King of Denmark, his traist servandis in al partis quhare ony Scottis war, to explore thair mindis towart him. And quhen he fand thaim all of ane mind, to recover thair realme, and revenge the injuris done to thaim be Romanis and Britonis; he conductit ane gret nowmer of schippis and weirmen, part with the riches he wan in the weris of Italy, and part be support of his gudschir Rorik, to cum in Albioun.

### Chap. Fifth.

*How Gratiane, King of Britonis, and Mercius, Romane Capitane, war slane, and Constantine put in Mercius place; and of his deith. Of the secund message send be Pichtis to Fergus; and how he come in Albioun, and was aggreit with Pichtis, and recoverit his realme.*



URING this time, Gratiane, Britone, be consent of Mercius, Romane Capitane, tuke the crown of Britane. This trubil was sone pecifyit; for sic contention rais betwix thaim, that ilk ane of thaim slew othir.

The Romanis, richt sorrowful for the deith of thair capitane, chesit Constantine, but advise of Honorius, Empriour, to succede in Mercius place. This Constantine was nocht ane man of nobill



blude, nor yit of mercial werkis. Als sone as he was chosin capitane, he went in France, with ane army, to deliver the samin fra injure of Gothis and Swissis; quhare he was vincust be ane nobil knight, namit Constantius, and slane.

Als sone as Victorine knew the slauchter of Mercius and Constantine, he went to London, and garnist all the strenthis of Britane with strang munition and weirmen; and set his ingine mony wayis to hald the Britonis at the opinioun of Honorius, Empriour: for the empire of Romanis was invadit with grete rebelloun in al partis. The Pichtis, seing the Britonis haldin with gret difficulte at the opinion of Romanis, belevit fermely, gif the Scottis war brocht agane in Albion, and concurring to thair support, to recover thair liberte. And for thir causis, thay send thair secund message to Fergus, schawing sa gret trubil in Britane amang the Romanis, that na time nicht cum sa ganand as than to recover his realme.

Sone efter, Fergus pullit up salis, and arrivit in Murray, quhare he set his army on land. The fame of his cuming divulgat throw Albion, causit the Scottis out of all partis to convene to him, with thair wiffis and children, on the same maner as thair ennimes had bene chasit and vincust, and as thay war to remane perpetually in thair native landis, but ony forthir trubill. Than come sindry Pichtis, in gret cumpanyis, to Fergus; thanking him, that he, for singulare lufe to recover his native realme, was cumin in Albion, nocht astonist of the winter stormes nor dangeir of seis, quhen passage bene maist parellus; and desirit him to set on side all injuris, gif ony war in times bygane, betwix Scottis and Pichtis, that thay nicht be new confiderat, efter the tennour of the auld peace: and prayit him to imput na falt to thaim for the wekit offencis committit aganis the nobill King Eugenius, his progenitour; bot to imput the same allanerly to thair fore eldaris, quhilkis culd nothir, for that time, have experience of the dissait of Romanis, nor yit understand quhat vengeance and calamite was appering to thaim be the weris maid aganis the Scottis; quhen thay, beand dissavit be plesand wordis of Romanis, in dammage of thair commoun weill, brocht thaimself to intollerabil servitude: throw quhilk thay war sa cruelly punist, that every kind of deith wes to be preferrit to Romane dominion.



To this answerit Fergus, He wald gladly have peace and amite with Pichtis, with siclike condicionis as thay war afore confiderat with his progenitouris; and wald jeoperde himself with thaim in battall, contrar Romanis and Britonis, thair auld and perpetual enimes; and fecht to the deith for thair commoun weill, to revenge the injuris done to thaim: swa that the said Pichtis wald plesandly depart, with thair wiffis, children, and guddis, out of the landis quhilkis war treasonably reft afore fra the Scottis. As to the auld injuris of the said Pichtis, he thoct thaim sufficiently punist, be just punitioun of God, for thair offence; sen thay war nocht onely reft and spulyeit of thair native landis, bot thirllit to maist vile and intollerabil servitude.

The Pichtis, content of thir desiris, creat ane king, and set ane day to meit Fergus. At the day affixit, the Scottis and Pichtis war confiderat togidder, efter the auld band, in maist sover way that nicht be devisit. Sic thingis done, Fergus ressavit al the landis and strenthis that war reft fra his progenitouris afore be Romane weris; and sone efter, he past with ane honest cumpany to Argyle, quhare he was crownit in the fatale chier of merbill.

The yeir that Fergus recoverit his realme, was the XLV yeir efter that the Scottis war expellit out of Albion; fra the incarnation, cccxxii yeris; fra the first beginning of Scottis, vii hundreth LV yeris; in the xviii yeir of Honorius, Emprioure.

## Chap. Sixth.

*How the Romanis, fechtand aganis the Scottis and Pichtis, war severit be ane schoure of haill. Of sindry vassalage done be the vailyeant Grahame at the Wall of Abircorne. Of his linage, and allia with King Fergus.*



ICTORINE, commovit that Scottis war brocht agane, on this maner, in Albioun; assemblit ane army, and come to York. Efter his cumming, he send ane herald to the Pichtis, solistand thaim, with mony large promissis, to dissolve the band maid laityly with Scottis. At last, seing his purpos cum to litill effect, he began to hait the Pichtis, as fals and mainsworne pepill; and to be wrokin of thair rebelloun, he come, with ane army of L.M men, throw Kendell, Mers, and Pentland, to the gret dammage of the pepill thairrof; and set down his tentis nocht far fra Camelon.

Fergus, advertist of the cuming of Romanis in this maner, for baith he and the King of Pichtis war gaderit with ane gret army, come our Forth; and within the nicht set down his tentis nocht far fra his ennimes, with deliverit mind to assailye thame in the brek of the day. The Romanis, on the tothir side, knew weil the ordinance of Scottis and Pichtis; and at the thrid vigill maid thaim redly to battall, and faucht with the confiderat kingis beside the watter of Carron. This battall was richt cruelly fochtin, and sa gret multitude of pepil slane, that the said watter ran mony milis with purpoure stremis to the seis. Quhill thir armyis war fechtand on this maner, with uncertane victory, come suddanly ane scharp schoure, sa full of haill and sleit, that nane of thaim nicht knaw ane othir: throw quhilk thay war constranit to sever, mair irkit than saciat of otheris slaughter. Thus war baith the armyis sa brokin, that mony yeris efter, nane of thaim nicht invaid othir be battal.

Victorine, on the morrow, seing his army brokin, returnit in Kent, and left behind him mony sodjouris in Pentland, to kepe the samin,

in maner of province, aganis the Scottis and Pichtis. The confiderat kingis commandit the residew of thair pepill, quhilkis war left on live, to returne hame: and becaus thay fand thameself unabill to renew battal, thay set thair ingine to saif baith thaimself and thair landis to ane better fortoun. Sone efter, thay convenit in Argyle, to se quhat wayis thay nicht best resist thair ennimes, revenging the injuris be thaim done, and to lerne thair pepill the art of chevalry; for thay war mony yeris abusit, but ony exercition thairrof. Efter sindry consultationis, the Scottis, seing the Pichtis of mair nowmer than nicht be nurist in Angus, Fiffe, Striveling, and Stratherne; sufferit thaim to remane in Athole, beyond the hillis of Granyeben, quhill thay nicht, be sum better fortoun, recover the residew of thair landis, quhilkis war reft fra thaim be tyranny of Romanis. The Pichtis spred fast in Athole, and maid sindry strenthis and polecys in it.

In the mene time, Victorine, Capitane of Britane, commandit the Britonis, be general edict, to big the wal betwix Abircorne and Dunbritane, with staik and rise, in thair strangest maner, to saif thaim fra invasion of Scottis and Pichtis: and to big this dike war assemblit mony craftismen out of al partis, with sindry weirmen, to saif thaim quhil the dike was biggit.

In the mene time, quhen thay war biggand it maist besaly, come the vailyeant Grahame, quhais dochter was maryit on King Fergus, and slew ane gret nowmer of thir weirmen at the bigging of this dike, and the remanent put to flicht: and incontinent, be fers incursion, he brocht ane huge pray of men and gudis fra the Britonis in the Scottis landis. This Grahame was descendit of ane anciant hous of Denmark, and gottin on ane nobill lady of that samin cuntre be ane of the Scottis that was banist with Ethodius out of Albion; and efter the proscription of Scottis, he maryit ane virgine of the blude rial of Denmark, on quhom he gat ane dochter of maist excellent bewte, quhilk was gevin to Fergus in mariage. Fergus gat on hir iii sonnys afore his cuming in Albion, quhais names war Eugenius, Dongarus, and Constancius; of quhome sal be our history following. Uthir sayis, this Grahame was ane Briton, quhilk eschewing the Romane tyranny, fled amang the Scottis, and was efter banist with thaim in Denmark; for he was gret ennime to Romanis, seing

thaim regne with sic tyranny and avarice above thair subdittis. Always, of quhatsumevir hous or linnage he was discendit, treuth is, he was ane man of hie curage and spreit, baith in weir and peace, and strangest ennime to Romanis and Britonis. Of this Grahame, discendit the surname of Grahamis.

### Chap. Seventh.

*Of sindry consultationis maid be the Scottis for thair defence aganis the Romanis and Britonis. How Victorine conquest the crown of Britane; and how he was punist thairfore to the deith.*



HE Britonis, brokin with sindry battallis in this maner, ceissit mony yeris efter fra battall, content to defend thair awin landis. At this time come infinite nowmer of Scottis out of France, Spanye, Almany, Italy, and othir partis, quhair thay war wageouris, to King Fergus; traisting, becaus sa huge rebellion wes maid in all realmes aganis Romanis, to recover thair landis in Albion.

Fergus, rejosing of thair cuming, went with thaim in Carrik; quhare he faucht with the Romanis, and gat na les displeseir than he gat afore: throw quhilk he was constranit to leif Carrik, and returne to Argyle, quhare he remanit all the winter following. Ane conventioun was maid be him in the nixt simer; in quhilk sindry of his noblis perswadit him to rais new army to resist Victorine, for he was cumin than in Galloway, and erar to jeopard him to extreme dangeir of battall, than daily to leif in sic afflictioun: otheris said, Best was to tary, and nocht to fecht with the Romanis, becaus thay war twyis discomfist; in adventure, gif thay war discomfist the thrid time, thair realme suld be pray to thair ennimes. Best was, thairfore, to ceis fra battall, quhill thair pissance war convalescit, be quhilk thay micht be the mair abill to resist. Attour, sa frequent rebellioun was maid aganis the Romanis in all partis, that Victorine micht nocht lang abide in Britane: and thairfore, sen the empire of Romanis apperis sa manifestlie to decline, it may happin that Vic-



torine be constrainit to fle out of Britane, and than the Scottis and Pichtis may have ane ganand oportunitie to recovir thair realme, but ony gret danger. This last counsall was apprisit; and sa it was concludit, that Scottis and Pichtis sall invaid thair ennimes mair be scarmussing than plane battall.

In the mene time, Honorius, Emprioure, tuke gret suspitioun aganis this Victorine, traisting that he suld usurp the crown of Britane. Thus was it demit be mony pepill, that the Empriour suld exoner Victorine of al auctorite in Britane. Als sone as Victorine wes advertist thairof, he tuke the crown of Britane, with incredibill favoure of his army: part of Britonis assistit to him, bot otheris followit the opinion of Dioneth, sonne to King Octavius afore deceissit. Apperit thus gret seditioun in Britane. Nochtheles, Honorius, Empriour, seing sa gret trubill rising in Britane, send ane vailyeant knicht, namit Heraclius, to dant thair rebelloun; quhais cumming maid the Britonis, and otheris that assistit to Victorine, sa astonist, that thay brocht Victorine bound to this Heraclius, with mony otheris quhilkis war movaris of thair rebelloun. Sone efter, Victorine was send to Rome, with mony otheris of his opinioun, and punist to the deith.

Thus was Britane brocht agane be Heraclius to Romane empire.

### Chap. Eighth.

*How Placidus, Romane Capitane, was discomfist, with his army, be Scottis and Pichtis. How King Fergus recoverit all his landis, be conditioun of peace, fra Romanis. Of his civil and religious industry for the weil of his pepill.*



HERACLIOUS, quhen he had brocht Britane on this maner to Romane opinioun; be command of Honorius, he returnit to Rome, and went in Affric, to dant the rebellion of Athalus, tyranne; and left behind him in Britane ane man of febil curage, namit Placidus: quhilk, throw his avarice, was found richt unabill to governe ony province.



Fergus, knawing weill the febill curage of Placidus, thoct the time ganand to recover the landis reft fra him afore be Romane weris. And sone efter, he come with ane army in Carrik, abiding the cumming of the King of Pichtis with his army. Als sone as the Scottis and Pichtis war met togidder, thay went throw Carrik, Kyle, Cuninghame, and Galloway, ceissing fra na maner of cruelete on thaim that obeyit to the empire of Romanis: and on the same maner, thay come in Pentland, Mers, and Berwik, and left nothir Romanis nor Britonis in the same.

Placidus, Capitane of Britane, herand thir attemptatis, come with ane huge army in Pentland. The Scottis and Pichtis, nocht afrayit of his cuming, met him with gret fury. Followit ane terribill and sair battall. And first the horsmen of Romanis war discomfist; and sone efter, the remanent legionis war sa opprest with ithand schot of arrowis, that thay gaif bakkis on the same maner. Than was ane sorrowfull slauchter maid on the flearis. Placidus, narrowlie eschaping of his liffe, fled to York.

The confiderat pepill, insolent efter this victory, tuke purpos to sege York: nochtheles, thair army was sa brokin, that thay war constrainit to desist.

Placidus, na les astonist be mony othir afflictionis falling to Romanis in sindry partis of the warld, than be this last discomfitoure, dred that Britane suld pas fra Romane dominioun, gif the Britonis movit ony new rebellioun; and, thairfore, he began to seik peace with Pichtis and Scottis. Than was peace finaly tretit under thir conditionis: Al landis and munitionis reft afore fra Scottis and Pichtis, be Romane tyranny, sal be restorit to thaim agane; na incursionis nor heirschippis sall be maid, in times cuming, be Scottis and Pichtis, in the Romane landis; the Romanis sall stand content with the landis conquest on the Britonis, and sall nocht invaid the Scottis nor Pichtis with ony weris in timis cuming.

Als sone as the confiderat kingis had ressavit thair landis and rowmes be this maner, thay gaif thair exact deligence to instruct thair pepill in plesand and civill maneris, but ony thirllage of servitude. Than Fergus, to incres the Scottis, Danis, and otheris that come with him to recover thair realme, under ane freindschip and blude; gaif sindry landis of his realme amang thaim: throw quhilk,

mony landis of his realme tint thair auld name, and was callit efter the name of the new possessouris. And becaus the name of every land in Scotland ar weill knawin to all Scottis, I will schaw na thinge thair of.

Than Fergus reparit all the kirkis that war failyeit be negligence of the pepill, and feft sindry preistis with rentis and possessionis to do devine service. He brocht all the monkis that war banist, agane to his realme; and tretit thaim, with gret reverence, to instruct his pepill in the faith. He biggit the Abbay of Colmekill, and dotat it with sindry landis, rentis, and possessionis; and commandit the samin to be, in times cuming, the commoun sepulture of all kingis succeeding efter him. He feft als certane funerall obsequies to be done yeirly for thair saulis.

This Fergus was gevin als weill to civill as religious maneris; for he reparit all the strenthis liand on his bordouris fornentis the Britonis, quhare he ordanit his agit sodjouris to remane perpetually for defence thair of, on the commoun purs.

### Chap. Ninth.

*Of the deith of Placidus. Of the message send be Castius, Capitane of Britane, to Fergus; and of Fergus answer. How the Romanis war discomfist, and Castius slane.*



WHEN Fergus had recoverit his realme in this maner, and restorit his pepil to thair anciant honouris and dignite, deceissit Honorius, Emprioure: efter quhom succedit Theodosius; quhilk send ane nobill man, namit Valentiniane, in Italy, to repare all dammagis done be civill weris. And in the mene time, Placidus, Capitane of Britane, deceissit.

The Scottis and Pichtis, traisting to have gud occasion, be deith of Placidus, to invaid the Britonis, (for peace was dissolvit be his deith;) come in Westmureland, Cumber, and uthir regionis that war tane fra thaim afore be Romane weris, and ceissit fra na maner of cruelte on thaim that obeyit the Romanis. Mony of the Britonis

fled to Castius; for he was maid Capitane of Britane efter the deith of Placidus. This Castius, dredand, the thing that come efter, that Dioneth, sonne of Octavius afore rehersit, suld usurpe the crown of Britane be assistance of Scottis and Pichtis, for he maryit Fergus sister; send to Fergus, chargeand him be ane herald, gif he desirit peace, and to leif on the auld landis and marchis pertenant to his eldaris, to invaid na otheris: and gif he desirit nocht bot battall, he maid him to understand he had the samin ennimes that dang his eldaris out of Albioun, and thirllit the Pichtis to servitude. To this charge was answerit be Scottis and Pichtis, Thay wald have na peace with Romanis, quhill Westmureland and Cumber war restorit to thaim, with all the munitionis and strenthis thair of.

Castius, grevit with this answer, come forthwart with his army: and quhen he was cumin throw the Romane provincis nocht far fra Westmureland, he was advertist that Dioneth was cummand, with ane gret power, out of Walis, in support of Scottis and Pichtis. The Britonis, knawing the feirsnes and cruelte of Welchemen, war astonist be thir tithingis: nochtwithstanding, be hortation of Castius, thay rasit thair spreit, and come the thrid day efter, richt desirus of battal, in thair ennimes sicht. Now was Dioneth and the confiderat pepill mengit with thair oistis togidder, and weill arrayit for battal, quhen suddandly baith the armyis junit, and faucht lang with doutsum victory; quhill at last the wageouris that faucht in the wingis with licht armour, gaif bakkis. Followit ane huge affray amang the Romanis; and the samin was the mair eikit be slauchter of Castius, thair capitane: and incontinent the mid battall fled; on quhome followit the Scottis, Pichtis, and Welchemen, with lang chace and murdir. Yit, becaus thay keipit na ordoure in thair chace, thay gat mair skaith than thay did to thair ennimes.

The Romanis discomfist on this wise, colleckit the residew of thair army togidder, and past in Walis; and left behind thaim al the strentlis of the cuntre, but ony defence.

## Chap. Tenth.

*How Maximiane, Capitane of Britane, come with huge army aganis the Scottis and Pichtis. Of Fergus orison to his army; and how baith the Kingis of Scottis and Pichtis war slane, and thair army discomfist be Romanis.*



IONETH, efter this discomfitour of Romanis, tuk the croun of Britane, and invadit all the pepil thairof with gret cruelete and slauchter, that obeit to Romanis. Thus apperit Britane, bot gif this trubill war the mair haistely dantit, to pas fra dominion of Romanis.

At this time was in France ane nobill man, namit Etius, general Capitane thairof, be auctorite of the Emprioure. This Etius, hering that Britane was nakit of support, send, be desire of Britonis, ane vailyeant knight, namit Maximiane, to dant all this trubill appering be Welschemen, Scottis and Pichtis. Maximiane come sone efter with ane army in Albion; quhom the Britonis ressavit with gret triumphe, and prayt God to send him ane gud fortune aganis his ennimes.

Maximiane, knowing mair trubill appering by rebellion of Dioneth, than be ony uthir danger occurring, for he was of the blude rial of Britane; thocht lang tary impediment to his weris, and come with his army in maist deligence to York; and sone efter, he come in Westmureland.

The confiderat kingis hering his cuming, come with thair armyis in the same maner: and in the mene time come to thaim Dioneth, King of Britane, with all his power, out of Walis. At the spring of the day, quhen al thair power was mengit togidder, Fergus callit thaim be sound of trumpat to his standart, and said on this wise: “ I wald, wise freindis, that this battall, quhilk we ar now to leid  
“ aganis oure maist dangerus ennimes, war fochtun with sa huge  
“ manheid, curage, and spreit, that the samin may be to your ho-  
“ nour and proffet, and to my hie pleseir and glaidnes. Suthly,



“ will ye ponder this mater wisely, youre mindis, that bene sa lang  
 “ distrackit fra eis, and sa occupyit with ithand exercitioun of che-  
 “ valry, suld be ereckit in gret esperance of victory, seing your en-  
 “ nimes in sicht, quhom ye sa oft afore discomfist and chasit. It  
 “ semis all forey campionis evir to beleif the best, and haif excellent  
 “ fortitude aganis quhatsumevir adversite that may occurre: for  
 “ fortitude is so hie and soverane virtew, that it perswadis every  
 “ nobill man, be impulsoun of nature, to resist adversite. This  
 “ virtew is mair renownit, to resist the injure of ennimes, than to  
 “ invaid thaim with ony injure. For he that is wrangusly injurit  
 “ hes ay gud esperance of better fortoun to follow: thus incessis  
 “ he strang be esperance, and be his just querall he growis prudent.  
 “ Be contrare, he that dois wrang is injurius to himself, and hes na  
 “ esperance of gud fortoun to follow. Maximus, sumtime Capitane  
 “ of Britane, be his treasonabill slichtis was confiderat with Pichtis,  
 “ na les for the exterminion of thaim than of Scottis: as the end  
 “ thairof schew. Thay slew my gudschir Eugenius, with mony of  
 “ your nobill eldaris; and put thaim to sic affliction, that thay war  
 “ mony yeris exilit this regioun: throw quhilk he conquest the  
 “ haill empire of Albion; and nocht content of that felicite, he  
 “ thirrlit the Pichtis, our auld confiderat freindis, contrar his band  
 “ and promes, to vile servitude. Nochtheles, the end of this alli-  
 “ ance schew to the said Pichtis, quhat dammage cummis to be  
 “ confiderat with treasonabill pepill, in contemptioun of thair trew  
 “ freindis. Bot at last the Pichtis, penitent of the importabill in-  
 “ juris done to us, began, thought it was to lait, to be prudent, and  
 “ brocht us agane in this realme; and sone efter our cumming, we  
 “ vincust oure feirs ennimes with small difficulte. Now ar thir vin-  
 “ cust tyrannes returnit to invaid us, be advise of Maximiane, thair  
 “ capitane; as he wald restore thaim to thair curage, quhilk thay  
 “ tint afore be slauchter of thair capitane Castius. Thay charge us,  
 “ as we war under thair dominioun, to pas out of Cumber and  
 “ Westmureland, quhilkis pertenis to us be just titil. For thir rea-  
 “ sonis, I think we suld not only be repugnant to thair chargis, bot  
 “ als persew oure just action aganis thaim with al pissance. Heir-  
 “ fore, be awalknit, vailyeant campionis, and tak your wappinnis  
 “ with gud curage and spreit: think na gret difficulte occurris to



“vincus thay febill creaturis, quhilkis sa cowardly gave place afore  
 “to youre armoure. Pas forthwart, joly companyeonis, and have  
 “na les memory to your honour, than to the injuris done to your  
 “ennimes; and conquies sic gloire, that your posterite, be imita-  
 “tioun of youre virtew, may lerne to fecht vailyeantlie for thair  
 “realme.”

Als sone as Fergus had said thir wourdis, he gave ane signe, be sound of trumpat, to june. The tothir two Kingis of Pichtis and Britonis usit na les hortatioun to thair armyis. Incontinent, baith the armyis junit. At the first countering, the Romanis wer neir discomfist; for sa huge nowmer of arowis and ganyeis come on thaim, that the lift nicht skarslie be sene above thair heidis. Maximiane, seing the first bront of Romanis in dangeir, send, haistelie, ane legioun of fresche men in thair support. Thus wes the battall renewit and cruelly fochtin; quhill at last the outwingis of Romanis, be multitude of pepil, ouriset thair ennimes forens thaim. The confiderat pepill, and Britonis that faucht under Dioneth, maid lang debait; bot at last the wageouris, that faucht in the uter skirtis of Romane wingis, come in the same battall quhair thay wer fechtand, on thair bakkis. The confiderat peple, howbeit thay wer affrayit with this suddane terrour, ruschit all togidder in ane knot, with stout curage, to fecht to the deith. The maist forey and strang capitanis of our pepill, richt desirus to revenge thair deith; becaus thay saw na othir remeid, maid thaim, with maist violent force, to rusche throw thair ennimes: quhair thay wer all slane, to the gret murdir of thair ennimes. Quhill the Romanis wer besalie gevin to stop this forey irruption of the nobillis forsaide, mony of all the remanent Scottis come feirslie throw thair ennimes, and wer savit be thair flicht; and yit the chais followit sa cruelly be Romanis, that few wer savit quhome thay nicht apprehend: bot at last the nicht put end to thair labouris.

In this unhappy battall wer slane, Fergus, King of Scottis, the xvi yeir of his regne; and Durstus, King of Pichtis; with all the nobilite of baith thair realmes. Dioneth, Prince of Walis, evil woundit, wes brocht to the seepoort, nocht far fra the feild; quhair he gat ane bait, and fled in Walis.

## Chap. Eleventh.

*How the Romanis wrocht gret injuris on Scottis and Pichtis. How Maximiane was alliat with Dioneth, Prince of Walis; and tuk the crown of Britane, contrar the auctorite of Romanis.*



FTIR this mischevous battall, sic terroure rais throw all the landis of Scottis and Pichtis, that nocht wes traistit bot uter exterminioun of baith thair realmes: and becaus thay had na esperance of support, thair maist forcy campionis beand slane, thay thoct na thing sa gud as to fle in uncouth realmes.

Maximiane, thinkand best to use the present fortoun as it occurit, ceissit fra na maner of cruelte that micht be devisit, in Galloway, Annandale, Mers, and Pentland; with sic rage of fire and swerd, that na estait wes savit fra his fury. The pepill that fled to kirkis and sanctuaryis, wer slane, but ony sicht to God. The town of Camelon, with mony othir nobill cieteis and townis of Scottis and Pichtis, wer tane, and cassin down to the ground. This cruelte ceissit not, quhil at last the Scottis and Pichtis war drevin shamefully our the wal that rinnis fra Abircorn to Dunbriton, and sworn nevir to returne beyond the samin.

Ane part of Romanis gaif counsall to Maximiane, sen the Scottis and Pichtis wer sa brokin at this time, and micht be haldin with na pepill in faith and peace, to distroy thaim all uterly, or ellis to banis thaim out of Albion; utherwayis na thing micht be done effering to the common weill of Romanis. Maximiane refusit this counsall; for the winter wes approcheing, throw quhilk his army behuivit to rest in thair winter schelis; and becaus na vittallis wer amang the Scottis and Pichtis to sustene his army, and sic vehement could into thair montanis, that na craft micht withstand the samin; for it wes for the weil of thair army to abide the nixt simer. Attoure, becaus Welschemen, his nerrast nichtbouris, rebellit aganis him, it wes necessar to dant thaim first; in aventure, gif he persewit the

Scottis and Pichtis, levand behind him sa perrellus ennimes, more dammage than proffit micht cum be his weris. For thir causis, he returnit with his victorius army to Yorke, quhair he remanit all that winter; and brocht vittallis out of all partis to sustene the samin.

At the spring of the yeir he rasit his tentis, and come with displayit baner aganis Dioneth, in Walis; for he wes haldin King of Britonis fornentis the Ireland seis. And in the mene time, this Maximiane wes advertist be writtingis, that Bonifacius had slane twa Romane capitanis in Affrik, and thair army discomfist: throw quhilk Affrik wes loist fra Romane dominioun, and the said Bonifacius maid king thairof. Attoure, Franchemen, quhilk wes that time ane pepil of Almany, wes cumming our Ryne, and entrit in Gallia, quhilk wes callit eftir France, with more cruelte than evir wes hard afore; and conquest the landis of Orliance and Paris, and maid ane king of thair awin blude: throw quhilk it apperit, that all the landis callit, that time, Gallia, suld cum under the dominioun of Franchemen.

Maximiane, knawing sa mony rebellionis in all partis aganis Romanis, thocht best to rebel in the samin wise; and tuke the crown of Britane, contrar the Romane auctorite: and to pecify the realme to him of al debaitis, that he micht be the more strang aganis the Romanis, gif thay list invaid him, he tuke the eldest douchter of Dioneth, namit Othilia, in mariage; for Dioneth gat on King Fergus sister two douchteris, but ony mail childrin. The secund douchter, namit Ursula, wes maid ane nun, to that fine, that scho suld have na succession. Be this affinite sic tendernes inressit betwix Maximiane and Dioneth, that the said Dioneth wes sufferit to haif gretest empire, nixt Maximian, in Britane.

## Chap. Twelfth.

*Of King Eugenius the Secund. Of gret vassalage done be Maximian in Britane and France. How Ursula and hir fallowis war maryit.*



Ic thingis done in Britane, the residew of Scottis, quhilkis wer eschapit out of the feild afore rehersit, convenit in Argyle; and maid his sonne, Eugenius the Secund, king: fra the incarnation, cccxxx yeris; fra the beginning of the realme of Scotland, dcclx; in the feird yeir of Valentiniane, Empriour.

Eugenius began the administration of his realme be piete; and tuke the bonis of his fader fra the place quhair thay wer beryit be Romanis, and beryit thaim, with funerall triumphe, in the Abbay of Colmekil. Fergus wes the first King of Scottis that wes beryit in Colmekil; and, thairfore, it wes callit, eftir, the common sepulture of al Scottis kingis, unto King Macolme Canmoris dayis, quhilk biggit the Abbay of Dunfermeling, be perswasoun of Sanct Margaret; quhare mony of all the Scottis kingis bene beryit sen syne.

King Eugenius, richt desirus to recover the landis reft fra his fader be Romanis and Britonis, wrait all the names of his pepill, fra sexte to sextene, in ilk town, that micht beir armour and wappinnis. Nochtheles, seing thaim, quhen thay wer gaderit, of small nowmer and pissance, he supersedit his purpos quhill ane time more ganand. And thought the Scottis and Pictis wer brokin on this wise, and feblit in thair pissance, yit Maximiane send thaim peace undesirit. And becaus this Maximiane saw the empire of Romanis persewit on al partis, he set his besines to have ane part thairof; and tuke the crown of Britane, with favour and benivolence of all the pepil. Sone efter his coronation, he past in Bertanye, and left behind him his gudfader Dioneth, with ane legion of pepil, to governe Britane. Finaly, he dantit the Bertonaris with sic importabil affliction, that



thay wer randerit to his dominion. Than Maximiane tuke, be scharp segeing, sindry townis, sic as lay on the seecostis of Bertanye. And sone efter, he come, with al his army, to ane strang town of Bertanye, namit Redoun, quhilk was kepit be Sulpicius, in the name of Valentiniane, Empriour. Quhen Maximiane had seigit this town lang time, and nicht get it na way be force of armis, he kest him to invad the cuntre, mair be rubbery than be honest weir.

In the mene time, the Bertaneris gat sic perswasion be Etius, Capitane of France, that thay rebellit aganis Maximiane, and not only recoverit all thair strenthis and townis, bot slew al his weirmen quhare thay war apprehendit. Maximiane, movit be thir injuris, returnit, with al his army, to the said town of Redoun. Efter mony scharp assaltis, it was be him tane, and every pepil found in it, but ony miseration, slane, or banist the cuntre; for he tuk extreme ire aganis thame for violation of thair faith.

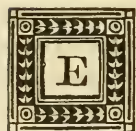
Etius, seing France ithandly invadit be the Burgundianis, send in Britane, to bring the legion that was left thair be Maximiane, to support him in his weris. Thus was Britane left nakit of support; and gaif occasion to Scottis and Pichtis to invade the Britonis, becaus thay abaid at the opinion of Maximiane. Finaly, quhen this Maximiane had conquest Bertanye, and slane the maist part of al the pepil thair of; yit, that it sal not be ane pray to Franchemen, thair nixt nichtbouris, he brocht ane gret nowmer of pepil out of Britane, to inhabit the said cuntre. Sum authouris writis, thair come ane c.M men out of Britane, to inhabit the land of Bertanye, with Conanus. This Conanus was ane tender freind to Dioneth, and maid King of Bertanye; and sa this land tint the auld name Armorica, and was callit Bertanye, fra thir Britonis that come to inhabit the said land.

Than Conanus, King of Bertanye, knowing that every pepil failyeis within the age of man gif thay have na succession, send his ambassatouris in Britane, to have wemen to be thair wiffis. The ambassatouris that come for this effect, gat consent, be the nobillis of Britane, that al the dochteris, sisteris, and antis pertenant in blude to the Britonis that war than in Bertanye, suld pas to thame en haist, togidder with Ursula the Nun, quhilk was tane out of the

abbay quhare scho was profest, and put in schip, with the remanent hir fallowis, that the linage of Dioneth suld not faill; becaus hir othir sister Othilia, quhilk was maryit on Maximiane afore, was de-  
ceissit but ony childrin. And thocht the passage of thir wemen was unplesand to the Britonis, yit it come, efter, to the gret felicite of Ursula and hir cumpany; for quhen thay suld have passit to Bertanye, be tempestious streme of seis, thay war drevin, with na litil dangeir of thair livis, in the mouth of Rine, quhare thay landit. And becaus thay had sic trubill be the seis, thay tuk purpos, than, to pas in Bertanye be land. Othiris authouris says, thay tuke thair voyage to Rome, be perswasion of this haly nun, Ursula, and war tane be the Hunnis; be quhom thay war al slane, becaus thay wold not consent to the polution of thair bodyis. The kirk, thairfore, singis, yeirly, divine cerimonyis, in thair glore and loving.

### Chap. Thirteenth.

*How the confiderat kingis come with gret armyis aganis the Britonis.  
Of Eugenius orison. Of the gret heirschippis maid on Britonis.  
How Gallio Revennas was send in support of Britonis; and of  
his vassalage.*



UGENIUS, knawing Britane, be continewal weris, destitute of Romane sodjouris; convenit with Durstus, King of Pichtis, to ane counsal: in quhilk, efter lang consultation, was concludit to maik weir aganis the Britonis, with sic providence, that na advertence suld be maid thair-of, quhil thay war arrayt within thair realmes. Sone efter, ane day was assignit to baith thair pepil to convene, with xl dayis vittallis, and uthir necessaris, in thair best maner. At the day prefixt, come gret multitude of pepill, out of all boundis of his realme, to the wod of Calidone.

Eugenius, seing his freindis and subdittis gaderit in this maner, said as fallowis: “ Nane is amang yow, vailyeant campionis, that  
“ will degestlie consider baith the materis pertenant to us and our

“ ennimes, bot he sall think all tary unprofitable to us this day ;  
“ considering the hie and importable injuris done, thir mony yeris,  
“ to us, be Romane tyranny : my vailyeant and nobill fader, the  
“ recoverar of this realme, slane ; above infinite calamiteis sufferit  
“ be us. Ye se Carrik, Kyle, Cunninghame, and Galloway, with  
“ mony othir landis of our realme, fallin in pray to Romanis. And  
“ thought the battall, strikin afore be my fadir aganis Maximiane,  
“ wes infortunat to us, it wes nochtheles richt unplesand and sorow-  
“ ful to our fais. Forthir, the calamiteis falling be this battall hes  
“ nocht, as I beleif, feblit your curage ; bot more enkendillit the  
“ samin to revenge the auld injuris done, sa mony yeris, aganis us  
“ and our progenituris, be Romanis and Britonis. And under-  
“ stand, als mekil as our pissance is minist be Romane weris, sa far  
“ ar the Romanis brokin in thair pissance be hatrent of fortoun,  
“ quhilk intendis to bring thair empire to nocht : throw quhilk  
“ thay ar nocht onlie odious to all pepil, bot als invadit with cruell  
“ weris, and thair provincis falling to praye of ennimes in all partis :  
“ for the Vandalis hes tane fra thaim, all Affrik ; the Visigothis, all  
“ Spanye ; the Franchemen and Burgundianis hes tane the maist  
“ part of Gallia, now namit France ; the Hunnis hes won Panno-  
“ nia, Mysia, Thracia, and Macidon : all pepill that is in the eist  
“ partis of the world hes recoverit thair liberte, or ellis randerit  
“ thaimself to ennimes of Romanis : Rome, sumtime the Lady of  
“ the Warld, hes bene twis tane be the Gothis, heryit and brint.  
“ Forthir, the Romanis ar brocht to sic calamite, that thay have na  
“ landis nor empire this day, saif only in Italy and Britane ; the  
“ quhilk is now nakit of all garnison and weirmen, be weris of  
“ Maximiane. Forthir, thair is na Romane capitane that will or  
“ may bring ony support aganis us. Now is Britane drery, and  
“ nakit of al support ; and sa disparit, that it sall be erar ane pray  
“ than obstakill to your weris. It nedis nocht, heirfore, vailyeant  
“ capitanis, to exhort yow to battall, sen knightly curage mair  
“ aboundis than failyeis in yow ; for, sicklerly, thair is ane mair  
“ huge pray abiding yow, than evir was appering afore, be chance  
“ of fortoun, to ony of your eldaris. Occasioun, the moder of all  
“ werkis that ar to be done, offeris hir wilfully to yow, perswading  
“ all impedimentis and tary of battall to be set aside ; and exhortis

“ yow to follow hir, in adventure, gif ye tine hir be your febill  
 “ curage, ye sall nocht win hir agane, howbeit ye wald. Be not  
 “ movit, I pray yow, to ceis fra your honest vassalage, for ony  
 “ band that ye haif maid with Maximiane; for thir Romanis and  
 “ Britonis hes invadit us with mony cruel injuris sen the said band  
 “ was maid. And sen our ennimes hes not ceissit to invaid us, in  
 “ breking of the said band; how may we do ony thing les than in-  
 “ vaid thaim on the same maner? Belt yow, thairfore, lusty gal-  
 “ landis, with manheid, and tak your wappinnis to this honest in-  
 “ terpris: follow the spreit and curage of your eldaris, and ye sal  
 “ nocht faile the glore of victory.”

The army, be thir wordis, war inflammit to battall; and pro-  
 mittit to jeopard thaimself to al maner of dangeir, that thay micht  
 revenge the injuris done to thaim; for the affliction of Romanis,  
 quhilk was richt patent, maid the remanent wordis of Eugenius to  
 have the mair credit. Than ilk man, with schill noyis, bad rais  
 thair ansenyeis, and proceid forthwart. The Pichtis, in the samin  
 maner, war inflammit to battal be exhortation of thair king. Incon-  
 tinent, the confiderat pepil invadit the Britonis with fire and swerd,  
 in all partis quhare thay come; and chasit the Britonis out of Pent-  
 land, Mers, Berwik, Galloway, and Annandale; and, thairefter,  
 thay past to Kendale, Cumber, Westmureland, and York, and tuke  
 all the munitionis and strenthis of the cuntre: and quhen thay had  
 spulyeit the townis, thay slew al the cieteyanis thairof, and left na  
 Britonis on live, except thaim that war savit be flicht. Apperit,  
 thus, all Britane to cum haistely under the empire of Scottis and  
 Pichtis, gif the samin war not mair haistely resistit.

The Britonis, impacient to suffer thir displeseiris, send thair ora-  
 touris to the Empriour Valentiniane; and promittit thair perpetuall  
 subjection to him, sa that he wald support thaim aganis thair un-  
 mercifull and cruel ennimes. Valentiniane, richt desirus to keip  
 Britane under his empire, send ane nobil capitane, namit Gallio  
 Revennas, with mony legionis of pepill, in thair support. The  
 Scottis and Pichtis, knowing the cumming of this new army, left  
 all the landis in Britane quhilk war laityly heryit and distroyit be  
 thaim: syne returnit hame; for thay thocht not profitabill to jeo-



perd thaim aganis the Romanis, knawand, be frequent battallis afore past, thair gret manheid and chevalry.

The Romanis, at thair cuning in Albion, followit be lang chace on the Scottis to the watter of Forth, and mony of thaim slew, be haisty scharmising. And becaus thir Romanis nicht not mak lang tary in Albion, for extreme dangeir appering to France be invasioun of sindry pepill; thay gart repare, haistely, the wal afore rehersit betwix Abircorne and Dunbritane, with gret expensis; and rasis the samin, with fail devat and stanis, xii cubitis of hicht, and viii cubitis of breid, with mony strang touris rising on all sidis. Thir touris and bastailycis war doun, togidder with sic thingis as wald nocht birne, to saif the Britonis fra thair ennimes. On the hicht of thir touris thay set fire pannis, to advertis the cuntre quhen dangeir occurrit; and thay that come not to the defence heirop, quhen the fire was sene, war punist to the deith.

### Chap. Fourteenth.

*How the Scottis and Pichtis kest down the Wal of Abircorne, and wrocht gret cruelteis on the Britonis. Of the message send be Britonis to Etius; and of his answer.*



**B**RITANE brocht be this maner to Romane servitude, Gallio Revennas returnit in France; quhais departing gaif occasion to the confiderat kingis to invaid the Britonis with mair cruelte than afore. Than King Eugenius assemblit all his pepill afore him; and sumtime inflammit thaim with huge ire aganis thair ennimes, and sumtimes provokit thaim, be esperance of pray and riches to be gottin on thair ennimes. And the King of Pichtis ceissit not to exhort his pepill on the same maner; and promittit, be publik edict, to geif the capitanry of Camelon to him that first past ouir this wal of Abircorn.

The Britonis, knowing weill the assemblance of Scottis and Pichtis, come arrayit, in thair best maner, to defend this wal afore rehersit; and put ane gret nowmer of weirmen in the bastailycis

and touris thair of, to resist the invasioun of ennimes: aganis quhom was send the vailyeant Grahame, with ane company of Scottis and Pichtis, armit with corsbowis, slenges, and handbowis. Als sone as this Grahame had doun the Britonis fra this wal, incontinent come masonnis, wrichtis, and mony otheris craftismen, with sindry instrumentis, and kest down the dike unto the ground. Ane gret band of Britonis maid thame to withstand the eversion of this wal; bot thay, be obstinate fechtung, war all slane. Otheris, that knew the cruell furie of confiderat pepill, gaif bakkis, confiding in na thing mair than in thair flicht.

Quhill sic thingis war done at the wal of Abircorn, thair come ane othir company of Pichtis out of Fiffe in Pentland, and did mair cruelteis to the Britonis, quhare thay come, than did thir Scottis and Pichtis that come afore thaim. Als sone as baith thir cumpanyis war assemblit togidder, nocht was but fire and slauchter quhare thay come.

The inhabitantis, affrayit be thir cruelteis, fled, with thair wiffis, barnis, and guddis, beyond the watter of Tyne. Incontinent, all gudis betwix Tweid and Tyne, be general proclamation of the two kingis, war denuncit frely eschetit and pray to thair army. Followit mony schamefull and abhominable dedis, be persuasion of ire, hatrent, and avarice. The skry and terrible loyis arrayis, be furie of weirmen ceissing fra na maner of cruelte, throw all the landis betwix the Ireland seis on the ta side, and the Almane seis on the tothir.

The Britonis, for feir of thir importable terrouris, reparit the wall of Adriane, with huge lauboure and expensis. The confiderat pepil, knawing, becaus the winter wes approching, thair army nicht nocht abide togidder; ceissit fra seging of the said wal; and sat down, with thair wiffis and children, in al the landis that wer conquest at this time be richt of battall.

The Britonis, dreidand the Scottis and Pichtis, at the cuning of the nixt weir, to invaid thame with more cruelte than afore; send thair ambassatouris to Etius, quhilk wes Capitane of France, as said is, and desirit support aganis the confiderat pepill. Alwayis this Etius send na support to the Britonis: uncertane quhiddir he wald send nane, becaus he favorit nocht the Emprioure Valenti-

niane, as he that purposit to usurpe the crown of France; or gif he nicht nocht mak support to the said Britonis, for feir of the scharp battall that his ennimes had aganis him.

### Chap. Fifteenth.

*How Conanus, Prince of Walis, exhortit the Britonis to tak peace with Scottis and Pichtis; and was slane. How the Britonis, efter his slauchter, faucht amang thaimself.*



Ow wer the oratouris of Britonis returnit, with this repulse of Etius, in Britane. Followit sindry consultationis amange thir Britonis. Sum gaif counsall to invaid the Scottis and Pichtis, als weil be see as land; and to defend thair liberte, quhilk wes laitlie recoverit, to the deith: and nocht onelie to bring men, bot all fensabill wemen, for defence of thair realme; and to convene, with all deligence, at the wal of Adriane: and erar to jeoperd thaim to extreme daungeir, than to suffer sa continual heirschippis and slauchter; or to tak peace, howbeit it wer necessar, with ony inhonest conditionis.

In the mene time, Conanus, Prince of Walis, descending, be lang progressioun, of the native Kingis of Britane, said to the Britonis in this maner: “ It is necessar to all pepill, wise faderis, gif thay  
 “ intend othir to mak conques, or to keip thair awin rowmis fra in-  
 “ jure of fayis, to have respect baith to thair pissance, and the sea-  
 “ son, as occuris for the time. Sa lang, suthlie, as we wer sup-  
 “ portit be Romanis, and wer sufficient to defend this realme aganis  
 “ our unmerciful fayis, we socht na peace with the treasonable  
 “ Scottis and Pichtis: bot now, allace! oure realme abidis ane  
 “ othir chance; for we ar attenuat and brokin be tyranny of the  
 “ proud Maximiane, quhilk hes bene more noisum to us than ony  
 “ ennimes nicht haif bene, quhen he, be avarice, socht the empire  
 “ of the world; and we ar sa waistit be the same, that we maye haif  
 “ na confidence of victorie, gif we fecht be our awin pissance.  
 “ Now we have na esperance be support of Romanis; and sen we

“ ar insufficient, be our awin power, to resist our ennimes in times  
 “ cuming, how may we plesandly debait in sic perrellus aventure?  
 “ Thir cruell tyrannis our ennimes, nocht brokin with lang weris,  
 “ laubour, nor distres, hes nothir dreid of God, man, nor of deith,  
 “ to be revengit of the injuris done to thaim, sa mony yeris afore,  
 “ be us. Amang thaim is na deference of age, nor of kind; man  
 “ and wife equale rageand in battall, but ony mercy. Thair che-  
 “ valry is nocht bot wod fury; for thay reiose in na thing sa mekill  
 “ as in murdir of agit men and barnis, and siclik febill personnis,  
 “ with sic insaciable thirst, that thay eschame nocht to drink the  
 “ blud of thair ennimes; and delitis in nocht bot in thift and slauch-  
 “ ter. Thairfore, we mon othir have peace with thame, or ellis  
 “ suffer, at thair will, ma importable cruelteis than afore: and  
 “ thocht peace be richt schamefull to us, yit better is to have pa-  
 “ cience for ane time, than to lois our realme and liberte, with more  
 “ schame. I say thir wourdis for na desire of conques or honouris,  
 “ bot onlie for the singulare affection that I beir unto your common  
 “ weill. Advise, thairfore, quhidder the samin be mair frutefull or  
 “ noisum thairto.”

The Britonis war richt commovit that Conanus persuadit thame  
 to peace; and said, Thay wald have na amite with Scottis nor  
 Pichtis, for the sindry cruelteis done be thame. Thay knew als,  
 said thay, how he spak nocht for thair commoun weill, bot onlie to  
 find sum occasioun, be his slichtis, to usurpe the crown of Britane.  
 At last, quhen the nobillis had tane lang consultatioun in this  
 mater, oftymes lamentand thair unhappy chance, and knowing the  
 estait of man sa miserable, that it tendis more swiftlie to ruine than  
 to ony hicht; be counsall of obstinat and inoportune pepill, thay  
 finalie concludit to assemble thair ordinance, baith of men and fen-  
 sable wemen, to invaid the Scottis and Pichtis; and to convene at  
 ane prefixit day and place.

Conanus, richt sorrowful for thir doingis, ischit fra the counsall;  
 sayng, “ I tak the Eternall God in witnes, I assent nocht to this  
 “ furius sentence; and belevis na thing mair, than the anciant and  
 “ noble realme of Britane to cum to irrecoverable dammage, throw  
 “ sic fuliche counsal, in our dayis.”



Ane certane of Britonis, heirand Conanus regrait thair doingis on this sort, said, “ Thy auctorite sall nocht be of pissance to stop “ this sentence:” and efter that thay had pullit furth thair swerdis, thay drave him throw the body. The skry arrais haistelie efter his slauchter, be freindis of Conanus, and socht his slayaris in thair maist furie: throw quhilk the peple wes devidit in twa partis, and nicht nocht be pecifyit be auctorite of the nobillis, quhill ane huge nowmer wer slane on athir sidis.

### Chap. Sixteenth.

*Of gret vassalage done be the nobil Grahame, at the Wallis of Abircorne and Adrian; and how the Scottis conquest al landis betwix Tyne and Humber. Of the Epistill send be Britonis to Etius; and of his answer.*



LS sone as the fame wes brocht to London, that the Scottis and Pichtis had maid cruell incursionis in the landis of Britonis, ane huge feir and terrour went throw all the ciete. And quhen the Britonis wer takand thair consultatioun, thouht it wes in vane, how thay suld dres al materis; come the vailyeant Grahame, with ane cumpany of chosin men, to the wall of Abircorne, and brak down the same in all partis so halelie, that he left na thing thairof standing, more than remanis now, in thir dayis: and for that cause this wall wes callit, efter, Grahams Dike.

Sic thingis done, Grahame went to the wall of Adriane, fornens the Ireland seis, and kest it down on the samin maner; and slew al the weirmen that wer laid for defence thairof. The residew of Britonis, heirand nocht bot murdir and rummissing of deand pepill, savit thaimself be flicht.

The wall of Adriane bet down to the grond in this maner, the Scottis, desiring na thing mair than to revenge the injuris done afore be Britonis, proclamit, be generall edict, na fensabill, bot agit

and febill personis, to be saiffit. Bot this edict wes nocht observat. So far enragit wes the army in cruelte, that thay past, with fire and swerd, throw all the boundis liand betwix Tyne and Humber; and wrocht on the inhabitantis thairof sic heirschip and slauchter, that thay wer othir slane, or chasit out of the cuntre.

Thir tithingis schawin to the nobillis of Britane at London, movit thaim to seik new remeid aganis thair ennimes. Finalie, quhen thay had lang avisit in this mater, it wes concludit to send two sindry ambassatouris, for expedition of thair materis: ane of thaim to pas to the confiderat Kingis of Scottis and Pichtis, and to gif thaim frelie all the landis liand beyond Humber, with large soumis of money; swa thay wald condescend to peace, and desist fra truble of thaim in times cuming: the secund ambassat to pas to Etius, Capitane of France, deplorand thair calamiteis; with this epistill:

*“ To Etius, thryis Consul, the regrait of Britonis.*

“ QUHEN our forbearis first randerit thame to Romanis, thay  
 “ traistit, be mony reasonis, that the senat and pepill of Rome wes  
 “ the port and sicker refuge of all pepill cuming under thair empire.  
 “ Bot we, thair posterite, be tresonable slicht of Maximiane agane  
 “ our common weill, ar sa brokin in our strenth, be our continew-  
 “ ance at thair opinioun, that we ar bot ane facill pray to our enni-  
 “ mes: throw quhilk it apperis, that othir the Romanis ar degene-  
 “ rat fra the manheid and illuster dedis of thair eldaris; or ellis  
 “ thair braid empire, be vengeance of God, beginnis to decline, and  
 “ gevin be pray to every pepill. Nochtheles, gif the fatale chance  
 “ of time and weirdis covatis this our realme to be dissolvit fra  
 “ amite and freinschip of Romanis, constraning us to servitude of  
 “ othir barbar peple; we cure nocht quhat pepill have dominioun  
 “ of us, sa that we eschew the tyranny of Scottis and Pichtis:  
 “ quhais bludy swerd hes wrocht on us sic heirschip and calamite,  
 “ that we knawe nocht quhat way our miserabill livis sal be savit,  
 “ sen all our guddis ar lost and tint. Thay have nowe bet doun  
 “ the wallis and strenthis quhilkis suld have defendit us fra thair

“cruelteis: syne entrit in the Romane province, with al maner of  
 “cruelteis; waistit our landis; brint our townis and castellis; bet  
 “doun our wallis to the ground; and slane our wiffis, childrin, and  
 “agit personis: beside infinite othir displeseiris, quhilkis we may  
 “nocht writ for doloure. We, the residew of thaim, ar chaist and  
 “drevin to the seis: and becaus we may nocht have passage throw  
 “the samin, we ar drevin agane in our ennimes handis; quhair-  
 “throw, na esperance apperis of releif, bot othir to be slane, or  
 “peris in the fletand seis. Beseikand the, heirfore, gif thow re-  
 “gardis othir our faithful kindnes, or yit the glore of Romane  
 “majeste; to quhilk we bene sa mony yeris obeisant, to suffer nocht  
 “us, the freindis of the senat and pepill of Rome, to be thirllit to  
 “sic undantit cruelte of ennimes; bot send us support in haist, that  
 “we be nocht mair cruelly betrasit be Romanis, than tint be bar-  
 “bar pepill: othirwayis sic thingis sall be ane perpetual memory  
 “to our successouris, to have na confidence nor societe with Ro-  
 “manis.”

Etius answerit, That he was richt sorrowfull that the Romane  
 empire was persewit sa on every hand, that he nicht skarsly defend  
 France fra invasioun of barbar pepill; and, thairfore, he nicht send  
 na support in Britane. Nochtheles, he exhortit thaim to maik the  
 best defence thay nicht, in esperance of better fortoun; for quhen  
 the Romanis had pecifyit all trubill, the Scottis and Pichtis suld be  
 condignely punist for thair attemptatis.

## Chap. Seventeenth.

*How the Britonis war vincust, and maid tributar to Scottis and Pichtis; and of the conditionis of peace gevin to the said Britonis.*



**I**N the mene time, quhen this answeire come fra Etius, the ambassatouris returnit fra the Scottis and Pichtis; and schew, that the petitionis of Britonis war na thing plesand to the said Scottis and Pichtis: for thay wald not ceis fra ithand slauchter and heirschip of Britonis, quhill othir thair realme was conquest, or ellis frely randerit to thaim. The Britonis war richt affrayit be thir wourdis: nochtheles, thay enforcit thaimself to curage, and ruschit haistely to harnes; detesting thair effeminate sleuth, be quhilk thay gaif audacite to thair ennimes, and tint the victory be thair cowardry, that thay conquest afore with thair victory and manheid.

The Scottis and Pichtis, weil advertist that the Britonis war repulsit be Etius of thair desiris, gaderit thair pepil out of all boundis under thair dominion; and come, with displayit baneris, aganis thair ennimes. The Britonis, in the samin maner, war advertist be the exploratouris, how thair ennimes war cumand on thame, with sic pissance, that thay micht not be resistit. Bot than thay began to curs and vary thaim that gaif thaim counsall to fecht aganis sa pissant ennimes, in damage of thair common weil. Yit, to saif thame fra mair displesour, thay send othir ambassatouris to the confiderat kingis, desiring peace, as afore: and becaus thay culd purches na peace, bot gif thay war randerit, with wiffis, childrin, and guddis; throw extreme ire on the ta side, and disperation on the tothir side, thay maid thame all, with ane consent, to battal. Incontinent, be blast of trumpet, baith the armyis junit. Followit ane maist terribill bergane; for the Britonis, deliverit to revenge thair deith, and to de for defence of thair realm, set on thair ennimes with gret preis,



and mony of thaim bure unto the ground: than ilk ane, desiring to support othir, ruschit togidder with sa obstinat mind, that thay semit na thing to regard thair deith: throw quhilk mony of the Scottis and Pichtis quhilkis faucht in the first battal, war neir discomfist. Graham, the vailycant capitane, seand his freindis in extreme dangeir, send ane gret cumpany of Ilis men, fra the carage, in thair support. Incontinent, the Scottis and Pichtis, that war afore woundit and discomfist, renewit battal: than the Britonis, ourset with multitude of ennimes rusching upon thaim on all sidis, and disparit of victory, fled to ane mos, nocht far fra the feild. The cariagemen, seing the battal discomfist, left thair cariage, and slew thair ennimes heir and thair, quhare thay war tane, ourset in the mossis. In this battall war slane IV.M Scottis, and of Britonis

XV.M.

The princes and nobillis of Britane war sa halely slane in this battall, that the residew of Britonis nicht mak na defence for thair realme; and thairfore, be generall consent, thay send thair oratoris to the victorius kingis, humely desiring peace under quhat condition thay plesit.

The confederat kingis, na les movit be the sorrowfull chance falling to Britonis, than with the present calamite falling to thaimself, condescendit to have peace under thir conditionis: The Britonis, in times cuming, sall ressave na Romane capitane with armyis above thaim in Britane; and sall suffer na Romanis, Gallis, Saxonis, nor yit na othir pepill that ar ennimes to Scottis and Pichtis, to pas throw thair landis. Thay sall nothir treit peace nor alliance, nor yit make weir aganis ony pepill, but command of the confederat kingis. Thay sall fecht, quhen thay ar chargit, in support of Scottis and Pichtis, aganis all pepil. Al the landis liand beyond Humber sal remane perpetually under the empire of Scottis and Pichtis; and the Britonis to pas out of the samin, with thair wiffis, childrin, and gudis, but ony tary. Finaly, thay sal pay LX.M pundis amang thair weirnen; and yeirly, in times cuming, XX.M pundis to the confederat kingis, in maner of tribute: and for securite heirof, thay sal geif ane c men in oistage, at the will of the confederat kingis; ilk man na eldar than xxx yeris, and na youngar than xviii

yeris. Gif ony of thir pointis war brokin, the peace to be dissolvit in the self.

The peace ratifyit on this maner, the ile of Albion was brocht to better quiet than afore. Britane was tane fra the empire of Romanis in this maner, and maid tributar to Scottis and Pichtis. cccxcvi yeris efter that Julius Cesar maid it first tributar to Romanis, quhilk was in the vii yeir of King Eugenius; fra the incarnatioun, cccxxxvi yeris; fra the empire of Brutus, the first King of Britane, ane m dciij yeris. Fra thens the Britonis began to decline, baith in thair manheid, landis, and honouris.

I know weil this history that I have schawin, of Maximus, Romaine Capitane in Britane; and of Octavius and Dioneth, Kingis of Britane; and als of the cuming of Saxonis in Albioun, quhilk I intend now to schawe; is richt discrepant fra the Croniklis of Britonis, maid be Galfrede. And yit thair suld nane have admiration thair of; for the authouris that I follow, as Eutropius, Paulus Diaconus, Beda, Veremundus, with othir mair recent and expert historicianis, concordis with this Galfrede, nouthir in the narratioun of the historie, nor yit in the dait of yeris. We think, thairfore, it is mair sowndand to the verite, to follow mony provin and attentik authouris in discriptioun of oure historie, concurring with the historie of Romanis baith in narratioun and dait of yeris, than to follow the said Galfrede, writand but ony testimoniall of othir authouris, and singular in his awin opinioun.

### Chap. Eighteenth.

*Of mony nobill Clerkis and Sanctis in sindry partis of the World;  
and of sindry prodigies and mervellis sene in Albion; and of  
Fynnmacoule.*



ONy nobil men war in thir days; as, Anselmus, Philippus Hilarius. Amang us wer in thay days Palladius, quhilk was send be Celestine, Pape, to confound the heresy of Pelagius, risin than in sindry partis of Albion. This Palladius was the first bischop that bure authorite amang the Scottis, and was creat be the Pape. The bischoppis afore him war creat be votis allanerlie of the monkis and preistis, namit Culdeis. This Palladius purgit the Scottis and Pichtis of mony vane superstitionis and ritis of Gentilis, usit in thay dayis; and, thairfore, he was callit the Apostill of Scottis: and deceissit in ane town of Mernis, namit Fordoun: quhare his blissit body restis yit, haldin in gret veneration amang the pepill. His banis war laitly translatit be ane nobil man, William Scheves, Archebischof of Sanct Andros; and put in ane silver cais, with mony solempne ceremonyis: fra the incarnation of God, ane M cccxciv yeris. This Palladius maid Sanct Serf bischop, and send him in Orknay, to instruct the rude pepill thair of in the faith; als, he gaif the sacrament of baptem to Tervanus, and maid him Archebischof of Pichtis.

About this time was send fra Pape Celestine, Sanct Patrik in Ireland, to defend the samin fra heresy of Pelagius: throw quhilk the Cristin faith began to incres in Ireland and Albion.

Mony mervellis war sene in sindry partis of Albion, afore the Britonis faucht aganis the Scottis and Pichtis. The mone beand in opposition, quhen it is maist round, apperit suddanly as it war foure nukit. In York war mony schouris of blude. The branchis and levis of treis war strokin with thonder, and wederit, in mony partis of Albioun. The merkat gait of London raif with ane huge

gaip, and mony housis beside sank. The pepil preichit, thir signis to cum in dammage of the Britonis: nochtheles, the same wes mesit be the preistis, quhilk commandit na credence to be gevin to sic fantasyis.

It is said that Fynmakcoule, the sonne of Coelus, Scottisman, was in thir days; ane man of huge statoure, of xvii cubitis of hicht. He was ane gret huntar, and richt terribill, for his huge quantite, to the pepil: of quhome ar mony vulgar fabillis amang us, nocht unlike to thir fabillis that ar rehersit of King Arthure. And becaus his dedis is nocht authorist be autentik authouris, I will rehers na thing thairof; bot declare the remanent geistis of King Eugenius, and othir nobillis.

And sa endis heir, the Sevint Buke of thir Croniklis.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.





























0035524197

941.01

B633

Boece

History and chronicles of Scot-

941.01

B 633

